



THE  
NEW TESTA-  
MENT OF OUR  
LORD IESVS  
CHRIST.

*faithfully translated out  
of Greeke.*



IMPRINTED AT LONDON  
by the Deputies of Christopher Barker,  
Printer to the Queenes most  
excellent Maiestie.

ANNO 1598.





# THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORDING

to Saint Mattheue.

CHAP. I. 1. That Iesus is the Meſſias. *Luke*

**I**He \* booke of the generation of *Gene.*  
Ieſus Chriſt the ſonne of Dauid, *21. 2.*  
the ſonne of Abraham. 2 \* Abra- *Gene.*  
ham begat Iſaac. \* And Iſaac begat *25. 24.*  
Iacob. And \* Iacob begat Iudas *Gene.*  
and his brethren. 3 \* And Iudas begat Phares, *29. 35.*  
and Zara of Thamar. And \* Phares begat Eſrom. *Gene.*  
And Eſrom begat Aram. 4 And Arā begat Ami- *38. 27.*  
nadab. And Aminadab begat Naſſon And Na- *1. Ch. 7.*  
aſſon begat Salmon. 5 And Salmon begat Booz *2. 5.*  
of Rachab. And \* Booz begat Obed of Ruth And *Ruth.*  
Obed begat Ieſſe. 6 And \* Ieſſe begat Dauid the *4. 21.*  
king. And \* Dauid the king begat Salomon of *1. Sa. 2.*  
her that was the wife of Urias. 7 And \* Salomon *16. 1.*  
begat Roboam. And Roboam begat Abia And *2. Sa. 7.*  
Abia begat Aſa. 8 And Aſa begat Ioſaphat. And *12. 24.*  
Ioſaphat begat Ioram. And Ioram begat Hoſias. *1. Kin.*  
9 And Hoſias begat Ioſatham. And Ioſathā begat *11. 43.*  
Achaz And Achaz begat Ezekias. 10 And \* Eze- *2. Kin.*  
kias begat Manaſſes. And Manaſſes begat Amon. *20. 21.*  
And Amon begat Ioſias. 11 And \* Ioſias begat Ia- *2. Kin.*  
kim. And Iakim begat Iechonias & his brethren. *23. 4.*  
about the time that they were caried into Baby- *1. Ch.*  
lon. 12 And after they were caried into Babylo, *3. 16.*  
\* Iechonias begat Salath el And \* Salathiel be- *1. Ch.*

## S. MATTHEWE.

gate Zorobabel. 13 And Zorobabel begat Abi-  
 ud. And Abiud begat Eliacim. And Eliacim be-  
 gat Azor. 14 And Azor begat Sadoc. And Sa-  
 doc begat Achim. And Achim begate Eliud.  
 15 And Eliud begat Eleazar. And Eleazar begat  
 Matthan. And Matthan begat Iakob. 16 And Ia-  
 cob begat Ioseph the husband of Mary, of whom  
 was borne I E S V S, that is called Christ.  
 17 So al the generations from Abrabam to Da-  
 uid are fourteene generations. And from Dauid  
 vntil they were caried away into Babylon, four-  
 teene generations: and after they were caried  
 away into Babylon vntil Christ, fourteene gene-  
 rations. 18 Now the birth of I E S V S Christ  
 was thus. When as his mother Mary was \* be-  
 trothed to Ioseph, before they came together,  
 she was founde with child of the holy Ghost.  
 19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man,  
 & not willing to \* make her a publike example,  
 20 was minded to put her away secretly. 20 But  
 whiles he thought these things behold the An-  
 gel of the Lord appeared to him in a dreame,  
 saying, Ioseph the sonne of Dauid, feare not to  
 take Mary thy wife for that which is conceived  
 in her, is of the holy Ghost. 21 And shee shall  
 bring forth a sonne and thou shalt \* call his  
 Name I E S V S: for he shall \* saue his people  
 from their sinnes. 22 And all this was done that  
 it might be fulfilled, which was spoken of the  
 Lord by the Prophet, saying, 23 \* Behold a vir-  
 gine shalbe with childe, and shal beare a sonne,  
 and

**Luke**

**2.27.**

**Dent.**

**24. 1.**

**Luke**

**1.31.**

**Acts**

**4. 12.**

**Esay**

**7.14.**

## C H A P. I I.

and they shal call his name Emmanuel, which is by interpretation God with vs. 24 The Ioseph being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had inioyned him, & tooke his wife. 25 But he knew her not, till she had brought forth her first borne sonne, & he called his Name I E S U S.

C H A P. 2. 1. *The wisemen worship Christ.*

**W**Hen \*Iesus the was borne at Beth-leem in *Luke*  
Iudea in the daies of Herod the king, be- *2. 6.*  
hold, there came Wisemen frō the East to Hie-  
rusalem, saying, 2 Where is that king of the  
Iewes that is borne? for we haue seene his starre  
in the East, & are come to worship him. 3 Whē  
king Herod heard *thū*, he was troubled, and all  
Hierusalē with him. 4 And gathering together  
all the chiefe priests, & Scribes of the people, he  
asked of them where Christ should bee borne.  
5 And they said vnto him, At Beth-leem in Iudea:  
for so it is written by the Prophet, 6 And \*thou *Mica.*  
Beth-leem in the land of Iuda, art not the least *3. 5 2.*  
mong the princes of Iuda: for out of thee shal *iohn*  
come the gouernor that shal feed that my peo- *7. 4.*  
ple Israel. 7 The Herod priuily called y. Wise-  
men, & diligently enquired of them the time of  
the starre that appeared, 8 And sent the to Beth-  
leem, saying, Goe, and search diligently for the  
babe: & when ye haue found him, bring me word  
again, that I may come also, and worship him.  
9 So when they had heard the king, they depar-  
ted: and loe, the starre which they had seene in  
the East, went before them, till it came & stood

# S. MATTHEWE.

ouer the place where the babe was 10 And whē they saw the starre, they reioiced with an exceeding great ioy, 11 And went into the house, and found the babe with Mary his mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him, and opened their treasures, & presented vnto him gifts, *even* gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe. 12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame, y they should not goe againe to Herod, they returned into their countrey another way. 13 After their departure behold, the Angel of y Lord appeareth to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, & take the babe & his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be there til I bring thee word: for Herod wil seeke the babe to destroy him. 14 So he arose & toke the babe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt, 15 And was there vnto the death of Herod, that that might be fulfilled which is spoken of the Lord by the \* Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne. 16 The Herod, seeing that he was mocked of y Wisemen, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth and slew al the male children that were in Beth-leem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yere old & vnder, according to the time which he had diligently searched out of the Wisemen. 17 Then was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ieremias, saying, 18 In \* Rhama was a voice heard, mourning, & weeping, & great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, & would not be comforted, because they were not. 19 And when Herod

*Mosea*

21.1.

*Iere.*

21.1.

### C H A P. III.

Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of  $\gamma$  Lord appeared in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt, 20 Saying, Arise, & take the babe & his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the babes life. 21 Then he arose vp, & tooke the babe & his mother, and came into the land of Israel, 22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in stead of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: yet after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galile, 23 And went & dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, *which was*, That he should be called a Nazarite..

#### C H A P. 3. 1. *John Baptists preaching.*

And \* in those daies, John the Baptist came & *Mar.*  
 preached in the wilderness of Iudea, 2 And *1.4.*  
 said, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at *luke*  
 hand. 3 For this is he of whom it is spoken by *3.3.*  
 the Prophet Esaias, saying, \* The voice of him *Esai.*  
 crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of *40.3.*  
 the Lord: make his paths straight. 4 And this *mark*  
 \* John had his garment of camels haire & a gir- *13.*  
 dle of a skin about his loines: his meat was also *luke*  
 locusts & wild hony. 5 \* Then went out to him *3.4.*  
 Hierusalem & al Iudea, & al the region round a *Mark*  
 bout Iordan. 6 And they were baptized of him *1.6.*  
 in Iordan, confessing their sins. 7 Now when he *Mar.*  
 saw many of  $\gamma$  Pharises, & of  $\gamma$  Sadduces come *1.5.*  
 to his baptisme, he said vnto them, \* O generati- *Chap.*  
 ons of vipers, who hath forwarned you to flee *12.34.*

## S. MATTHEWE.

from the anger to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy amendment of life. 9 And thinke

*John* not to say with your selues, \*We haue Abrahā

8. 39. to our father: for I say vnto you, that God is a-

*Actes* ble euen of these stones to raise vp children vn-

23. 26. to Abraham. 10 And now also is the axe put to

*Chap.* the root of the trees: \*therfore euery tree which

7. 19. bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down,

*Mar.* and cast into the fire. 11 \* In deed I baptize you

1. 8. with water to amendment of life, but he that com-

*Luke* meth after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I

3. 16. am not worthy to beare: he will baptize you

*John* with the holy Ghost, & with fire 12 Which hath

1. 26. his fanne in his hande, and will make cleane his

floore, and gather his wheat into his garner, but

will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable

fire. 13 \* Then came Iesus from Galile to Iordan

*Mar.* vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him. 14 But Iohn

1. 9. earnestly put him backe, saying, I haue neede to

*Luke* be baptized of thee, and comdest thou to mee?

3. 21. 15 Then Iesus answering, said to him, Let be

now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill al right-

eousnesse. So he suffered him 16 And Iesus

when he was baptized, came straight out of the

water. And lo, the heauens were opened vnto

*Colos.* him and Iohn sawe the Spirit of God descen-

1. 13. ding like a doue, and lighting vpon him. 17 And

*2. per.* 10. a voyce came from heauen, saying, \* This

1. 17. is my beloued Sonne in whome I am well

pleased.

CHAP.

# C H A P. IIII:

## CHAP. 4. 1. Christ is tempted.

Then was<sup>a</sup> Iesus led aside of y<sup>e</sup> Spirit into the *Mar.*  
wildernes to be tempted of y<sup>e</sup> deuil. 2 And *1. 12.*  
when he had fasted forty dayes & forty nights, *like*  
he was afterward hungry. 3 Then came to him *4. 1.*  
the tempter, & said, If thou be y<sup>e</sup> Sonne of God,  
cōmand that these stones be made bread. 4 But  
he answering, said, It is writtē, \* Mā shal not liue *Dent.*  
by bread only, but by euery word that procee- *8. 3.*  
deth out of the mouth of God. 5 Then the deuil  
tooke him vp into the holy city, & set him on a  
pinacle of the temple, 6 And said vnto him, If  
thou be the sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe:  
for it is written, \* that hee will giue his angels *Psal.*  
charge ouer thee, & with their hands they shall *91. 11.*  
lift thee vp, lest at any time thou shouldest dash  
thy foot against a stone. 7 Iesus said vnto him,  
It is written againe, \* Thou shalt not tempt the *Dent.*  
Lord thy God. 8 Againe the deuil tooke him vp *8. 16.*  
into an exceeding hie mountaine, & shewed him  
all the kingdomes of the world, & the glory of  
them, 9 And said to him, Al these wil I giue thee,  
if thou wilt fall downe, & worship me 10 Then  
said Iesus vnto him, Auoid Satan: for it is writtē, *Dent.*  
Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, & him *10. 20.*  
only shalt thou serue. 11 \* Then y<sup>e</sup> deuil left him *Mark.*  
& behold, y<sup>e</sup> angels came, & ministred vnto him, *1. 13.*  
12 \* And whē Iesus had heard th t Iohn was cō- *like*  
mitted to prison, he returned into Galile, 13 And *4. 13.*  
leaving Nazareth, went & dwelt in Capernaum, *Mar.*  
which is nere the sea in y<sup>e</sup> borders of Zabulon, *1. 14.*  
and



# S. MATTHEW.

and Nephthalim, 14 That it might bee fulfilled  
 which was spoken by Esaias y<sup>e</sup> Prophet, saying,  
 15 \* The land of Zabulon, & the land of Neph-  
 thalim by the way of y<sup>e</sup> sea beyond Iordan, Ga-  
 lile of the Gentiles: 16 The people which sate  
 in darknes, saw great light: & to th<sup>e</sup> which sate  
 in the region & shadow of death light is risen  
 vp. 17 \* From that time Iesus began to preach &  
 to say, Amend your liues for the kingdome of  
 heauen is at hand. 18 And Iesus walking by the  
 sea of Galile, saw two brethren, Simō, which was  
 called Peter, & Andrew his brother, casting a net  
 into the sea (for they were fishers) 19 \* And he  
 said vnto them, Follow me, and I will make you  
 fishers of men. 20 And they straightway lea-  
 uing the nets folowed him. 21 And when he was  
 gone forth from thence, he saw other two bre-  
 thren, James the sonne of Zebedeus, & Iohn his  
 brother in a ship with Zebedeus their father,  
 mending their nets, and he called them. 22 And  
 they without tarying, leauing the ship, & their  
 father, folowed him. 23 So Iesus went about al  
 Galile, teaching in their synagogues, and prea-  
 ching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing  
 euery sicknes & euery disease amōg the people.  
 24 And his fame spred abroad through al Syria  
 and they brought vnto him al sick people, that  
 were taken with diuers diseases & torments, &  
 them that were possessed with deuils, and those  
 which were lunatike, & those that had the pal-  
 sie, and he healed them. 25 And there folowed him

Esay

9.1.

Mar.

3.15.

Mar.

1.16.

1.cor.

1.27.

great

# C H A P. V.

great multitudes out of Galile, & Decapolis, & Iherusalem, & Iudea, and from beyond Iordau.

## C H A P. v. 1. Who are blessed

And when he saw the multitude, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was set, his disciples came vnto him. 2 And he opened his mouth, & taught them, say ng; 3 \*Blessed are the Luke  
poore in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of hea- 6. 20.  
uen. 4 \*Blessed are they that mourne: for they Lk. 21  
shalbe comforted. 5 \*Blessed are the meeke for 6. 23  
they shal inherite the earth. 6 \*Blessed are they Psal.  
which hunger and thirst for righteousnesse: for 37. 11.  
they shalbe filled. 7 Blessed are the merciful: for Esay  
they shal obtaine mercy 8 Blessed are the \* pure 65. 13  
in heart: for they shal see God. 9 Blessed are the Psal.  
peacemakers: for they shalbe called the childrē 24. 4.  
of God. 10 Blessed are they \* which suffer persecu- 1. Cor.  
tion for righteousnes sake, for theirs is y<sup>e</sup> king- 14. 33.  
dome of heauen. 11 \*Blessed shal ye be whē men Acts.  
deuile you, & persecute you, and say al maner of 5. 41.  
euil against you for my sake, faithfully. 12 Reioice & 1. pet.  
be glad, for great is your reward in heauē: for so 4. 14.  
persecuted they y<sup>e</sup> Prophets which were before  
you. 13 \*Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt Mar.  
haue lost his sauour, wherewith shal it be salted? 9. 50  
It is thenceforth good for nothing but to be cast Luke  
out, and to be troden vnder foot of men. 14 Ye 14. 34.  
are the light of the world. A city y<sup>e</sup> is set on an Mar.  
hill, cannot be hid. 15 \*Neither do men light a 4. 21.  
candle, and put it vnder a bushell, but on a can- Luke  
dlestick, and it giueth light vnto all that are in 8. 16.

## S. MATTHEWE.

- 1. Pet.** the house. 16 \* Let your light so shine before  
**2. 12.** men, y they may see your good works, & glo-  
 rifie your Father which is in heaven. 17 Thinke  
 not that I am come to destroy the Lawe, or the  
 Prophets. I am not come to destroy the, but to  
**Luke** fulfill them. 18 \* For truly I say vnto you, Till  
**16. 17.** heaven & earth perish, one iote or one tittle of  
 the Law shal not scape till all things be fulfilled.  
**Jam.** 19 \* Whosoever therefore shal breake one of  
**2. 10.** these least commandements and teach men so,  
 he shalbe called the least in y kindome of hea-  
 uen: but whosoever shal obferue & teach them,  
 the same shalbe called great in y kindome of  
 heauen. 20 For I say vnto you, except your  
**Luke** righteousnes \* exceede the *righteousnes* of the  
**11. 39.** Scribes & Pharises, ye shal not enter into y king-  
 dome of heauen. 21 Ye haue heard that it was  
**Exod.** said vnto them of the old time, \* Thou shalt not  
**20. 13.** kill: for whosoever killeth shalbe culpable of  
**deut.** iudgement 22 But I say vnto you, whosoever is  
**5. 17.** angry with his brother vnadvisedly, shalbe cul-  
 pable of iudgement. And whosoever saith vnto  
 his brother, Raca, (shalbe worthy to be punished  
 by the council And whosoever shal say, Foole,  
 shalbe worthy to be punished w heli fire. 23 If  
 then thou bring thy gift to the altar, & there re-  
 membrest y thy brother hath ought against thee,  
 24 Leauethere thine offering before the altar,  
 and go thy way: First be reconciled to thy bro-  
**Luke** ther, & then come and offer thy gift. 25 \* Agree  
**22. 58.** with thine aduersary quickly, while thou art in  
 the

# CHAP. V.

efore  
 glo.  
 hinke  
 or the  
 out to  
 ou, Til  
 cle of  
 lled.  
 ne of  
 n so,  
 hea.  
 hem  
 ne of  
 your  
 of the  
 king.  
 was  
 lt not  
 le of  
 er is  
 e cul.  
 vnto  
 shed  
 oole,  
 23 If  
 e re.  
 thee,  
 lear,  
 bro.  
 gree  
 rt in  
 the

e way with him, lest thine aduersarie deliuer  
 thee to y<sup>e</sup> Iudge, & the Iudge deliuer thee to the  
 ergeant, & thou be cast into prison. 26 Verely I  
 y vnto thee, thou shalt not come out thence, til  
 thou hast payed the vtmost farthing. 27 Ye haue  
 heard that it was said to the<sup>m</sup> of old time, \*Thou shalt  
 not comit adultery. 28 But I say vnto you, that whosoever  
 looketh on a womā to lust after her, hath comitted  
 adultery w<sup>th</sup> her already in his heart. 29 \*Wherefore if thy  
 right eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast  
 it frō thee: for better it is for thee, that one of thy  
 members perish, then that thy whole body should be  
 cast into hell. 30 Also if thy right hand make thee  
 to offend, cut it off, & cast it frō thee: for better it  
 is for thee that one of thy members perish, then  
 that thy whole body should bee cast into hell.  
 31 It hath bene said also, \*Whosoever shall put  
 away his wife, let him giue her a bil of diuor-  
 cement. 32 But I say vnto you, whosoever shall  
 put away his wife, (except it be for fornication) cau-  
 seth her to comit adultery: and whosoever shall  
 marry her that is diuorced, comitteth adultery.  
 33 Againe, ye haue heard that it was said to them  
 of old time, \*Thou shalt not forswear thy self,  
 but shalt performe thine othes to the Lord, 20. 7.  
 34 But I say vnto you, Swear not at all, neither  
 by heauen, for it is the throne of God: 35 Nor  
 by the earth: for it is his footstool: neither  
 by Ierusalem: for it is the citie of the great king.  
 36 Neither shalt thou sweare by thine head, be-  
 cause

Exo.  
 20. 14.  
 rom.  
 13. 9.  
 Chap.  
 18. 8, 9  
 mark.  
 9. 47.  
 Chap.  
 19. 7.  
 deut.  
 24. 1.  
 mark.  
 10. 4.  
 Exo.  
 20. 7.  
 leuit.  
 19. 11.  
 deut.  
 5. 16

# S MATTHEWE.

cause thou canst not make one haire white  
*Jam.* black. 37 \* But let your comunicatiō be yea, y  
*5. 12.* nay, nay. For whatsoeuer is more then these, c  
meth of euil. 38 Ye haue heard y it hath bin said  
*Exod.* An eye for an eye, & a tooth for a tooth. 39 B  
*21. 24.* I say vnto you, \* Resist not euil: but whosoever  
*Luke* shall smite thee on thy right checke, turne to him  
*6. 29.* the other also. 40 And if any man wil sue thee  
*rom.* the law & take away thy coate, let him haue the  
*12. 17.* cloke also. 41 And whosoever will compell thee  
*Deut.* 10 go a mile, go w him twaine. 42 \* Giue to him  
*15. 8.* that asketh, & from him y would borow of thee  
turne not away. 43 Ye haue heard y it hath bin  
*Leuit.* said, \* Thou shalt loue thy neighbor, & hate thine  
*19. 18.* enemy. 44 But I say vnto you, \* Loue your ene  
*Luke* mies: bleesse them y curse you: do good to them  
*6. 27.* that hate you, \* & pray for them which hurt you  
*Luke* and persecute you, 45 \* That ye may be the child  
*23. 34.* dren of your Father that is in heauen: for he ma  
*Luke* keth his sunne to arise on the euil, and the good  
*6. 35.* and sendeth raine on the iust & vniust. 46 I say  
if ye loue them which loue you, what reward  
shal ye haue? Do not y Publicans euen the same  
47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren only,  
what singular thing do ye? do not euen the Pub  
licanes likewise? 48 Ye shall therefore be perfect  
as your Father which is in heauen, is perfect,

## CHAP. 6. 14. Of forgiving our brother.

**T**AKE heed y ye giue not your almes before  
men to be seene of them, or els ye shal haue  
no reward of your Father which is in heauen.

2 \* There

# CHAP. VI.

\* Therefore when thou giuest thine almes, thou shalt not make a trumpet to be blowen before thee, as the hypocrites do in the Synagogues & in the streets, to be praised of men. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their reward. 3 But when thou dost thine almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth, 4 That thine almes may be in secret, & thy Father y<sup>e</sup> seeth in secret, he will reward thee openly. 5 And when thou prayest, be not as the hypocrites: for they loue to stand, and pray in the Synagogues, & in the corners of the streets because they would be seene of men. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their reward. 6 But when thou praieest, enter into thy chamber: & whē thou hast shut thy doore, pray vnto thy Father which is in secret, & thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly. 7 Also when ye pray, vse no vaine repetitions as the heathen: for they thinke to be heard for their much babbling. 8 Be ye not like them therefore. For your Father knoweth wherof ye haue need before ye aske of him. 9 After this maner therefore pray ye, \* Our Father which art in heauen, *Luke*  
halowed be thy name. 10 Thy kingdom come. *11, 2.*  
Thy wil be done euen in earth, as it is in heauen.  
11 Giue vs this day our daily bread. 12 And forgive vs our detts, as we also forgive our detters.  
13 And lead vs not into tentation, but deliuer vs *Chap.*  
fro euil: for thine is y<sup>e</sup> kingdom, & the power, *13, 19.*  
and the glory for euer, Amen. 14 \* for if ye doe *Mar.*  
forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly Fa- *18, 23.*  
ther

# S. MATTHEWE.

ther will also forgiue you. 15 But if ye do not  
 forgiue men their trespasses, no more wil your  
 Father forgiue *you* your trespasses. 16 Moreo-  
 uer, when ye fast, looke not sowe as the hypo-  
 crites: for they disfigure their faces, y they might  
 seeme vnto men to fast. Verely I say vnto you, y  
 they haue their reward. 17 But when thou fa-  
 stest anoint thine head, & wash thy face, 18 That  
 thou leeme not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy  
 Father which is in secret: and thy Father which  
 seeth in secret, wil reward thee openly. 19 Lay  
 not vp treasures for your selues vpon the earth,  
 where the moth and canker corrupt, and where  
*Luke* theeuës dig through and steale. 20 \* But lay vp  
 12.33. treasures for your selues in heauen, where nei-  
 1.11. ther the moth nor canker corrupteth, and where  
 6.19. theeuës neither dig through nor steale. 21 For  
*Luke* where your treasure is, there will your heart be  
 11.34. also. 22 \* The light of the body is the eye: if then  
*Luke* thine eye be single, thy whole body shalbe light.  
 16.13. 23 But if thine eye be wicked, then al thy body  
*Psal.* shalbe darke. Wherefore if the light y is in thee,  
 55.23. be darknes, how great is y darknes? 24 \* No man  
*Luke* can serue two masters: for either he shal hate the  
 12.32. one, & loue the other, or els he shall leane to the  
*phil.* one, & despise the other. Ye cannot serue God &  
 4.6. riches. 25 \* Therefore I say vnto you, be not care-  
 1.11. full for your life, what ye shall eate, or what ye  
 6.8. shall drinke: nor yet for your body what ye sha-  
 1.1. put on. Is not the life more worth then meat? &  
 5.7. the body then rayment? 26 Behold the foules of  
 the

## C H A P. VII.

the heauen : for they sow not, neither reape, nor  
 cary into the barnes : yet your heauenly Father  
 feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?  
 27 Which of you by taking care is able to adde  
 one cubite vnto his stature? 28 And why care ye  
 for raiment? Learne how the lilies of the field do  
 grow: they are not wearied, neither spin: 29 Yet  
 I say vnto you, that euen Salomon in al his glo-  
 ry was not arrayed like one of these. 30 Where-  
 fore if God so cloth the grasse of the field which  
 is to day, & to morow is cast into the ouen, shal  
 he not doe much more vnto you, O ye of little  
 faith? 31 Therefore take no thought, saying,  
 What shall we eate, or what shal we drinke: or  
 wherewith shal we be clothed? 32 (For after al  
 these things seeke the Gentiles) for your heauen-  
 ly Father knoweth that ye haue need of al these  
 things 33 But seeke yee first the kingdome of  
 God & his righteousness, & al these things shalbe  
 ministred vnto you. 34 Care not then for the  
 morow : for the morow shall care for it selfe:  
 the day hath ynough wih his owne griefe.

C H A P. 7. 13. *The broad and straight way.*

Iudge not that ye be not iudged. 2 For with  
 what \* iudgment ye iudge, ye shalbe iudged, &  
 with what \* measure ye mete, it shalbe measured  
 to you againe. 3 And why seeest thou the mote  
 that is in thy brothers eye, and perceiuest not the  
 beame y<sup>e</sup> is in thine owne eye? 4 \* Or how saiest  
 thou to thy brother, Suffer mee to cast out the  
 mote out of thine eye, and behold, a beame is in  
 thine

Luke

6.37.

Mat.

4.24.

Luke.

6.41.



# S. MATTHEWE

thine owne eye: 5 Hypocrite, first cast out that  
beame out of thine owne eye, & then shalt thou  
see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy bro-  
thers eye. 6 Giue ye not that which is holy, to  
dogs, neither cast ye your pearles before swine,  
lest they tread them vnder their feete, & turning

*Chap.* againe al to reut you 7 \* Aske, and it shalbe gi-  
*21.21.* uen you: seeke, and ye shal find: knocke and it  
*mar.* shalbe open: d vnto you. 8 For whosoever ask-  
*21.24.* eth, receiueth: and he y seeketh, findeth: and to  
*luke* him y knocketh, it shalbe opened. 9 For what  
*21.9.* man is there among you, which if his sonne aske  
*iohn* him bread, would giue him a stone? 10 Or if he  
*14.13.* aske fi h, wil he giue him a serpent? 11 If ye then,  
which are euill, can giue to your children good  
gifts, how much more shal your Father which is  
in heau: n, giue good things to them y aske him?

*Luke* 12 \* Therefore whatsoever ye would that men  
*6.31.* should do to you, euē so do ye to them: for this  
*Luke* is the Lawe and the Prophets. 13 \* Enter in at  
*13.24.* the straite gate: for it is the wide gate & broad  
way that leadeth to destruction: and many there  
be which go in thereat, 14 Because the gate is  
strait, & the way narrow that leadeth vnto life,  
& few there be that finde it. 15 Beware of false  
prophets, which come to you in sheepes clo-

thing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.

*Luke* 16 Ye shal know them by their fruits. 17 Do men  
*6.44.* gather grapes of thornes? or figges of thistles?  
17 So euery good tree bringeth forth good  
fruit, & a corrupt tree bringeth forth euil fruit.

## C H A P. VIII.

**A** good tree cannot bring forth euil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 \* Euery tree y<sup>e</sup> bringeth not forth good fruit, *Chap.*  
is hewen downe, & cast into the fire. 20 There- *3. 10.*

fore by their fruits ye shal know them. 21 Not  
euery one y<sup>e</sup> saith vnto me, Lord, Lord, shal enter  
into the kingdome of heauen, \* but he that doth *Rom.*

my Fathers will which is in heauen. 22 \* Many *2. 13.*  
wil say to me in y<sup>e</sup> day, Lord, Lord, haue we not *1. 13.*

by thy Name prophesied? and by thy Name cast  
out deuils? and by thy Name done many great  
works? 23 And then will I professe to them, \* I *Luke*

neuer knew you: \* depart fro me, ye that worke *13. 27.*

iniquitie. 24 Whosoever then heareth of mee *Psal.*  
these words, \* and doth the same, I wil liken him *6. 8.*

to a wise man, which hath builded his house on a *Luke*  
rocke: 25 And the raine fel, & the floods came, *6. 47.*

& the winds blew, & beat vpon y<sup>e</sup> house, & it fell *48.*  
not: for it was grounded on a rocke. 26 But

whosoever heareth these my words & doth them  
not, shalbe likened vnto a foolish man, which  
hath builded his house vpon y<sup>e</sup> sand: 27 And the  
raine fel, & the floods came, & the winds blew,  
and beat vpon y<sup>e</sup> house, & it fel, & the fall there-  
of was great. 28 \* And it came to passe, when *Mat.*

Iesus had ended these words, the people were *1. 22.*

astonied at his doctrine. 29 For he taught them *Luke*  
as one hauing authoritie, & not as the Scribes. *4. 34.*

**C H A P. 8. 4 The Centurions saith.**

**N**owe when he was come downe from the  
mountain, great multitudes folowed him.

# S. M A T T H E W E.

**Mar.** 2 \* And lo, there came a leper and worshipped  
**1.40.** him, saying, Master if thou wilt, thou canst make  
**Luke** me cleane. 3 And Iesus putting forth his hand,  
**5.12.** touched him, saying, I wil, be thou cleane: & im-  
 mediately his leprosie was censed. 4 Then Iesus  
 said vnto him, See thou tell no man, but go, and  
 shew thy selfe vnto the Priest, and offer the gift  
**Zeni.** that \*Moses commanded for a witnes to them.  
**14.3,** 5 \* When Iesus was entred into Capernaū, there  
**4.** came vnto him a Centurio, beseeching him, 6 And  
**Luke** said, Master, my seruant lieth sicke at home of the  
**7.1.** palsie, & is grievously pained. 7 And Iesus said  
 vnto him, I will come and heale him. 8 But the  
 Centurio answered, saying, Master, I am not wor-  
 thy y thou shouldest come vnder my rooffe: but  
 speake the word only, & my seruant shalbe hea-  
 led. 9 For I am a man also vnder the authority  
 of another, & haue souldiers vnder me: & I say  
 to one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come,  
 and he cometh: & to my seruant Do this, & he  
 doth it. 10 When Iesus heard that, he marvel-  
 led, & said to them y followed him Verely, I say  
 vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, enen in  
 Israel. 11 But I say vnto you, y many shal come  
 from the East & West. and shall sit downe with  
 Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome  
 of heauen. 12 And the children of the kingdome  
**Chap.** shalbe cast out into vtter \*darknes, there shalbe  
**22.13.** weeping and gnashing of teeth. 13 Then Iesus  
 said vnto the Centurio Go thy way, & as thou  
 hast beleueed, so be it vnto thee, And his seruant

# CHAP. VIII.

was healed the same houre. 14 \* And when Iesus *Mar.*  
came to Peters house, he saw his wifes mother 1. 29.  
laid downe, & sicke of a feuer. 15 And he tou- *luke*  
ched her hand, & the feuer left her: so she arose 4. 38.  
and ministred vnto them. 16 \* When the euen *Mar.*  
was come, they brought vnto him many y<sup>e</sup> were 1. 32.  
possessed with deuils: and hee cast out the spi- *luke*  
rits with *his* word, & healed al that were sicke, 4. 40.  
17 That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken *Esa*  
by \* Esaias the Prophet, saying, He tooke our in- 53. 4.  
firmities, & bare *our* sicknesses. 18 \* And when 1. *per.*  
Iesus saw great multitudes of people about him, he 2. 24.  
commanded them to go ouer *the water*. 19 Then *Luke*  
came there a certaine Scribe, and said vnto him, 9. 57.  
Master, I wil folow thee whithersoever thou go- 58.  
est. 20 But Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue  
holes, & the birds of y<sup>e</sup> heauen haue nests, but the  
Sonne of man hath not wheron to rest his head.  
21 And another of his disciples said vnto him Ma-  
ster, suffer me first to go & bury my father 22 But  
Iesus said vnto him, Follow me and let the dead  
bury their dead. 23 \* And whē he was entred in - *Mar.*  
to the ship, his disciples followed him. 24 And 4. 37.  
behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, so *luke*  
that the ship was couered w<sup>th</sup> waues: but he was 8. 23.  
asleepe. 25 Then his disciples came and awoke  
him, saying, Master, saue vs, we perish. 26 And  
he said vnto them, Why are ye feareful, O ye of  
litle faith? Then he arose, & rebuked the winds  
and the sea: and so there was a great calme.  
27 And the men maruiled, saying, What man is

# S. MATTHEW E.

this, that both the windes and the sea obey him?

**Mar.** 28\* And whē he was come to the other side in-  
**5.1,2.** to the cōtrey of the Gergesenes, there met him  
**Luke 9.** two possessed with deuils, which came out of the  
**26,27.** graues very feare, so y<sup>e</sup> no man might go by that  
way. 29 And behold, they cried out, saying, Ie-  
sus the Sonne of God, what haue we to do with  
thee? Art thou come hitherto torment vs before  
the time? 30 Now there was afar off frō them, a  
great heard of swine feeding. 31 And the deuils  
besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs  
to goe into the heard of swine. 32 And he sayd  
vnto them, Go. So they went out & departed in-  
to the heard of swine: & behold, the whole heard  
of swine ran headlong into the sea, & died in the  
water. 33 Then y<sup>e</sup> heardmen fled: & when they  
were come into the city, they told al things, and  
what was become of them which were possessed  
with the deuils. 34 And beholde, all the citie  
came out to meet Iesus: & when they saw him,  
they besought him to depart out of their coasts.

## CHAP. 9. Five miracles wrought by Christ.

**Mar.** **T**hen he entred into a ship, & passed ouer, &  
**2.** came into his owne citie. 2 And loe,\* they  
**1.3.** brought to him a man sick of the palfie, laid on a  
**Luke** bed. And Iesus seeing their faith, said to the sicke  
**pi8.** of y<sup>e</sup> palfie, Sonne, be of good cōfort: thy sinnes  
are forgiven thee. 3 And behold, certaine of the  
Scribes said within themselves, This man blas-  
phemeth. 4 But when Iesus saw their thoughts,  
he said, Wherfore thinke ye euil things in your  
hearte?

# CHAP. IX.

hearts? 5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy  
 finnes are forgiven thee, or to say, Arise, & walk?  
 6 And that ye may knowe y<sup>e</sup> the Sonne of man  
 hath authoritie in earth to forgive finnes, (then  
 said he vnto the sicke of the palsey,) Arise, take vp  
 thy bed, & go to thine house. 7 And he arose, &  
 departed to his owne house. 8 So when y<sup>e</sup> mul-  
 titude saw it, they marveled, and glorified God  
 which had giuen such authority to men. 9\* And *Mary*  
 as Iesus passed forth frō thence, he saw a man sit- *2 14.*  
 ting at the custome, named Matthew, and said to *Luke*  
 him, Follow me And he arose, & followed him. *5. 27.*  
 10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meate in  
 his house, behold, many Publicanes and sinners,  
 that came *thither*, sate downe at the table w<sup>th</sup> Ie-  
 sus & his disciples. 11 And when y<sup>e</sup> Pharises saw  
 that, they said to his disciples, Why eateth your  
 master w<sup>th</sup> Publicans and sinners? 12 Now when  
 Iesus heard it, he said vnto thē, The whole need  
 not a Physician, but they y<sup>e</sup> are sicke. 13 But go  
 ye & learne what this is, \*I wil haue mercy, and *Hose.*  
 not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righ- *6. 6.*  
 teous, but the \*sinners to repentance. 14 \*Then *1. Tim.*  
 came the disciples of Iohn to him, saying, Why *1. 15.*  
 doe we & the Pharises fast oft, and thy disciples *Mat.*  
 fast not? 15 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the *2. 18.*  
 children of the marriage chamber moune as *Luke*  
 long as the bridegrome is with them? but the *5. 33.*  
 dayes wil come when the bridegrome shalbe ta-  
 ken from them, & then shal they fast. 16 More-  
 over, no man pieceth an old garment w<sup>th</sup> a piece

# S. MATTHEWE.

of new cloth: for that that should fill it vp, taketh away from the garment, and the breach is worse. 17 Neither do they put new wine into olde vessels: for then the vessels would breake, & the wine would be spilt, & the vessels should perish. but they put new wine into new vessels,

*Mar.*

*5.22.*

*Luke*

*8.41.*

and so are both preserved. 18 \*While he thus spake vnto the, behold, there came a certaine ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is now deceased, but come & lay thine hand on her, & she shal live. 19 And Iesus arose & folowed him w<sup>th</sup> his disciples. 20 (And behold, a woman which was diseased w<sup>th</sup> an issue of blood twelue yeres, came behind him, & touched y<sup>e</sup> hem of his garmēt. 21 For she said in her self, If I may touch but his garment only, I shal be whole. 22 Then Iesus turned him about, and seeing her, did say, Daughter, be of good cōfort, thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole at that same moment ) 23 Now when Iesus came into the rulers house, & saw y<sup>e</sup> minstrels & the multitude making noise, 24 He said vnto them, Get you hēce: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. 25 And when the multitude were put forth, he wēt in & tooke her by the hand, & the maid arose. 26 And this bruit went thorowout all y<sup>e</sup> land. 27 And as Iesus departed thence, two blind mē folowed him, crying, and saying, O sonne of Dauid haue mercy vpon vs. 28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde came to him, & Iesus said vnto them,

## C H A P. X.

them, Beleeue ye that I am able to do this? And they said vnto him, Yea Lord. 29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you. 30 And their eyes were opened, & Iesus gaue them great charge, saying, See that no man know it. 31 But when they were departed, they spread abroad his fame thorowout all that land. 32 \* And as they went out, beholde, they *Luke* brought to him a dumme man possessed with a *11.14.* deuil. 33 And when the deuil was cast out, the dumme spake: then the multitude marueiled, saying, The like was neuer scene in Israel. 34 But y Pharises said, \* He casteth out deuils, through the *Chap.* prince of deuils. 35 And \* Iesus went about all *12.24.* cities & towns, teaching in their Synagogues, & *Mar.* preaching y gospel of the kingdome, & healing *6.6.* euery sicknes & euery disease among y people. 36 But \* when he saw the multitude, he had com- *Mar.* passion vpon them, because they were disper- *6.34.* sed, and scattered abroad as sheepe hauing no shepheard. 37 Then said hee to his disciples, *Luke* \* Surely the haruest is great, but the laborers are *10.2.* few. 38 Wherefore pray the Lord of the haruest, *10.4.* & he would send forth laborers into his haruest. 35, 36.

C H A P. 10. 22 Continuance vnto the end.

**A**Nd \* he called his twelue disciples vnto him, *Mar.* & gaue them power against vncleane spirits *3.13,* to cast the out, & to heale euery sicknes & euery *14.15.* disease. 2 Now the names of the twelue Apo- *luk. 9.* stles are these. The first is Simon called Peter, & *1.2.* Andrew his brother: James the son of Zebedeus, and



## S. MATTHEW E.

and Iohn his brother: 3 Philip and Bartlemew: Thomas, and Matthew that Publican: Iames the son of Alpheus, & Lebbeus whose surname was Thaddeus: 4 Simon the Cananite, & Iudas Iscariot who also betrayed him. 5 These twelve did Iesus send forth, & commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, & into the cities of the Samaritanes enter ye not: 6 But go rather \*to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel, 7 \*And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heauen is at hand. 8 Heale y<sup>e</sup> sicke: cleanse y<sup>e</sup> lepers: raise vp the dead: cast out the deuils. Freely ye haue receiued, freely giue. 9 \*Possesse not golde, nor siluer, nor money in your girdles, 10 Nor a scrip for y<sup>e</sup> iourney, neither two coats, neither shooes, nor a staffe: \*for the workman is worthy of his meat. 11 And into \*whatsoeuer city or town ye shal come, enquire who is worthy in it, & there abide til ye go thence. 12 And when ye come into an house, salute the same. 13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthy let your peace returne to you. 14 \*And whosoever shal not receiue you, nor heare your words, when ye depart out of that house, or that city, \*shake off the dust of your feet. 15 Truly I say vnto you it shalbe easier for them of the land of Sodom & Gomorah in the day of iudgement, then for y<sup>e</sup> city. 16 \*Beholde, I send you as sheepe in the mids of the wolues, be ye therefore wise as serpents, & innocent as doves. 17 But beware of men, for they will

*Acts*

13.46.

*Luke*

10.9,

11.

*Mar.*

8.8,9.

*Luke*

9.3.

*Ch* 22.

25.

*L. Tim*

5.15.

*Luke*

10.8.

*Mar.*

6.11.

*Luke*

9.5.

*Acts*

13.51.

*Luke*

10.3.

# CHAB. X.

will deliuer you vp to the Councils, and will scourge you in their Synagogues. 18 And ye shalbe brought to the gouernors & kings for my sake in witnes to thē, & to the Gentiles. 19 *Mar.* But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought how *13. 11.* or what ye shal speake: for it shalbe giuen you *luke* in y<sup>e</sup> houre what ye shal say. 20 For it is not ye *12. 11.* that speake, but the spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. 21 And the<sup>r</sup> brother shal betray *Luke* the brother to death & the father the sonne, and *21. 15.* the children shal rise against *their* parents, & shal cause them to die. 22 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Name. *Mar.* but he that endureth to the end, he shalbe saued. 23 And when they persecute *13. 13.* you in this city, flee into another: for verily I say vnto you, ye shall not go ouer *all* y<sup>e</sup> cities of Israel, til the Sonne of man be come. 24 *Luke* The disc- *6. 40.*iple is not aboue his maister, nor the seruant *2.* aboue his Lord. 25 It is enough for the disc- *john*iple to be as his maister, & the seruant as his Lord. *13. 16.* *6. 15.* If they haue called the maister of the house Beelzebub, how much more them of his household? 26 *20.* Feare thē not therefore: *Chap.* for there is nothing *12. 24.* couered, that shal not be disclosed: nor hid, that shal not be knowen. 27 What I tel you in dark. *Mar.*nes, that speake ye in light: and what ye beare in *4. 22.*the ears, that preach ye on the houses. 28 And *luke* feare ye not thē which kil the body, but are not *8. 17.*able to kil the soule: but rather feare him which *and* is able to destroy both soule and body in hell. *12. 2.* 29 Are not two sparrowes sold for a farthing, &  
one

## S. MATTHEWE.

one of them shal not fal on the ground without

**2. Sam.** your Father? 30 \* Yea, & all the haire of your

**14. 45.** head are numbred. 31 Feare ye not therefore,

**2. sam.** yee are of more value then many sparrows.

**14. 11.** 32 \* Whosoever therefore shall confesse me be-

**act. 27** fore men, him will I confesse also before my Fa-

**34.** ther which is in heauen 33 But whosoever shal

**Mar.** denie me before men, him will I also denie be-

**8. 38.** fore my Father which is in heauen. 34 \* Thinke

**Luke** not that I am come to send peace into the earth:

**12. 51.** I came not to send peace, but the sword. 35 For

I am come to set a man at variance against his

father, and the daughter against her mother, and

the daughter in law against her mother in law.

**Mica.** 36 \* And a mans enemies shall be they of his

**7. 6.** owne householde. 37 \* He that loveth father

**Luke** or mother, more then me, is not worthy of me,

**11. 26.** And he y loveth sonne, or daughter more then

**Chap.** me, is not worthy of me. 38 \* And he that taketh

**16. 24** not his crosse, & foloweth after me, is not wor-

**mark.** thy of me. 39 \* He that will finde his life, shall

**8. 34.** lose it, & he that loseth his life for my sake, shall

**luk. 9.** find it. 40 He that receiveth you, receiveth me:

**23. &** & he that receiveth me, receiveth him that hath

**14. 27.** sent me. 41 \* He that receiveth a Prophet in the

**John** name of a Prophet shall receive a Prophets re-

**12. 25.** ward: and he that receiveth a righteous man in

**Luke** the name of a righteous man, shall receive the re-

**10. 16.** ward of a righteous man. 42 \* And whosoever

**Mar.** shal give unto one of these litle ones to drinke a

**24. 1.** cup of cold water only, in y name of a disciple,

verely

# CH A A. XI.

verely I say vnto you, he shal not lose his reward.

CH A P. II. 25 *The Gospel reuiled to children.*

**A**Nd it came to passe that whē Iesus had made  
 an end of commanding his twelue disciples,  
 he departed thence to teach & to preach in their  
 cities. 2 \* And when Iohn heard in the prison *Luke*  
 the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, *7.18.*  
 & said vnto him, 3 Art thou he y<sup>e</sup> should come,  
 or shall we looke for another? 4 And Iesus an-  
 swering, said vnto them, Go, & shew Iohn, what  
 things ye heare & see. 5 The blind receiue sight;  
 & the halt do walke: the lepers are censed, and  
 the deafe heare: the dead are raised vp, \* & the *Esaie*  
 poore receiue the Gospel. 6 And blessed is he *61.1.*  
 that shall not be offended in me. 7 And as they *luke*  
 departed, Iesus began to speake vnto the multi- *4.18.*  
 tude, of Iohn What went ye out into the wil-  
 dernessē to see? A reed shaken with the winde?  
 8 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in  
 soft raiment? Behold they y<sup>e</sup> weare soft clothing,  
 are in kings houses. 9 But what went ye out to  
 see? A Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, & more then  
 a Prophet 10 For this is he of whom it is writ-  
 tē, \* Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, *Mal.*  
 which shall prepare thy way before thee. 11 Ve- *3.1.*  
 rely I say vnto you, among them which are be- *luke*  
 gotten of women, arose there not a greater then *7.28.*  
 Iohn Baptist, notwithstanding, he that is the least  
 in the kingdome of heauen, is greater then he.  
 12 And from \* the time of Iohn Baptist hitherto *Luke*  
 the kingdome of heauen suffereth violence, & the *16.16.*  
 violent

# S. MATTHEWE.

Violent take it by force. 13 For al the Prophets  
and the law prophesied vnto Iohn. 14 And if ye

*Mal.*

*4.5.*

*Luke*

*7.31.*

will receiue it, this is that \* Elias, which was to  
come. 15 He that hath eares to heare, let him  
heare. 16 \* But whereunto shal I liken this ge-  
neration? it is like vnto litle children which sit  
in the markets, and call vnto their fellowes,  
17 And say, We haue piped vnto you, and yee  
haue not danced, wee haue mourned vnto you,  
and ye haue not lamented. 18 For Iohn came  
neither eating nor drinking, & they say, He hath  
a deuil. 19 The Sonne of man came eating and  
drinking, and they say, Beholde a glutton and a  
drinker of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes & sin-  
ners: but wisedome is iustified of her children.

*Luke*

*10.13.*

20 \* Then began he to vpbraide the cities, where-  
in most of his great workes were done, because  
they repented not. 21 Woe be to thee, Chora-  
zin: Woe be to thee, Bethsaida: for if the great  
workes, which were done in you, had bene done  
in Tyrus and Sidon, they had repented long a-  
gone in sackcloth & ashes. 22 But I say to you,  
It shalbe easier for Tyrus and Sidon at the day  
of iudgement, then for you. 23 And thou, Ca-  
pernaum, which art lifted vp vnto heauen, shalt  
be brought downe to hel: for if the great workes  
which haue bin done in thee, had bene done a-  
mong them of Sodom, they had remained to  
this day. 24 But I say vnto you, that it shall be

*Luke*

*10.21.*

easier for them of the land of Sodom in the day  
of iudgement, then for thee. 25 \* At that time

Iesus

Iesu  
I at  
hast  
vnd  
26  
was  
of r  
Som  
man  
the S  
all ye  
you.  
me th  
shall  
my y  
C  
A  
th  
hung  
& to  
said v  
is not  
said v  
did w  
with h  
God, s  
lawfu  
were  
hane y  
Sabb  
the Sa

## C H A P. XII.

Iesus answered, and said, I giue thee thanks, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and men of vnderstanding, & hast opened them vnto babes. 26 It is so, O Father, because thy good pleasure was such. 27 \* All things are giuen vnto me *John* of my Father: and \* no man knoweth the *3.35.* Sonne, but the Father: neither knoweth any *John* man the Father, but the Sonne, and he to whom *6.46.* the Sonne will reueile him. 28 Come vnto me, all ye that are weary and laden and I will ease you. 29 Take my yoke on you, and learne of me that I am meeke and lowly in heart: and ye *Iere.* shall finde rest \* vnto your soules. 30 \* For *6.16.* my yoke is easie, and my burden light. *1.706.*

C H A P. 12. 22 *The possess' d is holpen.* 53.

**A**T \* that time Iesus went on a Sabbath day *Mar.* thorow the corne, and his disciples were an *2.23.* hungred, and began to plucke the eares of corne & to eate. 2 And when the *P* arises saw it, they *luke* said vnto him, Behold, thy disciples do y<sup>e</sup> \* which *6.1.* is not lawfull to do vpon the Sabbath. 3 But he *Deut.* said vnto them, \* Haue ye not read what Dauid *23.25.* did when he was an hungred, and they that were *1. Sam.* with him? 4 How he entred into the house of *21.6.* God, & did eate the shew-bread, which was not lawfull for him to eate, neither for them which were with him but only for the \* Priests? 5 Or *Exod.* haue ye not read in the Law, how that on the *29.33.* Sabbath dayes the Priests in the Temple \* breake *Num.* the Sabbath, & are blamelesse? 6 But I say vnto *28.9.* you,

# S. M'ATTHEWE.

you, that here is one greater then the Temple.

*Hofe.* 7 Wherefore if ye knew what this is, \*I wil haue  
*6.7.* mercy, & not sacrifice, yee would not haue con-

*Mar.* is Lord, *me* of the Sabbath. 9 \*And he departed

*3.1.* thence, & went into their Synagogue: 10 And

*luke* behold, there was a man which had *his* hand dri-

*6.6.* ed vp. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to

heale vpō a Sabbath day? that they might accuse

him. 11 And he said vnto them, What man shal

there be among you, y<sup>e</sup> hath a sheepe, & if it fall

on a Sabbath day into a pit, doth not take it &

lift it out? 12 How much more then is a man

better then a sheepe? therefore, it is lawfull to do

well on a Sabbath day. 13 Then said he to the

man, Stretch forth thine hand And he stretched it

forth, & it was made whole as the other. 14 The

the Pharises went out, & consulted against him,

how they might destroy him. 15 But when Iesus

knew it, he departed thence, & great multitudes

folowed him & he healed the all, 16 And char-

ged the in threatning wise, that they should not

make him known, 17 That it might be fulfilled,

which was spokē by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

*Isai.* 18 \*Behold my seruant whō I haue chosen, my

*42.1.* besoued in whō my soule delighteth: I wil put

my Spirit on him, & he shal shew iudgement to

the Gentiles. 19 He shal not strue, nor cry, nei-

ther shal any man heare his voice in y<sup>e</sup> streetes

20 A bruised reede shall hee not breake, and

smoking flaxe shall he not quench, till he bring

forth

# CHAP. XII.

fourth iudgement vnto victory. 21 And in his Name shall the Gentiles trust 22 \*Then was brought to him one possessed with a deuill, both blind & dumme, & he healed him, so y<sup>e</sup> he was blind & dumme, both spake & saw. 23 And all y<sup>e</sup> people were amased, & said, Is not this that sonne of Dauid? 24 But when y<sup>e</sup> Pharises heard it, they said, \*This man casteth the deuils no other wise out, but through Beel-zebub the prince of deuils. 25 But Iesus knew their thoughts, & said to them, Euery kingdome diuided against it self, is brought to nought: & euery city or house diuided against it selfe, shal not stand. 26 So if Satan cast out Satan, he is diuided against himself: how shal then his kingdome endure? 27 Also if I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whō do your children cast them out? Therefore they shal be your iudges 28 But if I cast out deuils by the Spirit of God, then is y<sup>e</sup> kingdome of God come vnto you. 29 Els how can a man enter into a strong mans house & spoile his goods, except he first bind y<sup>e</sup> strong man, & then spoile his house? 30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not w<sup>th</sup> me, scattereth. 31 \*Wherefore I say vnto you, Euery sin & blasphemie shal be forgiven vnto men: but y<sup>e</sup> blasphemie against the holy Ghost shall not be forgiven vnto men. 32 And whosoever shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever shall speake against the holy Ghost, it shal not be forgien<sup>e</sup> him, neither in this world,

Luke

11.14

chap.

9.34.

marke

3.22.

luke

11.15

Mat.

3.28,

29.12.

12.10.

1.john

5.16.



# S. MATTHEW E.

nor in the world to come. 33 Either make the tree good, & his fruit good, or els make y<sup>e</sup> tree euil, & his fruit euil: for y<sup>e</sup> tree is known by the fruit. 34 O generations of vipers, howe can ye speake good things when ye are euil: for of the  
*Luke* \*abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

*Luke*

6.45.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good things, & an euil man out of an euil treasure bringeth forth euil things.

36 But I say vnto you, that of euery idle word that men shal speake, they shall giue account thereof at y<sup>e</sup> day of iudgement. 37 For by thy words thou shalt be iustified, and by thy wordes thou

*Chap.*

shalt be condemned. 38 \*Then answered certaine

16. 1.

of the Scribes & of the Pharises, saying, Master,

*Luke*

we would see a signe of thee. 39 But he answered

11.29.

& said to them, An euill & adulterous generation seeketh a signe, but no signe shalbe giuen vnto it, saue that signe of the Prophet Ionas.

*Iona*

40 \*For as Ionas was three daies & three nights

1. 17.

in the whales belly: So shall the Sonne of man be three dayes & three nights in the heart of the earth. 41 The men of Nineue shal rise in iudgement

*Iona*

with this generation, and condemne it: for

3.5.

they<sup>e</sup> repented at the preaching of Ionas: & be-

1. Kin.

holde, a greater then Ionas<sup>e</sup> here. 42 \*The

16. 1.

Queene of y<sup>e</sup> South shal rise in iudgement with

2. chr.

this generation, and shall condemne it: for she

2. 1.

came from the vtmost partes of y<sup>e</sup> earth to heare

*Luke*

the wisdom of Solomon: and behold, a grea-

11.24.

ter then Solomon<sup>e</sup> here. 43 \*Now when the

vncleane

# CHAP. XIII.

uncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh throughout drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none. 44 Then he saith, I will returne into mine house from whence I came: and when hee is come, hee findeth it emptie, swept and garnished. 45 Then hee goeth and taketh vnto him seuen other spirites worse then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there: \* and the ende of that man is worse then the beginning. Euen so shall it be with this wicked generation. 46 \* While he yet spake to the multitude, beholde, his mother, and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him. 47 Then one said vnto him, Beholde, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speake with thee. 48 But hee answered and said to him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? 49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, & said, Behold my mother and my brethren. 50 For whosoever shall doe my Fathers will which is in heauen, the same is my brother and sister, and mother.

Hebr.  
6. 4.

Mar.  
3. 31.  
luke  
8. 20.

CHAP. 13. 1. *The parable of the sower.*

He \*same day went Iesus out of the house, & sate by the sea side. 2 And great multitudes resorted vnto him, so that he went into a shippe, and sate downe, and the whole multitude stood on the shore. 3 Then he spake many things to them in parables, saying, Beholde a sower went forth to sowe. 4 And as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the foules came and deuoured them.

Mar.  
4. 2.  
luke  
8. 4, 5.

## S. MATTHEWE.

them vp. 5 And some fell vpon stony ground, where they had not much earth, and anon they sprong vp, because they had not depth of earth.

6 And when the sunne was vp, they were parched, and for lacke of rooting, withered away.

7 And so ne fell among thornes, and the thornes sprong vp & choked them. 8 Some againe fell in good ground, and brought forth fruit, one corne an hundred fold, some sixtie fold, & another thirtie fold.

9 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare. 10 Then the disciples came and said to him, Why speakest thou to them in parables?

11 And he answered & said vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you to know y<sup>e</sup> secrets of the kingdome of heauen, but to them it is not

*Chap.* giuen. 12 \* For who soeuer hath, to him shall be  
*25.29.* giuen, & he shall haue abundance: but who soeuer hath not, from him shall be taken away, euen that he hath. 13 Therefore speake I to them in parables, because they seeing, do not see: & hearing, they heare not, neither vnderstand. 14 So in them is fulfilled y<sup>e</sup> prophecie of Esaias, which

*Esai.* prophecie saith, \* By hearing, ye shall heare, and

*6.9.* shall not vnderstand, and I seeing, ye shall see and

*mark.* shall not perceiue. 15 For this peoples heart is

*9. 12.* waxed fat, & their eares are dull of hearing, and

*Isa.* w<sup>th</sup> their eyes they haue winked, lest they should

*3. 10.* see with their eyes, and heare with their eares,

*John* and should vnderstand with their hearts, and

*3. 4.* should returne, that I might heale them. 16 But

blessed are your eyes, for they see: & your eares,

# C H A P. XIII.

for they beare. 17 \* For verily I say vnto you, *ſ* Luke  
many Prophets & righteous men haue desired 10.24  
to ſee thoſe things which ye ſee, and haue not  
ſcene *them*, and to heare thoſe things which yee  
heare, & haue not heard *thē*. 18 \* Heare yether- *Mar*  
fore the parable of the ſower. 19 Whenſoeuer 4.15  
any man heareth the word of *ſ* kingdome, and *lke*  
vnderſtandeth it not, that euill one cometh, and 8.11  
catcheth away *ſ* which was ſowen in his heart:  
and this is he which hath receiued the ſeede by  
the way ſide. 20 And he that receiued ſeed in  
the ſtony ground, is he which heareth the word,  
and incontinently with ioy receiueth it. 21 Yet  
hath he no roote in himſelfe, & dureth but a ſea-  
ſon: for aſſoone as tribulation or perſecution  
commeth becauſe of the worde, by and by he is  
offended. 22 And he that receiued the ſeede a-  
mong thornes, is he *ſ* heareth the word but the  
care of this world, & the deceitfulnes of riches  
choke the word, & he is made vnfriutful. 23 But  
he that receiued the ſeede in *ſ* good ground, is  
he that heareth the worde, and vnderſtandeth it,  
which alſo beareth fruit, & bringeth forth, ſome  
an hundred fold ſome ſixtie fold, & ſome thir-  
tie fold. 24 Another parable put he forth vnto  
them, ſaying, The kingdome of heaue is like vn-  
to a man which ſowed good ſeede in his felde.  
25 But while men ſlept, there came his enemy, &  
ſowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.  
26 And when the blade was ſprong vp, and  
brought forth fruit, then appeared *ſ* tares alſo.

# S. MATTHEWE.

27 Then came the seruants of the housholder, & said vnto him, Master, sowedst not thou good seede in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? 28 And hee said to them, Some enuious man hath done this. Then he seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that we go & gather them vp? 29 But he said, Nay, lest while ye goe about to gather the tares, ye plucke vp also with them the wheate. 30 Let both grow together vntill the haruest, & in time of haruest I wil say to the reapers, Gather ye first the tares, and binde them in sheaues to burne them: but gather the wheat into my barne. 31 \* Another parable he put forth vnto them, saying, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a graine of mustard seede, which a man taketh and soweth in his field: 32 Which in deede is the least of all seedes: but when it is growen, it is the greatest among herbes, and it is a tree, so that the birdes of heauen come & build in the branches thereof. 33 \* Another parable spake he to them, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a woman taketh and hideth in three pecks of meale, till all be leauened. 34 \* All these things spake Iesus vnto the multitude in parables, and without parables spake he not vnto them, 35 That it might bee fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, saying, \* I wil open my mouth in parables, and wil vtter y things which haue bin kept secret from the foundation of the world. 36 Then sent Iesus the multitude away, & went into the house.

And

Mar.

4. 30.

Luke

13. 19.

Luke

13. 21.

Mark

4. 33.

34.

Psal.

78. 2.

And h  
vnto  
37 Th  
sower  
38 A  
are th  
the ch  
enem  
harus  
be th  
red a  
ende  
send f  
his ki  
do in  
nace  
of te  
the fu  
y hath  
the k  
hid i  
he hi  
leth a  
gaine  
chant  
hauin  
sold a  
king  
into  
48 W  
fate

# C H A P. XIII.

And his disciples came vnto him, saying, Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of that felde. 37 Then answered he and sayd to them, He that soweth the good seede, is the Sonne of man, 38 And the field is the world, and the good seed are the children of the kingdome, & the tares are the children of that wicked one. 39 And the enemy that soweth them, is the deuill, \* and the haruest is the end of the world, and the reapers be the Angels: 40 As then the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the ende of this world. 41 The Sonne of man shall send forth his angels, & they shall gather out of his kingdome all things y<sup>e</sup> offend, & them which do iniquitie, 42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire. There shalbe wailing and gnashing of teeth. 43 \* Then shall the iust men shine as the sunne in the kingdome of their Father. Hee y<sup>e</sup> hath eares to heare, let him heare. 44 Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a treasure hid in the felde, which when a man hath found, he hideth it, and for ioy thereof departeth & selleth all that he hath, and buieth that field. 45 Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like to a merchant man, y<sup>e</sup> seeketh good pearles, 46 Who hauing found a pearle of great price, went and sold al that he had, and bought it. 47 Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a draw net cast into the sea, that gathereth of all kinds of things: 48 Which when it is full men draw to land and sitte and gather the good into vessels, & cast the

10e?  
3. 135  
reuel.  
14. 154

Dan.  
12. 34

## S. MATTHEWE.

bad away. 49 So shall it be at the end of the world. The Angels shall goe forth and seuer the bad from among <sup>y</sup> iust, 50 And shall cast them into a fornace of fire: there shall be wailing, and gnashing of teeth. 51 Iesus said vnto them, Vnderstand ye all these things? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord. 52 Then said hee vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is taught vnto <sup>y</sup> kingdome of heauen, is like vnto an housholder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things both new and old. 53 And it came to passe, that when Iesus had ended these parables, hee departed thence, 54 \*

*Mar.* And came into his owne countrey, and taught them in their Synagogue, so that

*6.1. Luke* they were astonied, and said, Whence commeth

*4.16.* this wisdom and great workes vnto this man?

55 Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Marie, \* & his brethren Iames and

*6.42.* Ioses, and Simon and Iudas? 56 And are not his sisters all with vs? Whence then hath he all these things? 57 And they were offended with him.

*Mar.* Then Iesus sayd to them, \* A Prophet is not

*6.4. Luke* without honour saue in his owne countrey, and in his owne house. 58 And hee did not many

*4.24.* great workes there, for their vnbeliefes sake.

### CHAP 14. 18 *Of the five loaves, &c.*

*Mar.* **A**T \* that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of

*6.14. Luke* the fame of Iesus, 2 And said vnto his seruants, This is <sup>y</sup> Iohn Baptist, he is risen againe

*9.7.* from the dead. and therefore great workes are

*Mar.* wrought by him. 3 \* For Herod had takē Iohn,

*6.17.* and

# C H A P. XIII.

and bound him and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife. 4 For Iohn said vnto him, It is not \* Lawful for thee to haue her. 5 And when he would haue put him to death, hee feared the multitude, because they counted him as a \* Prophet. 6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunced before them, and pleased Herod. 7 Wherefore he promised with an othe, that he would giue her whatsoeuer she would aske. 8 And shee being before instructed of her mother, said, Giue me here Iohn Baptists head in a platter. 9 And the King was sorie: neuertheless because of the othe, and them that sate with him at y table, he commanded it to be giuen her, 10 And sent, and beheaded Iohn in the prison. 11 And his head was brought in a platter, and giuen to the maid, and she brought it vnto her mother. 12 And his disciples came, and tooke vp the body, and buried it, and went and tolde Iesus. 13 \* And when Iesus heard it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart. And when the multitude had heard it, they followed him on foote out of the cities. 14 And Iesus went forth and saw a great multitude, and was moued with compassion toward them, and he healed their sicke. 15 And when euen was come, \* his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, & the time is already past: let the multitude deparr, that they may goe into the townes, & buy them vitailles. 16 But Iesus said

*Lewit.*

18, 16.

*[chap.*

21, 26.

*Mar.*

6. 32.

*lute*

9. 10.

*Mar.*

6. 35.

*lute*

9. 12.

*iohn*

6. 5.

to



# S. MATTHEW E

to them, They haue no neede to goe away: giue  
ye them to eate. 17 Then saide they vnto him,  
We haue here but fiae loaues and two fishes.  
18 And he said, Bring them hither to me. 19 And  
he commanded the multitude to sit downe on the  
grasse, and tooke the fiae loaues and two fishes,  
and looked vp to heauen. & blessed, and brake,  
and gaue the loaues to his disciples, & the disci-  
ples to the multitude. 20 And they did all eate,  
and were sufficed, & they tooke vp of the frag-  
ments that remained, twelue baskets full. 21 And  
they that had eaten, were about fiae thousand  
men, beside women and little children. 22 And  
straightway Iesus compelled his disciples to en-  
ter into a shippe, and to goe ouer before him,  
while hee sent the multitude away. 23 And as  
soone as hee had sent the multitude away, hee  
went vp into a mountaine alone to pray: \* and  
6. 45, when the euening was come he was there alone.  
46, 47. 24 And the ship was now in the middes of the  
john sea, and was tossed with waues: for it was a con-  
6. 16, trary winde. 25 And in the fourth watch of  
17, 18. the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on the  
sea. 26 And when his disciples saw him walk-  
ing on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is  
a spirit, and cryed out for feare. 27 But straight-  
way Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good  
comfort, it is I: be not afraid. 28 Then Peter  
answered him, and said, Master, if it be thou, bid  
me come vnto thee on the water. 29 And hee  
said, Come. And when Peter was come downe

Mar.

6. 45,

46, 47.

john

6. 16,

17, 18.

our  
goe  
wind  
crye  
Iesus  
and f  
didd  
were  
33 T  
vorsh  
Sonne  
ouer,  
35 A  
they  
& bro  
beson  
of his  
t, wen  
  
THE  
wh  
doe th  
Elders  
ate br  
hem,  
mande  
God ha  
her an  
nother  
Whoso

## C H A P. XV.

out of the shippe, hee walked on the water, to  
goe to Iesus. 30 But when he sawe a mightie  
wind, he was afraid: and as he began to sinke, he  
cryed, saying Master saue me. 31 So immediatly  
Iesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him,  
and said to him, O thou of litle faith wherefore  
diddest thou doubt? 32 And as soone as they  
were come into the shippe, the winde ceased.  
33 Then they that were in the shippe, came and  
worshipped him, saying, Of a trueth thou art the  
Sonne of God. 34 \* And when they were come  
ouer, they came into the lande of Gennezaret. 35  
And when the men of that place knew him,  
they sent out into al that countrey round about,  
& brought vnto him all that were sicke, 36 And  
besought him, that they might touch the hemme  
of his garment onely: and as many as touched  
it, were made whole.

*Mar.*  
6.54.

## C H A P. 15. 14 *Blinde leading the blinde.*

**T**HEN came to Iesus the Scribes & Pharises,  
which were at Hierusalem, saying, 2 \* Why  
doe thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the  
Elders? for they wash not their hands when they  
eate bread. 3 But hee answered and said vnto  
them, Why doe yee also transgresse the com-  
mandement of God by your tradition? 4 \* For  
God hath commaunded saying, Honour thy fa-  
ther and mother: \* and he that curseth father or  
mother, let him die the death. 5 But yee say,  
Whosoener shall say to father or mother, By  
the

*Mar.*  
7.1.

*Exod.*  
20.12.  
*dent.*  
5.16.  
*Exod.*  
21.17.

# S. MATTHEW E.

- the gift that is *offred* by me, thou mayest haue profite, 6 Though he honour not his father, or his mother, *shalbe free*: thus haue we made the cōmandement of God of no authority by your tradition. 7 O hypocrites, Esaias prophesied well of you, saying, 8 \* This people draweth neere vnto me with their mouth, and honoureth mee with the lippes, but their heart is farre off from me. 9 But in vaine they worship me, teaching *his* doctrines, mens precepts. 10 Then he called the multitude vnto him, and said to them, *Mar.* Heare and vnderstand. 11 \* That which goeth *7.18.* into the mouth, defileth not the man, but that which commeth out of the mouth, that defileth the man. 12 Then came his disciples, and sayed vnto him. Perceiuest thou not, that the Pharisees are offended in hearing *thu* saying? 13 But he answered, and sayd, \* Every plant which mine heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted vp. 14 Yet them alone, they be the \* blinde leaders of the blinde: and if the blinde leade the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch. 15 \* Then answered Peter, and saide to him, Declare vnto vs this parable. 16 Then said Iesus, Are ye yet without vnderstanding? 17 Perceiue yee not yet that whatsoeuer entreth into the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? 18 But those things which procede out of the mouth, come from the heart, and they defile the man. 19 For out of *ſ* heart come euil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, simonie

## C H A P. XV.

and Simonies, flāders. 20 These are the things which  
 defile the man but to eat with vnrvalhen hands,  
 defileth not the man. 21 \* And Iesus went *Mar.*  
 thence, and departed into the coastes of Tyrus 7. 24  
 and Sidon. 22 And behold, a woman a Cananite 25.  
 came out of the same coasts, and cried, saying vn-  
 to him, Haue mercy on me, O Lord, the Sonne of  
 Dauid: my daughter is miserably vexed with a  
 deuill. 23 But he answered her not a word Then  
 came to him his disciples, and besought him, say-  
 ing, Send her away, for she crieth after vs. 24 But  
 he answered, and said, I am not sent, but vnto the  
 lost sheepe of the house of Israel 25 Yet she *Chap.*  
 came, & worshipped him, saying, Lord helpe me. 10. 6.  
 26 And he answered, and sayd, It is not good to  
 take the childrens bread, & to cast it to whelps.  
 27 But she said, Trueth, Lorde: yet in deede the  
 whelpes eate of the crummes, which fall from  
 their masters table. 28 Then Iesus answered, and  
 said vnto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it  
 done to thee as thou desirest. And her daughter was  
 made whole at that houre. 29 So Iesus went a- *Mar.*  
 way from thence. & came neere vnto the Sea of 7. 31.  
 Galile, and went vp into a mountaine, and sate  
 down there. 30 And great multitudes came vn-  
 to him, \* hauing with them, halt blinde, dumme, *Esay*  
 maimed, and many other, and cast them down at 35. 5.  
 Iesus feete, and he healed them, 31 In so much  
 that the multitude wondered, to see the dumme  
 speake, the maimed whole, the halt to goe, and  
 the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of  
 Israel,

## S. MATTHEWE.

**Mar.** Israel. 32 \*Then Iesus called his disciples vnto  
**8.1.** him, and said, I haue compassion on this multi-  
 tude, because they haue continued with mee al-  
 ready three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and  
 I wil not let them depart fasting, lest they faint  
 in the way. 33 And his disciples said vnto him,  
 Whence should wee get so much bread in the  
 wilderness, as should suffice so great a multitude?  
 34 And Iesus sayd vnto them, How many loaves  
 haue ye? And they said, Seuen, and a few litle fi-  
 shes. 35 Then he commanded the multitude to  
 sit downe on the ground, 36 And tooke the se-  
 uen loaves, and the fishes, and gaue thanks, and  
 brake them, and gaue to his disciples, and the  
 disciples to the multitude. 37 And they did all  
 eate and were sufficed, and they tooke vp of the  
 fragments that remained, seuen baskets full.  
 38 And they that had eaten, were foure thousand  
 men, beside women, and litle children. 39 Then  
 Iesus sent away the multitude, and tooke shippe,  
 and came into the parts of Magdala.

### CHAP. 16. 4 The signe of Ionas.

**Chap.** **12** 38. **T**hen \*came the Pharises and Sadduces, and  
**mark.** did tempt him, desiring him to shew them a  
**8.11.** signe from heauen. 2 But he answered, and said  
**Luke** vnto the, When it is euening, ye say, Faire wea-  
**12.54.** ther, for the skie is red. 3 \*And in the morning  
 ye say, To day shall be a tempest: for the skie is  
 red and lowring. O hypocrites, yee can discern  
**Chap.** the face of the skie, and can yee not discern the  
**12.39.** signes of the times? 4 \*The wicked generation,  
 and

# CHAP. XVI.

and adulterous seeketh a signe, but there shal no  
 signe be giuen it, but that signe of the Prophet  
 \* Ionas: so hee left them, and departed. 5 And *Ionas*  
 when his disciples were come to the other side, 1.17.  
 they had \* forgotten to take bread *with them*. *Mark.*  
 6 Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heed and be- 8 14.  
 ware of the leauen of the Pharises & Sadduces. *luke*  
 7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, 12.1.  
 It is because we haue brought no bread. 8 But  
 Iesus knowing it, saide vnto them, O ye of litle  
 faith, why reason ye *thus* among your selues, be-  
 cause ye haue brought no bread? 9 Doe ye not  
 yet perceiue, neither remember the five loaves,  
 when there were \* five thousand *men*, and how *Chap.*  
 many baskets tooke yee vp? 10 Neither the 14.17.  
 seven loaves when there were \* foure thousand *iohn*  
*men*, and how many baskets tooke yee vp? 6.9.  
 11 Why perceiue ye not that I said not vnto you *Chap.*  
 concerning bread, that ye should beware of the 15.34.  
 leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces? 12 Then  
 understood they that he had not sayd that they  
 should beware of the leauen of bread, but of the  
 doctrine of the Pharises & Sadduces 13 \*Now *Mar.*  
 when Iesus came into the coasts of Cæsarea Phi- 8.27.  
 ppi, he asked his disciples saying, Whom doe *luke*  
 men say that I, the Sonne of man am? 14 And 9.18.  
 they sayde, Some say, Iohn Baptist: and some, E-  
 lis: and others, Ieremias, or one of the Pro-  
 phets. 15 Hee sayde vnto them, But whom say  
 ye that I am? 16 Then Simon Peter answered, *iohn*  
 and sayd, \* Thou art that Christ, the Sonne of 6.69.  
 the

## S. MATTHEWE.

the living God. 7 And Iesus answered, and said to him. Blessed art thou Simon, the sonne of Ionas. for flesh and blood hath not reueiled it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen.

*John* 18 And I say also vnto thee that thou art \* Pe-  
*L. 42.* ter, and vpon this rocke I wil build my Church: and the gates of hell shall not ouercome it.

*John* 19 And I \* will giue vnto thee the keyes of the  
*20. 21.* kingdome of heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt

binde vpon earth, shall be bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen. 20 Then he charged his disci-

ples that they should tell no man that hee was Iesus that Christ. 21 From that time soorth Ie-

sus began to shew vnto his disciples, that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders, and of the hie Priestes, and Scribes: and be slaine, and he raised againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him aside, & began to rebuke him, saying, Master, pitie thy selfe, this shall not be vnto thee. 23 Then hee turned backe and sayde vnto Peter, Get thee behinde mee, Satan:

thou art an offence vnto me, because thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men. 24 Iesus then sayde

*[chap.]* to his disciples, \* If any man will follow me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and

*[chap.]* follow mee. 25 For \* whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his

*John* life for my sake, shall find it. 26 \* For what shall it profite a man though hee should winne the

rwh

## C H A P. XVII.

whole world, if he lose his owne soule? or what shall a man giue for recompence of his soule?  
 27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, and then \* shall  
 hee giue to euery man according to his deedes. *Psalm, 62. 12.*  
 28 \* Verily I say vnto you, there bee some of  
 them that stand here, which shall not taste of  
 death, till they haue seene the Sonne of man  
 come in his kingdome. *Mar. 9. 1. Luke 9. 27.*

### C H A P. 17. 2. The transfiguration of Christ.

**A**Nd \* after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke Peter, and  
 James, and Iohn his brother, and brought  
 them vp into an hie mountaine apart, 2 And  
 was transfigured before them: and his face did  
 shine as the Sunne, and his clothes were as white  
 as the light. 3 And behold, there appeared vnto  
 them Moses, & Elias talking with him. 4 Then  
 answered Peter, and sayde to Iesus, Master, it is  
 good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make  
 here three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for  
 Moses, and one for Elias. 5 While he yet spake,  
 behold, a bright cloude shadowed them: and  
 behold, there came a voyce out of the cloude,  
 saying, \* This is that my beloued Sonne, in whom  
 I am well pleased: heare him. 6 And when the  
 disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and  
 were sore afraide. 7 Then Iesus came and tou-  
 ched them, and sayde, Arise, and be not afraide.  
 8 And when they lifted vp their eyes, they sawe  
 no man, saue Iesus onely. 9 And as they came  
 downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them,

D

saying



## S. M'ATTHEWE.

- saying. Shewe the vision to no man, vntill the  
**Mar.** Sonne of man rise againe frō the dead 10 \* And  
 9.11. his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say th  
**Mal.** Scribes that \* Elias must first come? 11 An  
 4.5. Iesus answered and sayde vnto them, Certaine  
 Elias must first come, and restore all things  
 12 But I say vnto you that Elias is come already  
 and they knew him not, but haue done vnto him  
 whatsoever they would: likewise shall also the  
 Sonne of man suffer of them. 23 Then the disci  
 ples perceiued that he spake vnto them of Ioh  
**Mar.** Baptist. 14 \* And when they were come to the  
 9.14. multitude, there came to him a certaine man,  
**Luke** fell downe at his feete, 15 And sayde, Master  
 238. haue pitie on my sonne for hee is lunatike, and  
 is sore vexed: for oft times hee falleth into the  
 fire, and oft times into the water. 16 And I ha  
 brought him to thy disciples, and they could  
 heale him. 17 Then Iesus answered, and said, O  
 generation faithlesse, and crooked, howe lon  
 now shall I be with you! how long now shall  
 suffer you! bring him hither to me. 18 And I  
 rebuked the deuill: and he went out of him: a  
 the childe was healed at that houre. 19 Then  
 came the disciples to Iesus apart, and said, We  
 could not we cast him out? 20 And Iesus say  
**Luke** vnto them, because of your vnbeliefe: \* for ver  
 17.6. ly I say vnto you, if ye haue faith *as much as*  
 graine of mustarde seede, yee shall say vnto the  
 mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place, and  
 it shall remoue: and nothing shall be vnpossible

## C H A P. XVIII.

vnto you 21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out  
 out by prayer and fasting. 22 And they <sup>being</sup> Chap.  
 in Galile, Iesus said vnto them, The Sōne of man 20. 19  
 shall bee diliuered into the handes of men, <sup>more</sup>  
 23 And they shall kill him, but the thirde day 9. 31  
 shall bee rise againe: and they were very sory. <sup>luke</sup>  
 24 And when they were come to Capernaum, 9. 44  
 they that receiued polle money, came to Peter,  
 and said, Doeth not your Master pay polle mo-  
 ney? 25 He said, Yes And when he was come in-  
 to the house, Iesus preuented him, saying, What  
 thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom do the kings of  
 the earth take tribute, or polle money? of their  
 children, or of strangers? 26 Peter sayd vnto  
 him, Of strāgers. Then said Iesus vnto him, Then  
 are the children free. 27 Neuerthelesse least we  
 should offend them, goe to the sea, and cast in an  
 angle, and take the first fish that commeth vp, &c  
 when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt  
 finde a piece of twentie pence: that take, and  
 giue it vnto them for me and thee.

CHAP. 18. 1. *The greatest in the kingdom of God.*

The <sup>same</sup> time the disciples came vnto Iesus, <sup>Mar</sup>  
 saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome 9. 34  
 of heauen? 2 And Iesus called a litle child vnto <sup>luke</sup>  
 him and set him in the middes of them, 3 And 9. 46  
 said, Verily I say vnto you, except ye bee <sup>con-</sup> Chap.  
 verted, and become as litle children, ye shall not 19. 14  
 enter into the kingdome of heauen. 4 Who 1. cor.  
 neuer therefore shali humble himselfe as this 14. 10  
 childe, the same is the greatest in the king-

# S. MATTHEWE.

done of heauen. 5 And whosoever shall receive one such little child in my Name, receiveth me. 6 \* But whosoever shall offend one of these little ones which beleue in mee, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. 7 Woe be vnto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences shall come, but woe be to that man, by whom the offence cometh. 8 \* Wherefore, if thine hand or thy foote cause thee to offend, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life, halt, or maimed, then hauing two handes, or two feete, to be cast into euill lasting fire. 9 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, then hauing two eyes to be cast into hell fire. 10 See ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their Angels alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heauen. 11 For the Sonne of man is come to saue that which was lost. 12 How thinke ye? \* If a man haue an hundred sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doeth hee not leaue nine and nine, and go into the mountaines, and seeke that which is gone astray? 13 And if he finde it, verily I say vnto you, hee reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray: 14 So is it not the will of your Father which is in heauen, that one

# CH A P. XVIII.

these litle ones should perill. 15 \* Moreouer, *Leuit.*  
 If thy brother trespasse against thee, goe and tell 19. 17.  
 him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if he *luke*  
 heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother. 16 But 17. 3.  
 if hee heare thee not, take yet with thee one or *iamis*  
 two, that by the \* mouth of two or three wit- 5. 19.  
 nesses euery word may be confirmed. 17 And *Deu.*  
 if he refuse to heare them, tel it vnto the Church: 19. 15.  
 and if he refuse to heare the Church also, let him  
 be vnto thee as an heathen man, and a Publicane.  
 18 Verily I say vnto you, \* Whatsoeuer ye bind 1. *Cor.*  
 on earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and \* whatso- 5. 4.  
 euer ye loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen. *Iohn*  
 9 Againe, verily I say vnto you, that if two of 20. 23.  
 you shal agree in earth vpon any thing, whatso-  
 euer they shall desire, it shall bee giuen them of  
 my Father which is in heauen. 20 I or where  
 two or three are gatherd together in my Name,  
 there am I in the mids of them. 21 Then came  
 Peter to him, and said, Master, how oft shall my  
 brother sinne against me, and I shal forgieue him?  
 vnto seuen times? 22 Iesus said vnto him, I say *Luke*  
 not to thee, vnto seuen times, but vnto seuentie 17. 4.  
 times seuen times. 23 Therefore is the king-  
 dome of heauen likened vnto a certaine King,  
 which would take an account of his seruants,  
 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was  
 brought vnto him. which ought him ten thou-  
 sand talents. 25 And because hee had nothing  
 to pay, his Lord commaunded him to bee sold,  
 and his wife, and his children, and all that hee

### S. M A T T H E W E.

had, and the debt to bee payd. 26 The seruants therefore fell downe and worshipped him, saying, Lord refraine thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee all. 27 Then that seruants Lord had compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. 28 But when the seruant was departed, hee found one of his fellowe seruants, which ought him an hundred pence, and hee layd hands on him, and thrattled him, saying, Pay me that thou owest. 29 Then his fellow seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Refraine thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee all. 30 Yet he would not, but went and cast him into prison, till hee should pay the debt. 31 And when his other fellow seruants saw what was done, they were very sorie, and came and declared vnto their Lord all that was done. 32 Then his Lord called him vnto him, and said to him, O euil seruant, I forgave thee al that debt, because thou prayedst mee. 33 Oughtest not thou also to haue had pitie on thy fellowe seruant, euen as I had pitie on thee? 34 So his Lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due to him. 35 So likewise shall mine heavenly Father doe vnto you, except ye forgive from your hearts ech one to his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. 19. 27 To leave all and follow  
*Christ.*

*Mar.* And \* it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and

# CHAP. XIX

he, & came into the coasts of Iudea beyond Iordan. 2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there. 3 Then came vnto him the Pharises, tempting him, and saying to him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife vpon euery occasion? 4 And he answered, and said vnto them, Haue yee not read, that \* he which *Gene.* made *them* at the beginning, made them male, 1.27. and female. 5 And said, \* For this cause, shall a *Gene.* man leaue father and mother, and cleaue vnto his 2.24. wife, & they which were two shall be one flesh? 1.cor. 6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one 6.16. flesh. Let no man therefore put asunder that, which God hath coupled together. 7 They said to him, Why did then \* Moses command to *Deut.* giue a bill of diuorcement, & to put her away? 24.1. 8 He said vnto them, Moses because of the hardness of your heart, suffered you to put away your wiues: but from the beginning it was not so. 9 I say therefore vnto you, \* that whosoever *(chap.)* shall put away his wife, except *it be* for 5.32. whoredome, and marrie another, committeth a *mar.* adulterie: and whosoever marrieth her which is 10.11. diuorced, doth commit adultery. 10 *Then* said *luke* his disciples to him, If the matter be so betweene 16.18. man and wife, it is not good to marrie. 11 But 1.cor. he said vnto them, All men cannot receiue this 7.11. thing, saue they to whom it is giuen. 12 For there are some eunuches, which were so borne of *their* mothers belly: and there be some eunuches which be gelded by men: & there be some

# S. MATTHEW E.

eunuches which haue gelded themselves for the kingdome of heauen. He that is able to receiue

*Mar.* *thus*, let him receiue it. 13 \* Then were brought  
20. 23. to him little children, y he should put *his* hands  
*luke* on them, & pray : & the disciples rebuked them.

18. 15. 14 But Iesus said, Suffer the little children, & for-  
*chap.* bid them not to come to mee : for of such is the

18. 3. kingdome of heauen. 15 And when he had put

*Mar.* his hands on them, he departed thence. 16 \* And

20. 17. behold, one came & said vnto him, Good Master,

*luke* what good thing shall I doe, that I may haue e-

28. 18. ternall life? 17 And he said vnto him, Why cal-

lest thou me good? there is none good but one,

euen God : but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe

the commandements. 18 He said to him, Which?

*Exod.* And Iesus said, \* These : Thou shalt not kill:

20. 13. Thou shalt not commit adulterie : Thou shalt

*deut.* not steale : Thou shalt not beare false witnesse.

5. 16. 19 Honour thy father & mother : and thou shalt

*rom.* loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. 20 The yong

13. 10. man said vnto him, I haue obserued al these things

from my youth, what lacke I yet? 21 Iesus said

vnto him, if thou wilt be perfect, goe, sell that

thou hast, & giue it to the poore, and thou shalt

haue treasure in heauen, and come & follow me.

22 And when the yong man heard that saying,

he went away sorrowfull : for he had great pos-

sessions. 23 Then Iesus said vnto his disciples,

Verely I say vnto you, that a rich man shal hard-

ly enter into the kingdome of heauen. 24 And

again I say vnto you, it is easier for a camel to

## C H A P. XX.

goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich  
 man to enter into the kingdome of God. 25 And  
 when his disciples heard it, they were excee-  
 dingly amased, saying, Who then can be sau-  
 ed? 26 And Iesus beheld them, and said vnto them,  
 With men this is vnpossible, but with God all  
 things are possible. 27 \* Then answered Peter, *Mar.*  
 and said to him, Beholde, we haue forsaken all, *10. 28.*  
 and followed thee what therefore shall we haue? *luke*  
 28 And Iesus sayde vnto them, Verely I say to *18. 18.*  
 you, that when the Sonne of man shall sit in the  
 throne of his Maiestie ye which followed me in  
 the regeneration, \* shall sit also vpon twelue *Luke.*  
 thrones, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel. *22. 29.*  
 29 And whosoever shall forsake houses, or bre-  
 thren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or  
 children, or lands for my Names sake, hee shall  
 receiue an hundred folde more, and shall inherit  
 euerlasting life. 30 \* But many that are first, *Chap.*  
 shalbe last, and the last shalbe first. *20. 16.*

### C H A P. 20. *Christ foretelleth his passion.*

**F**OR the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a  
 certaine honsholder, which went out at the  
 dawning of the day, to hire labourers into his  
 vineyard. 2 And he agreed with the labourers  
 for a peny a day, & sent them into his vineyard.  
 3 And he went out about the third houre, and  
 sawe other standing idle in the market place,  
 4 And said vnto them, Go ye also into my vine-  
 yard, and whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you:  
 and they went their way. 5 Againe he went out  
 about



# S. MATTHEW E.

about the sixt and ninth houre, and did likewise.  
6 And he went out about the eleuenth houre, &  
found other standing idle, and sayde vnto them,  
Why stand ye here all the day idle? 7 They said  
vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He said  
vnto them, Goe yee also into my vinyard, and  
whatsoeuer is right, that shall ye receiue. 8 And  
when euen was come, the master of the vine-  
yard said vnto his steward, Call the labourers,  
and giue them their hire, beginning at the last til  
thou come to the first. 9 And they which were  
hired about the eleuenth houre, came and recei-  
ued euery man a peny. 10 Nowe when the first  
came, they supposed that they should receiue  
more, but they likewise receiued euery man a  
peny. 11 And when they had receiued it, they  
murmured against y<sup>e</sup> master of the house, 12 Say-  
ing, These last haue wrought but one houre, &  
thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue  
borne the burden and heate of the day. 13 And  
he answered one of them, saying. Friend, I doe  
thee no wrong: diddest thou not agree with me  
for a peny? 14 Take that which is thine owne,  
& go thy way: I wil giue vnto this last, as much  
as to thee. 15 Is it not lawfull for me to do as I  
will with mine owne? Is thine eye euil, because  
I am good? 16 \* So the last shalbe first, and the  
first last: for many are called, but fewe chosen.  
17 \* And Iesus went vp to Hierusalem, & tooke  
the twelue disciples apart in the way and sayde  
vnto them, 18 Beholde, we goe vp to Hieru-  
salem

*Chap.*

19.30.

*&* 22

14.

*mark.*

10.31.

*lute*

13.30.

*Mar.*

10.32.

*lute*

18.31.

# CHAP. XX.

rise. 18. And the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered vnto  
 the chiefe Priests, & vnto the Scribes, & they  
 shal condemne him to death, 19 And \* shal<sup>John</sup>  
 deliuer him to the Gentiles, to mocke, and to<sup>18.32.</sup>  
 scourge, & to crucifie him, but the third day he  
 shall rise againe. 20 \* Then came to him the<sup>Mar.</sup>  
 mother of Zebedeus children with her sonnes, 10<sup>35.</sup>  
 worshipping him, and desiring a certaine thing  
 of him. 21 And he said vnto her, What wouldest thou? She said to him, Graunt that these my  
 two sonnes may sit, the one at thy right hand,  
 and the other at thy left hand in thy kingdome.  
 22 And Iesus answered and said, Ye know not  
 what ye aske: Are ye able to drinke of the cup,  
 that I shall drinke of, and to be baptized with  
 the baptisme that I shalbe baptized with? They  
 said to him, We are able. 23 And he said vnto  
 them, Ye shall drinke in deede of my cup, and  
 shall be baptized with the baptisme that I am  
 baptized with, but to sit at my right hand, and  
 at my left hand, is not mine to giue: but it shall  
 be giuen to them for whom it is prepared of my  
 Father. 24 \* And when the other tenne heard<sup>Mar.</sup>  
 this, they disdained at the two brethren. 10<sup>41.</sup>  
 25 Therefore Iesus called them vnto him, and<sup>Luke</sup>  
 sayd, Ye knowe that the lords of the Gentiles<sup>22.35.</sup>  
 haue domination ouer them, and they that are  
 great, exercise authoritie ouer them. 26 But it  
 shal not be so among you: but whosoever will  
 be great among you, let him be your seruant.  
 27 And whosoever will be chiefe among you,

# S. MATTHEW E.

*Phil.* let him be your seruant. 28 \*Euen as the Sonne  
 2.7. of man came not to be serued, but to serue, & to  
*Mar.* giue his life for the ransome of many. 29 \*And  
 10.46 as they departed from Iericho, a great multitude  
*luke* followed him. 30 And beholde, two blind  
 18.35. men sitting by the way side, when they heard  
 that Iesus passed by, cried, saying, O Lord, the  
 Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs. 31 And the  
 multitude rebuked them, because they should  
 holde their peace: but they cried the more, say-  
 ing, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on  
 vs. 32 Then Iesus stood still, and called them,  
 and said, What wil ye that I should doe to you?  
 33 They said to him, Lord, that our eyes may be  
 opened. 34 And Iesus moued with compas-  
 sion, touched their eyes: and immediatly their  
 eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. 21. 1 (*Christ rideth to Hierusalem*)

*Mar.* **A**ND \*when they drew neere to Hierusalem,  
 11.1. & were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount  
*luke* of the Olives, then sent Iesus two disciples,  
 19.29. 2 Saying to them, Goe into the towne that is o-  
 uer against you, and anon ye shall finde an asse  
 bound, and a colt with her: loose them, and  
 bring them vnto mee 3 And if any man say  
*Esai.* ought vnto you say ye, that the Lord hath neede  
 62.11. of them, and straightway he wil let them goe.  
*zech.* 4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled,  
 9.9. which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,  
*iohn* 5 \* Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Beholde, thy  
 12.15. King commeth vnto thee, meeke, and sitting  
 vpon

# CHAP. XXI.

upon an asse, and a colt, the foale of an asse vsed  
 to the yoke. 6 So the disciples went, and did as  
 Iesus had commanded them, 7 And brought  
 the asse & the colt, & put on them their clothes,  
 and set him thereon. 8 And a great multitude  
 spread their garments in the way: and other cut  
 downe branches from the trees, and strewed  
 them in the way. 9 Moreouer, the people that  
 went before, and they also that followed, cryed,  
 saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, blessed  
 be he that cometh in the Name of the Lord,  
 Hosanna thou which art in the highest heauens.  
 10 \* And when he was come into Hierusalem, *Mat.*  
 all the citie was moued, saying, Who is this? *11. 11.*  
 11 And the people said, This is Iesus that Pro-  
 phet of Nazareth in Galile. 12 And Iesus went  
 into the Temple of God, and cast out all them  
 \* that solde and bought in the Temple, and o. *Deut.*  
 uerthrow the tables of the money changers, and *14. 25.*  
 the seats of them that solde doves, 13 And said  
 to them, It is written, \* My house shall be called *Esay*  
 the house of prayer: but \* yee haue made it a *56. 7.*  
 denne of theeues. 14 Then the blinde and the *Jere.*  
 halt came to him in the Temple, and hee hea *7. 11.*  
 led them. 15 But when the chiefe Priests and *mar.*  
 Scribes saw the marueiles that he did, and the *11. 17.*  
 children crying in the Temple, and saying, Ho- *luke*  
 sanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they disdained, *19. 46.*  
 16 And said vnto him, Hearest thou what these *Tsal.*  
 say? And Iesus said vnto them, Yea, read yee ne- *8. 2.*  
 uer, \* By the mouth of babes and sucklings thou *hast*

# S. MATTHEW E.

hast made perfit the prayse? 17 So he left them  
and went out of the citie vnto Bethania, & lod

*Mark.* ged there. 18 \* And in the morning, as he retur

*11.12.* ned into the citie, he was hungrie, 19 And see

ing a figtree in the way, he came to it, & found  
nothing thereon but leaues only, and said to it,

Neuer fruit grow on thee henceforwards. And

anon the fig tree withered. 20 And when his

disciples saw it, they marueiled, saying, How

soone is the fig tree withered? 21 And Iesus an

*Chap.* swered and sayd vnto them, \* Verely I say vnto

*17.20.* you, if ye haue faith, and doubt not, ye shall not

only doe that, *which I haue done* to the fig tree,

but also if ye say to this mountaine, Take thy

selfe away, & cast thy selfe into the sea, it shall be

*Chap.* done. 22 \* And whatsoeuer ye shal aske in pray

*7.7.* er, if yee belecue, ye shall receiue it. 23 \* And

*John* when he was come into the Temple, the chiefe

*15.7.* Priests and the Elders of the people came vnto

*John* him as he was teaching, & said, By what authori

*5.14.* tie dost thou these things? and who gaue thee

*Mar.* this authoritie? 24 Then Iesus answered & said

*11.27,* vnto the, I also wil aske of you a certeine thing,

*23 Luk.* which if ye tell me, I likewise will tell you by

*20.1,2* what authoritie I do these things. 25 The bap

tisme of Iohn whence was it? from heauen, or of

men? Then they reasoned among themselves,

*Chap.* saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say

*14.5.* vnto vs. Why did yee not then belecue him?

*Mar.* 26 And if we say, Of men, we feare the multi

*6.26,* tude, \* for all hold Iohn as a Prophet. 27 Then

they

## C H A P. XXI.

they answered Iesus, and said, We cannot tell.  
 And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you by  
 what authoritie I doe these things. 28 But what  
 thinke ye? A certaine man had two sonnes, and  
 came to the elder, and said, Sonne, go & worke  
 to day in my vineyard. 29 But he answered, &  
 said, I will not: yet afterward he repented him-  
 selfe, and went. 30 Then came he to the second,  
 and said like wise. And he answered, and said, I  
 will sir: yet he went not. 31 Whether of them  
 twaine did the wil of the Father? They said vn-  
 to him, The first. Iesus said vnto them, Verely I  
 say vnto you, that the Publicanes & the harlots  
 goe before you into the kingdome of God.  
 32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righ-  
 teousnesse, & ye beleueed him not: but the Pub-  
 licanes & the harlots beleueed him, & ye, though  
 ye saw it, were not moued with repentance af-  
 terward, that ye might beleue him. 33 Heare  
 another parable. There was a certaine houshol-  
 der, \* which planted a vineyard, and hedged it *Esai.*  
 round about, and made a wine presse therein, and *5.19*  
 built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and  
 went into a strange countrey. 34 And when the  
 time of the fruit drew neere, he sent his seruants  
 to the husbandmen to receiue the fruits thereof.  
 35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and  
 beat one, and killed another, & stoned another.  
 36 Again he sent other seruants, moe then the  
 first: and they did the like vnto them. 37 But  
 last of all hee sent vnto them his owne Sonne,  
 saying,

# S. MATTHEWE.

saying, They will reuerence my Sonne. 38 But when the husbandmen saw the Sonne, they said

*Chap.* among themselues, \* This is the heire: come  
26.3,4 let vs kill him, and let vs take his inheritance  
27 39 So they tooke him, and cast him out of the  
vineyard, and slew him. 40 When therefore  
the Lord of the vineyard shall come, what will

he do to those husbandmen? 41 They said vnto  
him, He will cruelly destroy those wicked men,  
and will let out his vineyard vnto other husbandmen,  
which shall deliuer him the fruites in the  
seasons 42 Iesus sayd vnto them, Read ye not

*Psal.* 118. uer in the Scriptures, \* The stone which the builders  
refused, the same is made the head of the

corner? This was the Lords doing, and it is mar-  
u-  
4.11. uelous in our eyes. 43 Therefore say I vnto  
you, the kingdome of God shall bee taken from  
you, and shall be giuen to a nation, which shall  
bring forth the fruites thereof. 44 \* And  
whosoever shall fall on this stone, he shall be broken  
in pieces. 45 And when the chiefe Priests  
and Pharises had heard his parables, they per-  
ceiued that he spake of them. 46 And they seek-  
ing to lay hands on him, feared the people, be-  
cause they tooke him as a Prophet.

CHAP. 22. 2 The parable of the marriage

*Luke* 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 16 Cesa-  
14.16. tribute.

*uenel.* 29.9. **T**hen \* Iesus answered, and spake vnto them  
again in parables, saying, 2 The kingdome

# C H A P. XXII.

8 The heauen is like vnto a certaine King, which  
 married his soane, 3 And sent forth his ser-  
 uants to call them that were bidde to the wed-  
 ding, but they would not come. 4 Again hee  
 sent forth other seruants, saying, Tell them  
 which are bidden, Beholde, I haue prepared my  
 dinner: mine oxen and my fatlings are killed,  
 and all things are ready: come vnto the marri-  
 age. 5 But they made light of it, and went their  
 wayes, one to his farme, and another about his  
 merchandise. 6 And the remnaut tooke his  
 seruants, and intreated them sharply and slewe  
 them. 7 But when the King heard it hee was  
 wroth and sent forth his warriors and destroy-  
 ers to those murtherers, and burnt vp their citie.  
 Then said he to his seruants, Truly the wed-  
 ding is prepared: but they which were bidden,  
 were not worthy. 9 Goe ye therefore out in-  
 to the hie wayes and as many as ye finde, bidde  
 them to the marriage. 10 So those seruants  
 went out into the hie wayes, and gathered toge-  
 ther all that euer they found, both good & bad:  
 the wedding was furnished with ghestes.  
 Then the king came in, to see the ghestes,  
 and sawe there a man which had not on a wed-  
 ding garment. 12 And he said vnto him Friend,  
 how camest thou in hither and hast not on a  
 wedding garment? And he was speechles. 13 The  
 King to the seruants, Binde him hand  
 and foote: take him away, and cast him into vt. Chap.  
 darkenesse: \* there shall be weeping and  
 gnashing



# S. MATTHEW E.

*Chap.* gnashing of teeth. 14 \*For many are called, but  
20.16. few are chosen. 15 \*Then went the Pharisees

*Mar.* tooke counsell howe they might tangle him in  
22.13. talke. 16 And they sent vnto him their disciples

with the Herodians, saying, Master, wee knowe  
that thou art true, and teachest the way of God  
truly, neither carest thou for any mans face: for thou  
considerest not the person of men. 17 Tell vs there-  
fore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribu-  
te vnto Cesar, or not? 18 But he perceiued  
their wickednesse and said, Why tempt ye me, ye  
hypocrites? 19 Shew me the tribute money.  
And they brought him a penie. 20 And he said  
vnto them, Whose is this image and superscrip-  
tion? 21 They said vnto him, Cessars. Then said

*Mar.* he vnto them, \* Giue therefore to Cesar. the  
22.17. things which are Cessars, and giue vnto God

*Luke* those things which are Gods. 22 And when  
20.25. they heard it, they marvelled and left him, and

*Mar.* went their way. 23 \*The same day the Saddu-  
22.18 ces came to him (which say that there is no

*Deu.* resurrection) and asked him, 24 Saying Master  
\*Moses said, If a man die hauing no children,

25.5. brother shall marie his wife by the right of  
ance, & raise vp seede vnto his brother. 25 Now

there were with vs seuen brethren, and the first  
married a wife, and deceased: and hauing no  
issue left his wife vnto his brother. 26 Likewise  
also the second and the third, vnto the seventh.  
27 And last of all y<sup>e</sup> woman died also. 28 Then  
saith he in the resurrection, whose wife shall she

## C H A P. XXII.

of the ſeuē: for all had her. 29 Then Ieſus an-  
 ſwered, and ſayde vnto them, Yee are deceiued,  
 not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of  
 God. 30 For in the reſurrection they neither  
 marrie wiues, nor wiues are beſtowed in marri-  
 age, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.  
 31 And concerning the reſurrection of y<sup>e</sup> dead,  
 haue ye not read what is ſpoken vnto you of  
 God ſaying, 32 \* I am the God of Abraham & *Exod.*  
 the God of Iſaac, and the God of Iacob? God is 3.6.  
 not the God of the dead, but of the liuing. *Mar.*  
 33 And when the multitude heard it, they were 12.27  
 aſtonied at his doctrine. 34 \* But when the *Mar.*  
 Pharifees had heard that he had put the Sadduces 12.28.  
 to ſilence, they aſſembled together. 35 And one  
 of them *which was* an expounder of the Lawe,  
 asked him a queſtion, tempting him, and ſaying,  
 36 Maſter, which is the great commandement in  
 the Lawe? 37 Ieſus ſaide to him, \* Thou ſhalt *Deut.*  
 loue the Lord thy God with all thine heart, with 6.5.  
 all thy ſoule, and with all thy mind. 38 This is  
 the firſt and the great commandement 39 And  
 the ſecond is like vnto this, \* Thou ſhalt loue *Mar.*  
 thy neighbour as thy ſelfe. 40 On theſe two 12.31.  
 commandements hangeth the whole Lawe, and  
 the Prophets. 41 \* While the Pharifees were *Mar.*  
 gathered together, Ieſus asked them, 42 Saying, 12.35.  
 What thinke ye of Chriſt? whoſe ſonne is he?  
 They ſaid vnto him, Dauid's. 43 He ſaid vnto  
 them, How then doth Dauid in ſpirit call him *Pſal.*  
 Lord, ſaying, 44 \* The Lord ſaid to my Lord, *no. 1.*

# S. MATTHEW E

Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole? 45 If then Dauid call him Lorde, howe is he his Sonne? 46 And none coulde answere him a worde neither durst any from that day forth aike him any moe questions.

## CHAP. 23. 1. Outward holinesse.

**Nehe.** **T**hen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, 2 Saying,\* The Scribes and the Pharises sit in Moses seate. 3 Al therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue & doe but after their workes doe not: for they say and **Luke** doe not. 4 \*For they bind heauie burdens, and **11.46.** grieuous to be borne, and lay them on mens **actis** shoulders but they themselues will not mooue **15.10.** them with one of their fingers 5 Al their workes they doe for to be seene of men: for they make their Phylacteries broad, and make long the **Num.** \* frindges of their garments, 6 \* And loue the **15.38.** chiefe places at feastes, and to haue the chiefe **Luke** seates in the assemblies, 7 And greetings in the **11.43.** markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi **Jame:** 8 \* But be not ye called, Rabbi: for one is your **3.1.** doctor, *to wit*, Christ, and all yee are brethren. **Mal.** 9 \* And call no man your Father vpon the earth **1.6.** for there is but one your Father, which is in heauen. 10 Be not called doctors: for one is **Luke** your doctor, *euen* Christ. 11 But he that is great **14.11.** test among you, let him be your seruant. 12 \* For **6.18.** whosoever will exalt himselfe, shall be brought **14.** lowe; and whosoever wil humble himselfe, shall be

# C H A P. XXIII.

be exalted 13 Wo therfore *be* vnto you Scribes  
 and Pharises, hypocrites because ye shut vp the  
 kingdome of heauen before men: for yee your  
 selues goe not in, neither suffer ye them that  
 would enter, to come in. 14 \*Wo *be* vnto you, *Mat.*  
 Scribes and Pharises hypocrites: for yee de- 12.40  
 moue widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of *luke*  
 long prayers: wherefore yee shall receiue the 20.47  
 greater damnation. 15 Woe *bee* vnto you,  
 Scribes & Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compasse  
 sea & land to make one of your profession: and  
 when he is made yee make him two folde more  
 the childe of hell, then you your selues. 16 Wo  
 be vnto you blind guides, which say, Whosoener  
 sweareth by the Temple it is nothing: but who-  
 soener sweareth by the golde of the Temple, he  
 offendeth 17 Ye fooles and blinde whether is  
 greater, the gold or the Temple that sanctifieth  
 the golde? 18 And whosoener sweareth by the  
 altar, it is nothing but whosoener sweareth by  
 the offering *that is* vpon it, offendeth. 19 Yee  
 fooles and blind, whether is greater, the offering,  
 or the altar which sanctifieth the offering?  
 20 Whosoener therefore sweareth by the altar,  
 sweareth by it & by al things thereon. 21 \* And *1. Kin.*  
 whosoener sweareth by the Temple, sweareth 8.13.  
 by it and by him that dwelleth therein 22 \* And *Chap.*  
 he that sweareth by heauen, sweareth by the 5.34  
 throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.  
 23 \*Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypo- *Luke*  
 crites: for ye tithe mint and anise, and cummin, 12.42.

# S. MATTHEW.

and leaue the weightier matters of the lawe, and iudgement and mercie, and fidelity. These ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other.

**Luke** 24 Ye blind guides, which straine out a gnat, and swallow a camell. 25 Wo be to you, \* Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the outer side of the cup, and of the platter: but within they are full of bribery and excess. 26 Thou blinde Pharise, cleanse first the inside of the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be cleane also. 27 Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites for ye are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all filthinesse. 28 So are ye also: for outward ye appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie. 29 Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, 30 And say, if we had bene in the dayes of our fathers, we would not haue bene partners with them in the blood of the Prophets. 31 So then ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the children of them that murdered the Prophets. 32 Fulfill yee also the measure of your fathers. 33 O serpents, the generation of vipers, how should ye escape the damnation of hell! 34 Wherefore beholde, I send vnto you Prophets & wise men and Scribes, and of them ye shall kill and crucifie: and of them shall ye scourge in your Synagogues:

## C H A P. XXIII.

ogues, and persecute from city to city, 35 That  
 pon you may come all y<sup>e</sup> righteous blood that  
 as sheide vpon the earth, \* from the blood of *Gen<sup>ts</sup>*  
 bel the righteous, vnto the blood of Zacharias 4.8.  
 he sonne of Barachias, \* whom ye slew betweene *2. Chr<sup>t</sup>*  
 he Temple and the altar. 36 Verely I say vnto *24. 22.*  
 you, all these things shall come vpon this gene-  
 ration. 37 \* Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which kil- *Luke*  
 est the Prophets, and stonest them which are *13. 34.*  
 ent to thee, howe often would I haue gathered  
 my children together, as the henne gathereth  
 her chickens vnder her wings, & ye would not!  
 38 Beholde, your habitation shall be left vnto  
 you desolate: 39 For I say vnto you, yee shall  
 not see mee hence forth till that ye say. Blessed  
 he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

### C H A P. 24. 2 *The signes of the comming of Christ.*

**A**ND \* Iesus went out, and departed from the *Mar<sup>c</sup>*  
 Temple, and his disciples came to him, to *13. 1.*  
 shewe him the building of the Temple. 2 And *Luke*  
 Iesus said vnto them, See ye not all these things? *21. 5.*  
 Verely I say vnto you, \* there shall not be here *Luke*  
 left a stone vpon a stone, that shall not bee cast *19. 44.*  
 downe. 3 And as he sate vpon the mount of O-  
 liues, his disciples came vnto him apart, saying,  
 Tell vs when these things shall bee, and what  
 signe shall be of thy comming, and of the ende *Eph<sup>e</sup>*  
 of the world. 4 And Iesus answered, and saide *5. 6.*  
 vnto them, \* Take heede that no man deceiue *colos.*  
 you. 5 For many shall come in my name, say- *2. 18.*

# S. MATTHEWE.

ing, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many. 6 And ye shall heare of warres, & rumours of warres: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet. 7 For nation shall rise against nation, & realme against realme, and there shalbe famine, and pestilence, and earthquakes in diuers places. 8 All these are but the beginning of sorowes. 9 \* Then shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, and shall kill you, and ye shall be hated of all nations for my Names sake. 10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. 11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceiue many. 12 And because iniquitie shalbe increased, the loue of many shall be cold. 13 \* But he that endureth to the end, he shalbe saued. 14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shall bee preached through the whole world for a witnesse vnto all nations, and then shall the end come. 15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by \* Daniel the Prophet, set in the holy place, (let him that readeth, consider it) 16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mountains. 17 Let him which is on the house toppe, not come downe to fetch any thing out of his house. 18 And he that is in the field, let him not returne thence to fetch his clothes. 19 And wo shall be to them that are with childe, and to them that gine sucke in those dayes. 20 But pray that your flight bee not in the winter, neither on the

# C H A P. XXIIII.

the \* Sabbath day. 21 For then shalbe great tribulation, such as was not from the beginning of the world to this time, nor shall be. 22 And except those dayes should bee shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elects sake those dayes shalbe shortened. 23 \* Then if any shall say vnto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there, beleeue it not. 24 For there shall arise false Christs and false prophets, & shall shew great signes and wonders, so that if it were possible, they should deceiue the very elect. 25 Beholde, I haue tolde you before. 26 Wherefore if they shall say vnto you, Behold he is in the desert, goe not forth: beholde, he is in the secret places, beleene it not. 27 For as the lightning commeth out of the east, & is seene into y<sup>e</sup> West, so shal also y<sup>e</sup> coming of the Sonne of man be. 28 \* For where-  
 euer a dead carke is, thi her will the Eagles  
 gathered together. 29 \* And immediatly after the tribulation of those dayes, (shall y<sup>e</sup> Sonne be darkened, and the Moone shall not giue her light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and the powers of heauen shalbe shaken. 30 And then shall appeare y<sup>e</sup> signe of the Sonne of man in heauen: and then shall all the kinreds of the earth mourne, \* and they shall see the Sonne of man come in the clouds of heauen with power and great glory. 31 \* And he shall send his Angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the foure winds, and from the one end of the heauens  
 vnto the other.



# S. MATTHEW E.

vnto the other 32 Now learne the parable of  
the figge tree : when her bough is yet tender,  
and it putteth forth leaues, ye know that sum-  
mer is neere. 33 So likewise ye, when ye see all  
these things, know that *the kingdome of God* is  
neere, *even* at the doores. 34 Verely I say vnto  
you, this generation shall not passe, till all these  
things bee done. 35 \* Heauen and earth shall  
13.31. passe away : but my words shall not passe away.  
36 But of that day and houre knoweth no man,  
no not the Angels of heauen, but my Father on-  
ly. 37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so likewise  
shall the comming of the Sonne of man bee.  
Luke 38 \* For as in the dayes before the flood, they  
17.26. did eate and drinke, marrie, & giue in marriage,  
gene. vnto the day that Noe entred into the Arke  
7.5,11. 39 And knewe nothing, till the flood came  
and tooke them all away : so shall also the com-  
ming of the Sonne of man be. 40 \* Then two  
17.36. shall be in the fieldes, the one shalbe receiued  
and the other shalbe refused. 41 Two women  
Mar. shalbe grinding at the mill : the one shalbe re-  
13.35. ceiued, & the other shalbe refused. 42 \* Watch  
Luke therefore : for yee knowe not what houre your  
12.39. master will come. 43 \* Of this bee sure, that  
1. thej. the good man of the house knew at what watch the  
5.2. the thiefe would come, he would surely watch  
reuel. and not suffer his house to be digged thorow  
16.15. 44 Therefore bee yee also ready : for in the  
Luke houre that ye thinke not, will the Sonne of man  
12.42. come. 45 \* Who then is a faithfull seruant

## C H A P. XXV.

nd wife, whom his master hath made ruler  
ouer his householde, to giue them meate in sea-  
son. 46 Blessed is that seruant, whom his ma-  
ster when hee commeth, shall finde so doing.  
47 Verely I say vnto you, he shal make him ru-  
ler ouer all his goods. 48 But if that euill ser-  
uant shall say in his heart, My master doeth de-  
ceiue his comming, 49 And beginne to smite  
his fellowes, and to eate, and to drinke with the  
drunken: 50 That seruants master wil come in  
a day, when he looketh not for him, and in an  
houre that he is not ware of, 51 And will cut  
him off, and giue him his portion with hypo-  
crites: \* there shalbe weeping and gnashing of  
teeth.

### C H A P. 25. 13 We must watch.

**T**hen the kingdom of heauen shalbe likened  
vnto ten virgins, which tooke their lampes,  
and went forth to meete the bridegrome. 2 And  
foure of them were wise, and foure foolish. 3 The  
foolish tooke their lampes, but tooke none oyle  
with them. 4 But the wise tooke oyle in their  
vessels with their lampes. 5 Now while the  
bridegrome taried long, all slumbered and slept.  
6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Be-  
hold, the bridegrome commeth: goe out to  
meete him. 7 Then all these virgins arose, and  
trimmed their lampes. 8 And the foolish sayde  
vnto the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes  
are out. 9 But the wise answered, saying, No,  
lest there will not be ynough for vs, and you.

*Chap.  
12. 42.  
and  
25. 30.*

but

## S. MATTHEW E:

but goe ye rather to them that sell, and buy for  
 your selues. 10 And while they went to buy, the  
 bridegrome came: and they that were readie,  
 went in with him to the wedding, and the gate  
 was shut. 11 Afterwardes came also the other  
 virgins, saying Lord, Lord, open to vs. 12 But he  
 answered, & said, Verely I say vnto you, I know  
 you not. 13 \* Watch therefore: for ye knowe  
 neither the day, nor the houre, when the Sonne  
 of man wil come. 14 \* For the kingdome of hea-  
 ven is as a man that going into a strange coun-  
 trey, called his seruants, and deliuered to them  
 his goods. 15 And vnto one he gaue five talents,  
 and to another two, and to another one, to euery  
 man after his owne abilitie, & straightway went  
 from home. 16 Then he that had receiued 5 five  
 talents, went and occupied with them, and gai-  
 ned other five talents. 17 Likewise also, he that  
 receiued two, he also gained other two. 18 But  
 he that receiued that one, went and digged it in  
 the earth, and hidde his masters money. 19 But  
 after a long season, the master of those seruants  
 came, and reckoned with them. 20 Then came  
 hee that had receiued five talents, and brought  
 other five talents, saying, Master, thou deliueredst  
 vnto me five talents, behold, I haue gained with  
 them other five talents. 21 Then his master said  
 vnto him, It is wel done good seruant and faith-  
 ful, Thou hast bene faithful in litle, I will make  
 thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy.  
 22 Also he that had receiued two talents, came  
 and

# C H A P. XXV.

and said, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue gained two other talents more. 23 His master said vnto him, It is well done good seruant, and faithfull, Thou hast bene faithfull in litle, I wil make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy. 24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came, and sayde, Master, I knewe that thou wast an hard man, which reapest where thou sowedst not, and gatherest where thou strawedst not. 25 I was therefore afraid, and went, and hidde thy talent in the earth: beholde, thou hast thine owne. 26 And his master answered and said vnto him, Thou euill seruant, and slouthfull, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I strawed not. 27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming should I haue receiued mine owne with vantage. 28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath tenne talents. 29 \* For vnto euery *Chap.*  
man that hath, it shall be giuen, and he shal haue *13.12.*  
abundance, and from him that hath not, euen *mar.*  
that he hath, shall be taken away. 30 Cast there- *4.25.*  
fore that vnprofitable seruant into vtter \* darke- *Chap.*  
nesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of *8.12.*  
teeth. 31 And when the Sonne of man com- *and*  
eth in his glory, and all the holy Angels with *22.13.*  
him, then shall he sit vpon the throne of his glo-  
rie. 32 And before him shall be gathered all  
nations, and he shall separate them one from  
another,

# S. MATTHEW E.

another, as a shepheard separateth the sheepe from the goates. 33 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hand, and the goates on the left,

34 Then shal the King say to them ou his right hand, Come yee blessed of my Father: take the inheritance of the kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world 35 \* For I

*Esay* 58.7. was an hungred, and yee gaue me meate: I thirsted, and yee gaue me drinke: I was a stranger, and yee tooke me in vnto you: 36 *I was na*

*Eccle.* 7.35. ked, and yee clothed me: I was \* sicke, and yee visited me: I was in prison, and yee came vnto me:

37 Then shall the righteous answere him, saying, Lord, when saw wee thee an hungred, and fedde thee? or athirst, and gaue thee drinke?

38 And when saw we thee a stranger, and tooke thee in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee? 40 And the King shal answere, and say vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as yee haue done it vnto one of the least

of these my brethren, ye haue done it to mee: 41 Then shall hee say vnto them on the left

*Psal.* 6.8. hand, \* Depart from me ye cursed, into euery stinging fire, which is prepared for the deuill and his

*chap.* 7.23. angels. 42 For I was an hungred, and yee gaue mee no meate: I thirsted, and yee gaue mee no

*luke* 13.27. drinke: 43 I was a stranger, and yee tooke me not in vnto you: *I was* naked, and yee clothed

me not: sicke, and in prison, & ye visited me not: 44 Then shall they also answere him, saying,

Lord,

Lon  
or a  
did  
an  
as n  
thes  
goe  
to li

A  
2 Y  
ouer  
to be  
chie  
of th  
led C  
they  
5 Bu  
vpro  
Iesus  
leper  
had a  
red it  
when  
saying  
oy ut  
one g  
ing is  
man?

## C H A P. XXVI.

Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee? 45 Then shall hee answere them, and say, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as yee did it not to one of the least of *Mat.* these, ye did it not to me. 46 \* And these shall *12.2.* goe into euerlasting paine, and the righteous in. *john* to life eternall. *5.29.*

### C H A P. 26. 26 *The institution of the Lords Supper.*

**A**ND \* it came to passe, when Iesus had finish- *Mar.*  
ed al these sayings he said vnto his disciples, *14.13*  
2 Yee knowe that after two dayes is the Pasche-  
ouer, and the Sonne of man shall be deliuered  
to be crucified. 3 \* Then assembled together the *John*  
chiefe Priestes, and the Scribes and the Elders *11.47.*  
of the people into the hall of the hie Priest cal-  
led Caiaphas, 4 And consulted together that  
they might take Iesus by subtiltie, and kill him.  
5 But they sayd, Not on the feast day, lest any  
uproare be among the people. 6 \* And when *Mar.*  
Iesus was in Bethania, in the house of Simon the *14.3.*  
leper, 7 There came vnto him a woman, which *john*  
had a boxe of very costly oyntment, and pow- *11.2.*  
red it on his head, as he sate at the table. 8 And  
when his disciples saw it, they had indignation,  
saying, What needed this waste? 9 For this  
oyntment might haue bene solde for much, and  
the moneye giuen to the poore. 10 And Iesus know-  
ing it, sayd vnto them, Why trouble ye the wo-  
man? for shee hath wrought a good worke  
vpon

# S. MATTHEW E.

*Dent.* vpon me. 11 \*For ye haue the poore alwayes  
15.11. with you, but mee shall yee not haue alwayes.

12 For in that shee powred this oymntment on  
my body, shee did it to bury mee. 13 Verily I  
say vnto you, wheresoeuer this Gospel shall bee  
preached throughout all the worlde, there shall  
also this that shee hath done, be spoken of for a

*Mar.* memorial of her. 14 \*Then one of the twelue,  
14.10. called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto y<sup>e</sup> chiefe Priests,

15 And saide, What will ye giue me, and I will  
deliuer him vnto you? and they appointed vn-  
to him thirtie pieces of siluer. 16 And from  
that time he sought opportunitie to betray him.

*Mar.* 17 \*Now on the first (a) of the feast of vnlea-  
14.12. nened bread, the disciples came to Iesus, saying

*Luke* vnto him, Where wilt thou that wee prepare

22.7. for thee to eate the Passeouer? 18 And he said,  
Goe ye into the citie to such a man, and say to  
him, The Master sayeth, My time is at hand: I  
will keepe the Passeouer at thine house with my  
disciples. 19 And the disciples did as Iesus had  
giuen them charge, and made readie the Passe-

*Luke* ouer. 20 \*So when the euen was come, he sate  
22.14. downe with the twelue. 21 And as they did

*Mar.* eate he sayd, \*Verely I say vnto you, that one  
14.18. of you shall betray me. 22 And they were ex-

*John* ceeding sorowful, and began euery one of them  
13.21. to say vnto him, Is it I, Master? 23 And hee an-

*Psal.* swered and said, \*Hee that dippeth his hand  
41.9. with mee in the dish, hee shall betray mee

24 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it

## CH A P. XXVI.

is written of him. but woe bee to that man, by  
 whome the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had  
 bene good for that man, if hee had neuer bene  
 borne. 25 Then Iudas which betrayed him an-  
 swered and sayd, Is it I, Master? Hee saide vnto  
 him, Thou hast sayd it. 26 \* And as they did 1. Cor.  
11.24.  
 eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when hee had  
 blessed, hee brake it, and gaue it to the disciples  
 and said, Take, eat, this is my body. 27 Also he  
 tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thanks,  
 hee gaue it them, saying. Drinke yee all of it.  
 28 For this is my blood of the Newe Testa-  
 ment, that is shed for many, for the remission of  
 sinnes. 29 I say vnto you, that I wil not drinke  
 hencefoorth of this fruite of the vine, vntill that  
 day, when I shall drinke it newe with you in  
 my Fathers kingdome. 30 And when they had  
 sung a Psalm, they went out into the mount of Mar.  
14.27  
 Olives. 31 \* Then sayd Iesus vnto them, All ye  
 shall be offended by me this night: for it is writ. John  
16.32  
 Then, I \* will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe  
 of the flocke shall be scattered. 32 But \* after I Zech.  
13.7.  
 am risen againe, I will goe before you into Ga-  
 lilee. 33 But Peter answered, and said vnto him, Mar.  
14.28  
 Though that al men should be offended by thee,  
 yet will I neuer bee offended. 34 \* Iesus saide John  
13.38.  
 vnto him, Verily I say vnto thee, that this night  
 before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie mee mark.  
14.30.  
 thrise. 35 Peter saide vnto him, Though I  
 should die with thee, I wil in no case deny thee. Luk  
22.39  
 Likewise also saide all the disciples. 36 \* Then



# S. MATTHEW E.

went Iesus with them into a place which is called Gethsemane, and said vnto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I goe, and pray yonder. 37 And he tooke vnto him Peter, and the two sonnes of Z bedens, and beganne to waxe sorowfull, and grievously troubled. 38 Then said Iesus vnto them, My soule is very heauie, *euē* vnto the death: tarie ye heare and watch with me. 39 So hee went a litle further and fell on his face and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cuppe passe from me: neuerthelesse, not as I will, but as thou wilt. 40 After, he came vnto the disciples and found them asleepe, and sayd to Peter, What? could ye not watch with me one houre? 41 Watch, and pray, that yee enter not into temptation: the spirite in deede is ready, but the flesh is weake. 42 Againe he went away the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cuppe cannot passe away from me, but that I must drinke it, thy will be done. 43 And he came and found them asleepe againe, for their eyes were heauie. 44 So he left them and went away againe, and prayed the thirde time, saying the same wordes. 45 Then came he to his disciples and sayde vnto them,

**Mar.** Sleepe hencefoorth, and take your rest: beholde

**24.43** the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is *g*  
**Luke** *uē* into the handes of sinners 46 Rise,

**22.47** vs goe: beholde, hee is at hande that betraye  
**john** me. 47 \* And while hee yet spake, loe, Iude

**18.3.** one of the twelue, came, and with him a great  
multitude

# C H A P. XXVI.

multitude with swordes and staues, from the  
 hee Priests and Elders of the people. 48 Now  
 he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token,  
 saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that is hee,  
 lay holde on him 49 And forthwith hee  
 came to Iesus, and sayde, God saue thee, Master,  
 and kissed him 50 Then Iesus sayd vnto him,  
 Friende, wherefore art thou come? Then came  
 they, and layd handes on Iesus. and tooke him.  
 51 And beholde one of them which were with  
 Iesus, stretched out *his* hande, and drewe his  
 sworde, and stroke a seruant of the hee Priest,  
 and snote off his eare. 52 Then said Iesus vn-  
 to him, Put vp thy sword into his place: \*for al  
 that take the sword, shal perish with the sword.  
 53 Either thinkest thou, that I cannot now pray  
 to my Father, and hee will giue me more then  
 twelue legions of Angels? 54 Howe then  
 should the \* Scriptures bee fulfilled, which say,  
 that it must be so? 55 The same houre said Ie-  
 sus to the multitude, Ye be come out as it were  
 against a thiefe, with swordes and staues to take  
 me: I sate daily teaching in the Temple among  
 you, and ye tooke me not. 56 But all this was  
 done that the Scriptures of the Prophets might  
 be fulfilled. \* Then all the disciples forsooke him,  
 and fled. 57 \* And they tooke Iesus and led  
 him to Caiaphas the hee Priest, where y<sup>e</sup> Scribes  
 and the Elders were assembled. 58 And Peter  
 followed him a farre off vnto the hee Priests hal,  
 and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the

Gene.  
9.5.

reuel.  
13.10.

I say  
35.10.

Verf.  
31.

Mar.  
14.53

luke  
22.54.

# S. MATTHEWE.

*Mar.* ende. 59 \* Nowe the chiefe Priestes and the  
14.54 Elders, & al the whole council sought false wit-

nes against Iesus, to put him to death 60 But  
they founde none, and though many false wit-  
nesses came, yet found they none: but at the last  
came two false witnesses, 61 And said, This

*Iohn* man sayd, \* I can destroy the Temple of God,  
3. 19. and build it in three dayes. 62 Then the chiefe

Priest arose, and said to him, Answerest thou no-  
thing? What is the matter that these men wit-  
nesse against thee? 63 But Iesus held his peace.

Then the chiefe Priest answered & said to him,  
I charge thee swear vnto vs by the liuing God,  
to tell vs, if thou beest that Christ, the Sonnie of

*Chap.* God, or no. 64 \* Iesus said to him, Thou hast  
18.27. saide it: neuerthelesse I say vnto you, hereafter

*rom.* shal ye see the Sonne of man sitting at the right  
14.10 hand of the power of God, & come in v cloudes

*1 thes.* of the heauen. 65 Then the hie Priest rent his  
4. 14. clothes saying, He hath blasphemed, what haue

we any more neede of witnesses? beholde, now  
ye haue heard his blasphemie. 66 What thinke

*I say* ye? they answered, and saide, Hee is guiltie of  
50. 6. death 67 \* Then spit they in his face, and buile

*Mar.* ted him, & other smote him with rods, 68 Say-  
ing, Prophecie to vs, O Christ, Who is hee that

14.66 smote thee? 69 \* Peter sate without in the hea-  
*luke* and a mayd came to him, saying, Thou also wast

23.35. with Iesus of Galilee: 70 But he denied be-  
*Iohn* fore them all, saying, I wote not what thou sayest

28.29. 71 And when hee went out into the porch, and

## C H A P. XXVII.

ther mayd saw him, & said vnto them that were there, This man was also with Iesus of Nazareth, 72 And againe hee denied with an othe, saying, I knowe not the man. 73 So after a while, came vnto him they that stood by, & said vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of them: for euen thy speach bewrayeth thee 74 Then began he to curse *himselfe*, and to sweare, saying, I knowe not the man. And immediatly the cocke crewe. 75 Then Peter remembered the wordes of Iesus, which had said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise. So he went out, and wept bitterly.

C H A P. 27. 34. *Christ is crucified.*

**W**Hen the <sup>m</sup> morning was come, al the chiefe *Mar.*  
Priests, & the Elders of the people tooke 15.1.  
counsel against Iesus to put him to death, 2 And *like*  
leade him away bound, and deliuered him vnto 23.66  
Pontious Pilate the gouernour. 3 Then when *John*  
Iudas which betrayed him, saw that he was con- 18.28.  
demned, hee repented himselfe, and brought a-  
gain the thirtie *pieces* of siluer to the chiefe  
Priests, and Elders, 4 Saying, I haue sinned be-  
traying the innocent blood. But they said, What  
is that to vs? see thou to it. 5 And when he had  
cast downe the siluer *pieces* in the Temple, he de-  
parted, and went <sup>\*</sup> and hanged himselfe. 6 And *Mat.*  
the chiefe Priests tooke the siluer *pieces*, & said, 1.18.  
It is not lawfull for vs to put them into the trea-  
sure, because it is the price of blood. 7 And  
they tooke counsell, & bought with them a pot-

# S. MATTHEW E.

ters field, for the buriall of strangers. 8 Wherefore that field is called \* The field of blood vntill this day. 9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Ieremias the Prophet, saying, *Zech.* \* And they tooke thirtie silver pieces, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel valued. 10 And they gaue them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me). *Mar.* 11 \* And Iesus stood before the gouernour, and the gouernour asked him, saying, Art thou that king of the Iewes? Iesus sayd vnto him, Thou sayest it. 12 And when hee was accused of the chiefe Priests, and Elders, he answered nothing. *John* 13 Then said Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they lay against thee? 14 But he answered him not to one word, in so much y the gouernour marueiled greatly. 15 Now at the least, the gouernour was wont to deliuer vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would. 16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas. 17 When they were then gathered together, Pilate said vnto them, Whether will ye that I let loose vnto you Barabbas, or Iesus which is called Christe? 18 (For he knew well, that for ennie they had deliuered him. 19 Also *Luke* when hee was set downe vpon the iudgement seate, his wife sent to him, saying, Haue thou nothing to do with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame by reason of him.) 20 \* But the chiefe Priests and the Elders had perswaded the people, that they should

ask

## C H A P. XXVII.

like Barabbas, and should destroy Iesus. 21 Then the gouernour answered, and sayd vnto them, Whether of the twaine will yee that I let loose vnto you? And they said, Barabbas. 22 Pilate sayd to them, What shall I doe then with Iesus, which is called Christ? They all sayd to him, Let him bee crucified. 23 Then said the gouernour, But what euill hath he done? Then they cryed the more, saying, Let him be crucified. 24 When Pilate sawe that hee auailed nothing, but that more tumult was made, he tooke water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this iust man: looke ye to it. 25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on vs, and on our children. 26 Thus let he Barabbas loose vnto them, and scourged Iesus, and deliuered him to be crucified. 27 \* Then the souldiers of the gouernour tooke Iesus into the common hall, and gathered about him the whole band, 28 And they stripped him, and put about him a skarlet robe, 29 And platted a crowne of thornes, and put it vpon his head, and a reed in his right hand, and bowed their knees before him, and mocked him, saying, God saue thee, King of the Iewes, 30 And spited vpon him, and tooke a reed, and smote him on the head. 31 Thus when they had mocked him, they tooke the robe from him, and put his owne raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him. 32 \* And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon:

*Mar.*

15. 16.

*Iohn*

19. 2.

*Mar.*

15. 21.

# S. MATTHEW E.

**Mark.** him they compelled to beare his crosse. 33 \* And  
**15.22.** when they came vnto the place called Golgo-  
**John** tha, (that is to say, the place of dead mens skuls)

**29.17.** 34 They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled  
 with gall : and when he had tasted thereof, hee  
 would not drinke. 35 And when they had cru-  
 cified him, they parted his garments, and did cast  
 lots, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken

**Psal.** by the Prophet, \* They diuided my garments  
**22.18.** among them, and vpon my vesture did cast lots.

**Mark.** 36 And they saue and watched him there.

**23.24.** 37 They set vp also ouer his head his cause writ-  
 ten, THIS IS IESVS THE KING  
 OF THE IEWES. 38 And there were

two thieues crucified with him, one on the right  
 hand, and another on the left. 39 And they that  
 passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads,

**John** 40 And saying, \* Thou that destroyest the  
**8.19.** Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy  
 selfe : if thou be the Sonne of God, come downe

from the crosse. 41 Likewise also the hie Priests  
 mocking him, with the Scribes, and Elders, and  
 Pharises, said, 42 Hee saued others, but he can  
 not saue himselfe : if he be the king of Israel,  
 let him now come downe from the crosse, and  
 we will beleue in him. 43 \* Hee trusteth in

**Psal.** God, let him deliuer him now, if hee will haue  
**2.9.** him : for he said, I am the Sonne of God. 44 The  
 selfe same thing also the thieues which were  
 crucified with him, cast in his teeth. 45 Nowe  
 from the sixth houre was there darkenesse ouer  
 all

## C H A P XXVII.

the land, vnto the ninth houre. 47 And at  
the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loude  
voice, saying, \* Eli, Eli, lamaſabachthani? that *Pſal.*  
My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me? 22. 1.  
And ſome of them that ſtoode there, when  
they heard it, ſayde, This man calleth Elias.  
And ſtraightway one of them ran, and tooke  
a ſponge and filled it with vineger, and put it  
on a reede. and gaue him to drinke. 49 Other *Pſal.*  
ſayde, Let be: let vs ſee if Elias will come and ſaue  
him. 50 Then Ieſus cried againe with a loude  
voice, and yeelded vp the Ghoſt. 51 And be-  
hold, \* the vaile of the Temple was rent in  
two, from the top to the bottom, & the earth  
quake, and the ſtones were clonen. 52 And  
the graues did open themſelues, and many bo-  
dies of the Saints, which ſlept, aroſe, 53 And  
came out of the graues after his reſurrection, and  
went into the holy City, and appeared vnto ma-  
ny. 54 When the Centurion and they that were  
with him watching Ieſus. ſawe the earthquake,  
and the things that were done, they feared great-  
ly ſaying, Truly this was the Sonne of God.  
And many women were there beholding  
from a farre off, which had followed Ieſus from  
Galilee, miniſtring vnto him. 56 Among whom *Mark.*  
Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of  
Iames, and Iohes, and the mother of Zebedeus *luke*  
ſons. 57 \* And when the euen was come, 22. 50.  
there came a rich man of Arimathea named Io- *iohn.*  
ſeph, who had alſo himſelfe bene Ieſus diſciple. 19. 38.  
58 He



## S. M A T T H E W E.

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus, Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered. 59 So Ioseph tooke the body, and wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth, 60 And put it in his newe tombe, which hee had hewed out in a rocke, and rolled a great stone to the doore of the sepulchre, and departed. 61 And there was Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie sitting ouer against the sepulchre. 62 Now the next day that followed the Preparation of the Sabbath, the hie Priests and the Pharises assembled to Pilate, 63 And sayd, Sir, we remember that that deceiuer said, while hee was yet alive, Within three dayes I will rise. 64 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure vntill the third day, lest his disciples come by night and steale him away, and say vnto the people, He is risen from the dead: so shall the last error be worse then the first. 65 Then Pilate said to them, Ye haue a watch: goe, and make it as ye know. 66 And they went, and made the sepulchre sure with the watch, and sealed the stone.

CHAP. 28. 18. *The Apostles sent to preach*

Mat.  
26.5.

**N**OW \* in the end of the Sabbath, when the first day of the weeke began to dawning, Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie came to see the sepulchre. 2 And beholde, there was a great earth quake: for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, & came & rolled back the stone from the doore, and sat vpon it; they, a

## C H A P. XXVIII.

his countenance was like lightning, and his rai-  
 ent white as snowe 4 And for feare of him,  
 e keepers were astonied, and became as dead  
 en. 5 But the Angel answered, and said to the  
 omen, Feare ye not: for I know that ye seeke  
 us which was crucified: 6 He is not heere,  
 r he is risen, as he said: come, see the place  
 here the Lord was laid, 7 And go quickly, &  
 ll his disciples, that he is risen from the dead:  
 d beholde, he goeth before you into Galile:  
 ere yee shall see him: loe, I haue tolde you.  
 So they departed quickly from the sepulchre,  
 th feare and great ioy, and did run to bring  
 disciples word. 9 And as they went to tell  
 disciples, beholde, Iesus also met them, say-  
 g, God saue you And they came, and tooke  
 by the feet, and worshipped him. 10 Then  
 Iesus vnto them, Be not afraid, Go, and tell  
 brethren, that they go into Galile, and there  
 they see me. 11 Now whē they were gone,  
 holde, some of the watch came into the citie,  
 the iwd vnto the hie Priests all the things  
 were done. 12 And they gathered them  
 ether with the Elders, and tooke counsel, and  
 e large money vnto the souldiers, 13 Say-  
 Say, His disciples came by night, and stole  
 away while we slept. 14 And if this matter  
 e before the Gouvernour to be heard, we wil  
 uade him, and so vse the matter, that you  
 l not neede to care. 15 So they tooke the  
 ey, and did as they were taught: and this  
 saying

## S. M A R K E.

saying is noised among the Iewes vnto this day 16 Then the eleuen disciples went into Galile into a mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them. 17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted. 18 And

- Chap.* Iesus came, and spake vnto them, saying, \* *Mat.* 21.27. power is giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth. 19 \* Goe therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Sonne, & of the holy Ghost, 20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoeuer I haue commanded you: and loe, \* *Iohn* 14.16. I am with you alway vntill the ende of the world, A M E N.

## T H E H O L Y G O S P E L O F I E S V S C H R I S T, according to Marke.

### C H A P. 1. 9 *The baptizing of Christ.*

- Mal.* 3.1. **T**he beginning of y<sup>e</sup> Gospel of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God: 2 As is written in the Prophets, \* *Isai.* 40.3. holde, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare the way before thee. 3 \* The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness is, Prepare the way of the Lord: make his paths straight. 4 \* *Iohn* 3.1. baptize in the wilderness, and preach the tisme of amendment of life, for remission of sinnes. 5 And all the countrey of Iudea, & of Hierusalem went out vnto him, and were baptized.

# CHAP. I.

baptized of him in the riuer Iordan, confefling  
 their finnes. 6 \* Now Iohn was clothed with *Matt.*  
 camels haire, and with a girdle of skin about his 3.4.  
 finnes: and he did eate \* locusts & wilde hony, *Leuit.*  
 \* And preached, faying, A stronger then I com- 11 21.  
 eth after me, whose fhooes latched I am not *Mai.*  
 worthy to ftoope downe, and vnloofe. 8 Truth 3.11.  
 is, I haue baptized you with water: but hee  
 will baptize you with the holy Ghost. 9 \* And *Matt.*  
 came to paffe in thofe dayes, that I E S V S 3.13.  
 came from Nazareth, a citie of Galile, and was *luke*  
 baptized of Iohn in Iordan. 10 And aflooue as 3.21.  
 he was come out of the water, *Iohn* faw the hea-  
 uens clouen in twaine, and the holy Ghost def-  
 cending vpon him like a doue. 11 Then there  
 was a voyce from heauen, *faying*, Thou art my  
 loued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

\* And immediatly the fpirit driueth him into *Matt.*  
 the wilderneffe. 13 And he was there in the wil- 4.1.  
 derneffe fortie dayes, & was tempted of Satan: *luke*  
 he was alfo with the wild beafts, and the Angels 4.1.  
 miftred vnto him. 14 \* Now after that Iohn *Matt.*  
 was committed to priſon, Iefus came into Galile, 4.13.  
 teaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God, *luke*  
 And faying, The time is fulfilled, & the king- 4.14.  
 dome of God is at hand: repent and beleue the  
 Gospel 16 \* And as hee walked by the ſea of *Matt.*  
 Galile, he ſaw Simon, and Andrew his brother, 4.18.  
 caſting a net into the ſea, (for they were fiſhers) *luke*  
 Then Iefus ſayd vnto them, Follow me, and 5.29  
 will make you to be fiſhers of men 18 And

**ſtraightway**

# S. M A R K E.

straightway they forsooke their nets, & follo-  
 ed him. 19 And when he had gone a litle fur-  
 ther thence, he saw Iames the sonne of Zebede-  
 us, & Iohn his brother, as they were in the ship  
 mending their nets. 20 And anon he called  
 them: and they left their father Zebedeus in the  
 ship with his hired seruants, and went their way  
 after him. 21 \* So they entred into Capernaum  
 and straightway on the Sabbath day hee entred  
 into the Synagogue, and taught. 22 And they  
 were astonied at his doctrine, \* for hee taught  
 them as one that had authoritie, and not as the  
 Scribes. 23 And there was in their Synagogue  
 a man, in whom was an vncleane spirit, and he  
 cried out, 24 Saying, Ah, what haue we to doe  
 with thee, O Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come  
 to destroy vs? I know thee what thou art, that  
 holy one of God. 25 And Iesus rebuked  
 him, saying, Holde thy peace, and come out of  
 him. 26 And the vncleane spirit tare him, & came  
 with a loud voice and came out of him. 27 And  
 they were all amazed, so that they demaunded  
 one of another, saying What thing is this? What  
 new doctrine is this? for he commandeth the  
 foule spirits with authority, and they obey him.  
 28 And immediatly his fame spread abroade  
 thorowout all the region bordering on Galilee.  
 29 \* And as soone as they were come out of the  
 Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon  
 and Andrew, with Iames & Iohn. 30 And  
 Simons wifes mother lay sicke of a fener,

Mat.

4.13

Mat.

7.28.

luke

4.33.

Matt.

8.14.

luke

4.38

# CH A P. I.

on they tolde him of her. 31 And hee came  
 and tooke her by the hande, and lifted her vp,  
 and the feuer forsooke her by and by, and hee  
 ministred vnto them. 32 And when euen was  
 come, at what time the sun setteth, they brought  
 him all that were diseased and them that were  
 possessed with deuils. 33 And the whole citie  
 was gathered together at the doore 34 And  
 he healed many that were sicke of diuers disea-  
 ses: and hee cast out many deuils, and suffered  
 them to say that they knewe him.  
 And in the morning very early before day,  
 he arose and went out into a solitarie place,  
 and there prayed. 36 And Simon, and they that  
 were with him, followed carefully after him.  
 And when they had found him, they sayd  
 to him, All men seeke for thee 38 Then hee  
 sayd vnto them, Let vs go into the next townes,  
 that I may preach there also: for I came out for  
 this purpose. 39 And he preached in their Sy-  
 nagogues thorowout all Galile, and cast the de-  
 uils out. 40 \* And there came a leper to him, *Mat 20*  
 seeking him, and kneeled downe vnto him. *8.2.*  
 And he sayd to him. If thou wilt, thou canst make *luke*  
 cleane. 41 And Iesus had compassion, and *5.12.*  
 forth his hand, and touched him, and sayd  
 to him, I will, be thou cleane. 42 And as soone  
 as hee had spoken, immediatly the Leprosie de-  
 parted from him, and hee was made cleane.  
 And after hee had giuen him a strait com-  
 mandement, hee sent him away forthwith,

## S. MARKE.

44 And sayd vnto him, See thou say nothing  
 any man but get thee hence, and shewe thy selfe  
 to the \* Priest, and offer for thy cleansing those  
 things which Moses commanded, for a testi-  
 niall vnto them 45 But when he was departed  
 \* he began to tell many things, and to publish  
 the matter, so that Iesus could no more open-  
 ly enter into the citie, but was without in desolate  
 places: and they came to him from euery quarter

### CHAP. 2. *Christ forgiveth sinne.*

*Mat.* 9.1. **A**fter \* a few dayes, he entred into Capernaum  
 againe, and it was noysed that hee was  
 in the house. 2 And anon, many gathered to-  
 gether, in so much that the places about the  
 doore could not receiue any more: and he pre-  
 ched the word vnto them. 3 And there came  
 vnto him that brought one sicke of the palsey,  
 borne of foure men. 4 And because they  
 could not come neere vnto him for the mul-  
 titude, they vncouered the roofof the house  
 where hee was: and when they had broken  
 open, they let downe the bed wherein the sicke  
 of the palsey lay. 5 Now when Iesus saw  
 their faith, he saide to the sicke of the palsey,  
 Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiven thee. 6 And there  
 certaine of the Scribes, sitting there, and say-  
 ing in their hearts, 7 Why doeth this man  
 speake such blasphemies? \* who can forgive  
 sinnes but God only? 8 And immediatly  
 Iesus perceiued in his Spirit, that thus they  
 thought within themselves, he said vnto them,

*Job*

14.4.

*Isai.*

43.25.

## C H A P. II.

reason ye these things in your hearts? 9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsey,  
 Thy sinnes are forgiven thee? or to say, Arise,  
 and take vp thy bed, and walke? 10 But that ye  
 may know, that the Sonne of man hath authori-  
 tie in earth to forgive sinnes, (hee said vnto the  
 sicke of the palsey) 11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and  
 take vp thy bed, and get thee hence into thine  
 owne house. 12 And by and by he arose, and  
 toke vp his bed, and went forth before them,  
 in so much that they were all amazed, & glo-  
 rified God, saying, We neuer sawe such a thing.  
 Then he went forth againe toward the sea,  
 and all the people resorted vnto him, and hee  
 taught them. 14 \* And as Iesus passed by, he saw *Mat.*  
 a man called the sonne of Alphaeus sit at y<sup>e</sup> receiue of cu- *9.9.*  
 stome, and said vnto him, Follow me. And he *luke*  
 followed him. 15 And it came to passe, *5. 27.*  
 that Iesus sate at table in his house, many Publi-  
 canes and sinners sate at table also with Iesus,  
 and his disciples: for there were many that fol-  
 lowed him. 16 And when the Scribes and Pha-  
 risees sawe him eate with the Publicanes and  
 sinners, they said vnto his disciples, Howe is it,  
 that he eateth & drinketh with Publicanes and  
 sinners? 17 Nowe when Iesus heard it, hee said *1. Tim.*  
 vnto them, The whole haue no neede of the *1. 13.*  
 Law, but the sicke: \* I came not to call the *Mat.*  
 righteous, but y<sup>e</sup> sinners to repentance. 18 \* And *9. 14.*  
 the disciples of Iohn, and the Pharisees did fast, *luke*  
 and Iesus came and said vnto him, Why doe the dis- *5. 33.*



# S, M A R K E.

ciples of Iohn, and the Phar ſes faſt, and thy diſ-  
 ciples faſt not? 19 And Ieſus ſaide vnto them,  
 Can the ch ldr̄en of the marriage chamber faſt,  
 whiles the bridegrome is with them? as long as  
 they haue the bridegrome with them, they can  
 not faſt. 20 But the dayes will come, when the  
 bridegrome ſhall be taken from them, and then  
 ſhall they faſt in thoſe dayes. 21 Alſo no man  
 ſoweth a piece of new cloth in an old garment:  
 for els the newe piece that filled it vp, taketh  
 away ſomewhat from the old, and the breach is  
 worſe. 22 Likewise, no man putteth new wine  
 into old veſſels: for els the newe wine breaketh  
 the veſſels, and the wine runneth out, and the  
 veſſels are loſt: but newe wine muſt be put into  
 newe veſſels. 23 \* And it came to paſſe as he  
 went through y<sup>e</sup> corne on the Sabbath day, y<sup>e</sup> hiſ  
 diſciples, as they went on their way, beganne to  
 pluck y<sup>e</sup> eares of corne. 24 And y<sup>e</sup> Pharifeſes ſaid  
 vnto him Behold, why doe they on the Sabbath  
 day, that which is not lawfull? 25 And he ſayd to  
 them, Haue ye not read what \* David did, when  
 he was hungred, and was an hungred, with him,  
 and the three that were with him? 26 How he went into the  
 houſe of God, in the dayes of Abiathar the  
 Prieſt, & did eate y<sup>e</sup> ſhew bread which were  
 lawfull to eate, but for the \* Prieſts, and gave  
 ſo to them which were with him? 27 And he  
 ſaid to them, The Sabbath was made for man,  
 and not man for the Sabbath. 28 When ſon-  
 the Sonne of man is Lord, euen of the Sabbath.

Mat.

12.1.

Luke

6.1.

1 Sam

31. 6.

Exod.

29.33.

CHAP. III. 29. *Blasphemie*  
*against the holy Ghost.*

And he\* entered againe into the Synagogue, *Mat.*  
and there was a man which had a withered *12.9.*  
hand. 2 And they watched him whether he *luke*  
would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they *6.6.*  
might accuse him. 3 Then he said vnto the man  
which had the withered hand, Arise, *stand forth*  
in y<sup>e</sup> middes. 4 And he said to them, Is it lawfull  
to doe a good deede on the Sabbath day, or to  
doe euill? to saue the life, or to kill? But they held  
their peace. 5 Then he looked round about on  
them angerly mourning also for the hardnes of  
their hearts and said to the man, Stretch forth  
thine hand. And hee stretched it out: And his  
hand was restored as whole as the other. 6 And  
the Pharises departed, and straightway gathe-  
red a councill with the Herodians against him,  
that they might destroy him. 7 But Iesus auoy-  
ded with his disciples to the sea: and a great  
multitude followed him from Galilee, and from  
Iudea, 8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idu-  
nea, and beyond Iordan: and they that dwelled  
about Tyrus and Sidon, when they had heard  
of what great things hee did, came vnto him in  
a great number. 9 And he commaunded his dis-  
ciples, that a little ship should waite for him,  
because of the multitude, lest they shoulde  
crowd him. 10 For he had healed many, in so  
much that they pressed vpon him, to touch  
him, as many as had plagues. 11 And when  
the vncleane spirits sawe him, they fell downe

# S. MARKE.

before him, and cryed, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God. 12 And hee sharply rebuked them, to the ende they should not vtter him.

*Chap.*

*6.7.*

*mat.*

*10.1.*

*luke*

*9.1.*

13 \*Then he went vp into a mountaine, and called vnto him whom he would, & they came vnto him. 14 And he appointed twelue that they should be with him, and that he might send them to preach. 15 And that they might haue power to heale sickneses, & to cast out deuils. 16 And the first was Simon, and he named Simon, Peter. 17 Then James the sonne of Zebedeus, & Iohn, James brother (and surnamed them Boanerges, which is, the sonnes of thunder) 18 And Andrewe, and Philippe, and Barlemewe, and Mattheu, and Thomas and James, the sonne of Alphaeus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananite. 19 And Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him, and they came home. 20 And the multitude assembled againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread. 21 And when his kinsfolkes heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him.

*Mat.*

*23.4.*

for they said y<sup>e</sup> he was beside himselfe. 22 \*And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, sayde, He hath Beelzebub, and through the prince of the deuils he casteth out deuils. 23 But he called them vnto him, and said vnto them in parables, Howe can Satan driue out Satan? 24 For if a kingdome be diuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand. 25 Or if a house be diuided against it selfe, that house cannot continue. 26 So if Satan make insurrection

gaine, &c. 4

## C H A P. IIII.

gainst himselfe, & be diuided, he cannot indure,  
 but is an at ende. 27 No man can enter into a  
 strong mans house, and take away his goods, ex-  
 cept he first bind that strong man, & then spoile  
 his house. 28 \* Verily I say vnto you, all sinnes *Mat.*  
 shall be forgien vnto the children of men, and 18.31.  
 blasphemies wherewith they blaspheme: 29 But  
 he that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, shall  
 neuer haue forgienesse, but is culpable of eter-  
 nall damnation. 30 Because they sayd, He had  
 an vnclane spirit. 31 \* Then came his brethren *Mat.*  
 and mother, and stood without, and sent vnto 12.46.  
 him, and called him. 32 And the people sate a *Luke*  
 bout him, and they sayd vnto him, Beholde, thy 8.19.  
 mother, and thy brethren seeke for thee with-  
 out. 33 But he answered them, saying, Who is  
 my mother and my brethren? 34 And he loo-  
 ked rounde about on them, which sate in com-  
 paffe about him, and sayd, Beholde my mother  
 and my brethren. 35 For who soeuer doeth the  
 will of God, he is my brother, and my sister, and  
 mother.

### C H A P. 4. 4. The parable of the sower.

AND \* he began againe to teach by the sea *Mat.*  
 side, & there gathered vnto him a great mul- 13. 1.  
 titude, so that he entred into a ship, and sate in *Luke*  
 the sea, and all the people was by the sea side on 8.4.  
 the land. 2 And he taught them many things  
 in parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine,  
 Hearken: Beholde, there went out a sower to  
 sowe. 4 And it came to passe as hee sowed, that

# S. M A R K E.

some fell by the way side, and the foules of the  
 heauen came, and deuoured it vp. 5 And some  
 fell on stony ground, where it had not much  
 earth, and by and by sprang vp, because it had  
 not deapth of earth. 6 But as soone as the  
 sunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and because it had  
 not roote, it withered away. 7 And some fell  
 among the thornes, and the thornes grewe vp,  
 and choked it, so that it gaue no fruite. 8 Some  
 againe fel in good ground, and did yeeld fruite  
 that sprung vp, and grew, and it brought forth,  
 some thirtie folde, some sixtie folde, and some an  
 hundreth folde. 9 Then he said vnto them, He  
 that hath eares to heare, let him heare. 10 And  
 when hee was alone, they that were about him  
 with the twelue, asked him of the parable.  
 11 And he said vnto them, To you it is giuen to  
 knowe the mysterie of the kingdome of Gods  
 but vnto them that are without, all things are  
 done in parables, 12 \* That they seeing, may  
 see, and not discerne: and they hearing, may  
 heare, and not vnderstand, lest at any time they  
 should turne, and their sinnes should be forgi-  
 uen them. 13 Again hee said vnto them, Per-  
 ceine ye not this parable? how then should wee  
 vnderstand all other parables. 14 The sower  
 soweth the word. 15 And these are they that  
 receiue the seede by the way side, in whome the  
 word is sown: but when they haue heard it, Sa-  
 tan commeth immediatly, and taketh away the  
 word that was sown in their hearts. 16 And  
 likewise

*Esai.*

*6.9.*

*mat.*

*13.14.*

*luke*

*8.10.*

*iohn*

*12.40.*

*actes*

*28.26.*

*rom.*

*11.8.*

# CHAP. IIIL.

likewise they that receiue the seede in stonie  
ground are they, which when they haue heard  
the word, straightwayes receiue it with glad-  
nesse. 17 Yet haue they no roote in themselues,  
and endure but a time: for when trouble and  
persecution ariseth for the word, immediatly  
they be offended. 18 Also they that receiue the  
seede among the thornes, are such as heare the  
word: 19 But the cares of this world, and the  
\*deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lusts of other  
things enter in and choke the word, and it is vn-  
fruitfull. 20 But they that haue receiued seede  
in good ground, are they that heare the word,  
and receiue it, and bring forth fruite: one com-  
eth thirtie, another sixtie, and some an hundredth.  
21 Also he said vnto them, \*Commeth the candle  
in, to bee put vnder a bushell, or vnder the bed,  
and not to be put on a candlesticke? 22 \* For  
there is nothing hid, that shall not bee opened:  
neither is there a secrete, but that it shall come  
to light. 23 If any man haue eares to heare, let  
him heare. 24 And hee sayd vnto them, Take  
heede what ye heare. \* With what measure yee  
mete, it shall bee measured vnto you: and vnto  
you that heare, shall more be giuen. 25 \* For  
vnto him that hath, shall it be giuen, and from  
him that hath not, shall be taken away euen that  
he hath. 26 Also he said, So is the kingdome of  
God, as if a man should cast seede in the ground,  
and should sleepe, and rise vp night and  
day, and the seede should spring and growe vp,

1. Tim

6. 17.

Mat

5. 15

Mat

10. 26

luke

8. 17

2. 13

2.

Mat

7. 2.

Mat

13. 12

and

25. 23

# S. M A R K E.

he not knowing howe. 28 For the earth bringeth foorth fruite of it selfe, first the blade, then the eares, after that full corne in the eares. 29 And as soone as the fruite sheweth it selfe, anon he putreth in the sickle, because the haruest

*Mat.* is come. 30 \* Hee said moreover, Whereunto  
13 31. shall wee liken the kingdome of God? or with  
*Luke* what comparison shall we compare it? 31 *It is*  
13.19. like a graine of mustard seede, which when it is sowed in the earth, is the least of all seedes that be in the earth: 32 But after that it is sowed, it groweth vp, and is greatest of all herbes: and beareth great branches, so that the fowles of heauen may build vnder the shadow of it. 33 And

*Mat.* \* with many such parables hee preached the  
13.34. word vnto them, as they were able to heare it. 34 And without parables spake he nothing vnto them: but he expounded all things to his disciples apart. 35 \* Now the same day, when euen

*Mat.* was come, he said vnto them, Let vs passe ouer  
8.23. vnto the other side. 36 And they left the multitude, and tooke him as he was in the shippe, and there were also with him other little ships. 37 And there arose a great storme of winde, and the waues dashed into the ship, so that it was now full 38 And hee was in the sterne asleepe on a pillowe: and they awoke him, and said to him. Master, carest thou not that wee perish? 39 And he rose vp, and rebuked the winde, and said vnto the sea, Peace, and be still. So the winde ceased, and it was a great calme. 40 Then  
*be*

## C H A P. V.

he said vnto them, Why are ye so fearefull? how  
is it that ye haue no faith? 41 And they feared  
exceedingly, and said one to another, Who is  
this, that both the winde and sea obey him?

C H A P. 5. 7. *The deuill acknowledgeth  
Christ.*

**A** Nd they came ouer to the other side of the *Mat.*  
sea into the countrey of the Gadarens. 8. 28.  
And when he was come out of the ship there *luke*  
met him incontinently out of the graues a man 8. 26.  
which had an vncleane spirit: 3 Who had his  
lodging among the graues, and no man could  
binde him, no not with chaines, 4 Because that  
when hee was often bounde with fetters and  
chaines, he plucked the chaines asunder, & brake  
the fetters in pieces, neither could any man  
maite him. 5 And alwayes both night and day  
he cryed in the mountaines, and in the graues,  
and strooke himselfe with stones. 6 And when  
he sawe Iesus afarre off, he ranne and worship-  
ped him, 7 And cryed with a loud voyce, and  
saide, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the  
sonne of the most high God? I will that thou  
heare to mee by God, that thou torment mee  
not. 8 (For he said vnto him. Come out of the  
thee, thou vncleane spirit) 9 And hee asked  
him, What is thy name? and he answered, say-  
ing, My name is Legion: for wee are many.  
And he prayed him instantly, that he would  
sende them away out of the countrey.  
So there was there in the mountaines a  
great



# S. M A R K E.

great herd of swine feeding. 12 And all the de-  
uils besought him, saying, Send vs into the swine  
that we may enter into them. 13 And incont-  
nently Iesus gaue them leaue. Then the vncleane  
spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and  
the herd ranne headlong from the high bank  
into the sea, ( and they were about two thousand  
and swine ) and they were choked vp in the sea.  
14 And the swineherds fledde, and tolde it  
the citie, and in the countrey, and they came  
to see what it was that was done. 15 And they  
came to Iesus, and saw him that had bene posses-  
sed with the deuill and had the Legion, sitte be-  
clothed, and in his right minde : and they were  
afraid. 16 And they that sawe it, tolde it  
what was done to him that was possessed with  
the deuill, and concerning the swine. 17 Then  
they began to pray him, that hee would depart  
from their coastes. 18 And when he was come  
into the shippe, he that had bene possessed  
with the deuill, prayed him that hee might bee  
with him. 19 Howbeit, Iesus would not suffer  
but sayde vnto him, Goe thy way home  
thy friendes, and shewe them what great  
things the Lorde hath done vnto thee, and  
howe hee hath had compassion on thee. 20  
And when he departed, and beganne to publish in  
Caesarea philis, what great things Iesus had done  
in him : and all men did maruaile. 21 And  
when Iesus was come ouer againe by shippe, vnto  
the other side, a great multitude gathered to-  
gether.

# C H A A. V.

him, and he was neere vnto the sea. 22 \* And *Mat.*  
holde, there came one of the rulers of the Sy. 9. 18.  
agogue, whose name was Iairus: : and when he *lute*  
saw him, he fell downe at his fecte, 23 And be- 8. 41.  
sought him instantly, saying, My litle daughter  
is at point of death: *I pray thee* that thou  
wouldest come and lay thine handes on her, that  
she may be healed, and liue. 24 Then he went  
with him, and a great multitude followed him,  
and thronged him. 25 ( And there was a cer-  
tain woman, which was diseased with an issue  
of blood twelue yeeres, 26 And had suffered  
many things of many Physicions, and had spene  
all that shee had, and it auayled her nothing, but  
shee became much worse. 27 When shee had  
heard of Iesus, she came in the preasse behinde,  
and touched his garment. 28 For shee saide,  
If I may but touche his clothes, I shalbe whole.  
And straightway the course of her blood  
was dried vp, and she felt in her body, that shee  
was healed of that plague. 30 And immediat-  
ly when Iesus did knowe in himselfe the vertue  
that went out of him, hee turned him round a-  
round in the preasse, and sayd, Who hath touched  
my clothes? 31 And his disciples said vnto him,  
Thou seest the multitude throng thee, and sauest  
none. 32 And he looked  
backe, and saw a woman, which was crouching  
vnder his feet, and shee came and  
told him the whole  
truth.

# S M A R K E.

eructh. 34 And he said to her, Daughter, thy  
faith hath made thee whole: goe in peace, and  
bee whole of thy plague). 35 While hee ye  
spake, there came frō the *same* ruler of the Syna  
gogues house *certaine* which said, Thy daugh  
ter is dead: why diseasest thou the Master any  
further? 36 As soone as Iesus heard that word  
spoken, he said vnto the ruler of the Synagoge  
Be not afraide: onely beleene. 37 And he fol  
lowed no man to followe him saue Peter and  
James, and Iohn the brother of Iames. 38 So  
he came vnto the house of the ruler of the Syna  
gogue, and saw the tumult, and them that wept  
and wailed greatly. 39 And hee went in, and  
said vnto them, Why make yee this trouble, and  
weepe? the childe is not dead, but sleepest.  
40 And they laught him to scorne: but hee per  
suaded them all out, and tooke the father, and the mo  
ther of the childe, and them that were with him,  
and entred in where the childe lay. 41 And he  
tooke the childe by the hand, and sayd vnto her  
Talitha cumi, which is by interpretatiō, Maide  
I say vnto thee, Arise. 42 And straightway the  
maiden arose and walked: for shee was of the  
age of twelue yeres, and they were astonied  
of measure. 43 And he charged them straitly  
that no man should know of it, and commanded  
to giue her meate.

CHAP. 6. *John imprisoned & beheaded*

Mat.  
13.54.

And he\* departed thence, and came into  
his owne countrey, and his disciples followe

## CHAP. VL

him. 2 And when the Sabbath was come, hee  
 beganne to teach in the Synagogue, and many  
 that heard him, were astonied, and sayd, From  
 whence hath this man these things! and what  
 wisdom is this that is giuen vnto him, that  
 when such great workes are done by his handes!  
 Is not this that carpenter, Maries sonne, the  
 brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda and Si-  
 mon? and are not his sisters here with vs? And  
 they were offended in him. 4 Then Iesus said  
 vnto them, A \* P ophet is not without honour, *Mat.*  
 but in his owne countrey, and among his owne *13.57.*  
 kindred, & in his owne house. 5 And he could *luke*  
 there doe no great workes, saue that he layd his *4.24.*  
 hands vpon a few sicke folke, and healed *them.*

And hee marueiled at their vnbeliefe, and  
 went about by the townes on euery side, tea- *Mat.*  
 ching. 7 \* And he called vnto him the twelue, *4.23.*  
 and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirites, *Chap.*  
 And commanded them, that they should take *3.14.*  
 nothing for *their* iourney, saue a staffe only: nei-  
 ther scrippe, neither bread, neither money in  
 their girdles: 9 But that they should be shod  
 with \* sandales, and that they should not put on *A.7s*  
 coats. 10 And he said vnto them, Where- *11.8.*  
 euer yee shall enter into an house, there abide *Mat.*  
 till ye depart thence. 11 \* And whosoever shal *10.14.*  
 receive you, nor heare you, when ye depart *Actes*  
 thence, \* shake off the dust that is vnder your *13.51.*  
 feet, for a witnesse vnto them. Verely I say vn- *and*  
 to you, it shall be easier for Sodome or Ga- *18.6.*

morrha

S. M A R K E.

morrha at the day of iudgement, then for the  
 citie. 12 And they went out, and preached  
 that men should amend their liues. 13 And  
*Jam.* they cast out many deuils: and they \* anointed  
 5.14. many that were sicke, with oyle, and healed  
*Mat.* them. 14 \* Then King Herod heard of him (for  
 14.1. his name was made manifest) and sayde, Iohn  
*Luke* Baptist is risen againe from the dead, and there  
 9.7. fore great workes are wrought by him. 15 O  
 ther said, It is Elias. And some said, It is a Pro  
*Luke* phet, or as one of those Prophets. 16 \* So  
 3.19. when Herod heard it, he said, It is Iohn whom  
 I beheaded: hee is risen from the dead. 17 For  
 Herod himselfe had sent forth, and had taken  
 Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias  
 sake, which was his brother Philips wife, be  
 cause he had married her. 18 For Iohn sayd vnto  
*Lewit.* to Herod, \* It is not lawfull for thee to haue  
 18.16. thy brothers wife. 19 Therefore Herodias  
 & 20. layde waite against him, and would haue killed  
 21. him, but shee could not: 20 For Herod feared  
 Iohn, knowing that hee was a iust man and  
 holy, and reuerenced him, and when hee heard  
 him, hee did many things, and heard him gladly.  
 21 But the time being conuenient, when Herod  
 on his birth day made a banquet to his Prince  
 and captaines, and chiefe estates of Galilee  
 22 And the daughter of the same Herodias  
 came in, and daunced, and pleased Herod, and  
 them that sate at table together, the King said vnto  
 to the mayde, Aske of me what thou wilt, and  
 I will giue it thee.

# CHAP. VI.

ill giue it thee. 23 And hee sware vnto her,  
Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of mee, I will giue  
thee, *euē* vnto the halfe of my kingdome.

\* So she went foorth, and saide to her mo- *Mat.*  
ther, What shall I aske? And she said, Iohn Bap- 14.8.

ts head. 25 Then shee came in straightway  
with haste vnto the King, and asked, saying, I  
would that thou shouldst giue me euē now in  
a charger the head of Iohn Baptist. 26 Then

the King was very sory: yet for his othes sake,  
and for their sakes which sate at table with him,

he would not refuse her. 27 And immediatly  
the King sent the hangman, and gaue charge that

his head should be brought in. So hee went and  
beheaded him in the prison, 28 And brought

his head in a charger, and gaue it to the mayde,  
and the mayde gaue it to her mother. 29 And

when his disciples heard it, they came and tooke  
his body, and put it in a tombe. 30 \* And the *Luke*

disciples gathered themselues together to Iesus, 9.10.

and tolde him all things, both what they had  
done, and what they had taught. 31 And hee

saide vnto them, Come ye apart into the wilder-  
nes, and rest a while: for there were many com-  
ers and goers, that they had not leasure to eat.

\* So they went by ship out of the way into *Mat.*  
desert place. 32 But the people sawe them 14.13.

when they departed, and many knewe him, and *luke*  
came afoote thither out of all cities, and came 9.10.

thither before them, and assembled vnto him. *Matt.*

\* Then Iesus went out, and saw a great mul- 9.36.  
titude,

# S. M A R K E.

itude, and had compassion on them, because they were like sheepe which had no shepheard.

*Luke* \* and hee beganne to teach them many things.

*5. 11.* 35 \* And when the day was now farre spent,

*Mat.* disciples came vnto him, saying, This is a desert

*14. 15.* place, and now the day is farre passed 36 Let

them depart that they may go into the countrey

and towne about, and buy them bread: for they

haue nothing to eate. 37 But hee answered

and sayd vnto them, Giue vee them to eate. And

they said vnto him, Shall wee goe and buy two

hundredth peniworth of bread, and giue them

*Mat.* to eate? 38 \* Then hee said vnto them, How

*14 17.* many loaves haue ye? go and looke. And when

*luke* they knewe it, they saide, Fiue, and two fishes.

*9. 13.* 39 So he commanded them to make them all sit

*10. 11.* fit downe by companies vpon the greene grass.

*6. 9.* 40 Then they sat downe by rowes, by hundreds,

and by fifties. 41 And hee tooke the five

loaves, and the two fishes, and looked vp to hea-

uen, and gaue thanks, and brake the loaves, and

gaue them to his disciples to set before them.

And the two fishes hee diuided among them also.

42 So they did all eate, and were satisfied.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of

the fragments, and of the fishes. 44 And the

that had eaten, were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway hee caused his disciples to

goe into the shippe, and to goe before vnto the

other side vnto Bethsaida, while hee sent

away the people. 45 Then as soone as hee had

## C H A P. VI.

ent them away, he departed into a mountaine  
 to pray. 47 \*And when euen was come, the *Mat.*  
 shippe was in the mids of the sea, and hee alone *14.23.*  
 on the land. 48 And he saw them troubled in  
 rowing (for the winde was contrary vnto  
 them) and about the fourth watch of the night,  
 he came vnto them walking vpon the sea, and  
 would haue passed by them. 49 And when  
 they sawe him walking vpon the sea, they sup-  
 posed it had bene a spirit, and cried out. 50 For  
 they all sawe him, and were sore afraid: but a-  
 soon he talked with them, and sayde vnto them,  
 be yee of good comfort: it is I, bee not afraide.  
 Then he went vp vnto them into the ship,  
 and the winde ceased, and they were much  
 more amased in themselves, and marueiled.  
 For they had not considered *the matter* of  
 the loaves, because their hearts were hardened.  
 \* And they came ouer, and went into the *Mat.*  
 of Gennefaret, and arrined. 54 So when *14.34*  
 they were come out of the shippe, straightway  
 they knew him, 55 And ranne about through-  
 out all that region round about, and began to ca-  
 lle him thither and thither in couches all that were  
 sicke, where they heard that hee was. 56 And  
 whithersoener he entred into townes, or ciies,  
 or villages, they layde their sicke in the streetes,  
 and prayed him that they might touch at the  
 least the edge of his garment And as many as  
 touched him, were made whole,

H

C H A P. .



# S. MARKE.

## CHAP. 7. 8. *(Of mens traditions)*

**Mat.** **15. 2.** **T**hen\* gathered vnto him the Pharises, and  
 certaine of the Scribes which came from  
 Hierusalem. 2 And when they sawe some of  
 his disciples eate meate with common handes  
 (that is to say, vnwashed) they complained.  
 3 (For the Pharises, and all the Iewes, except  
 they wash their handes oft, eate not, holding  
 the tradition of the Elders. 4 And when they  
 come from the market, except they wash, they  
 eate not: and many other things there be, which  
 they haue taken vpon them to obserue, as the  
 washing of cuppes, and pottes, and of braies  
 vessels, and of beedes.) 5 Then asked him the  
 Pharises and Scribes, Why walke not thy disci-  
 ples according to the tradition of the Elders,  
 but eate meat with vnwashed handes? 6 Then  
 he answered and sayd vnto them. Surely,\* El-  
**39. 14.** hath prophesied well of you, hypocrites as it is  
**Exo.** written, This people honoureth me with lip-  
**20. 12** but their heart is farre away from mee. 7 But  
**dent.** they worship me in vaine, teaching for doctrine  
**5. 14.** the commaundements of men. 8 For ye  
**ephes.** the commaundement of God apart, and obserue  
**6. 2.** the tradition of men, as the washing of pot-  
**Exod.** and of cuppes, and many other such like things  
**31. 17** ye doe. 9 And he said vnto them, Well ye  
**denit.** iest the commaundement of God that ye may  
**20. 9.** serue your owne tradition. 10 For Moses saith  
**from.** \*Honour thy father and thy mother: and \*W<sup>h</sup>  
**20. 20.** soener shall speake euill of father or mother

## C H A P. VII.

et him die the death. 11 But ye say, If a man  
 say to father or mother, Corban, *that is*, By the  
 gift that is offered by me thou mayest haue pro-  
 pitiousness, *he shalbe free.* 12 So ye suffer him no more  
 to doe any thing for his father, or his mother,  
 Making the word of God of none authori-  
 ty, by your tradition which ye haue ordained:  
 and ye do many such like things. 14 \*Then he *Matt.*  
 called the whole multitude vnto him, and sayde *15. 10.*  
 vnto them, Hearken you all vnto me, and vnder-  
 stand. 15 There is nothing without a man, that  
 can defile him, when it entreth into him: but the  
 things which proceed out of him, are they which  
 defile the man. 16 If any haue eares to heare,  
 let him heare. 17 And when hee came into an  
 house, away from the people, his disciples asked  
 him concerning the parable. 18 And he sayde  
 vnto them, What? are yee without vnderstan-  
 ding also? Doe yee not know that whatsoeuer  
 entereth from without entreth into a man, can not  
 defile him, 19 Because it entreth not into his  
 heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the  
 draught, which is the purging of all meates?  
 Then he saide, That which commeth out of  
 the heart, that defileth man. 21 \*For from within, *Gene.*  
 proceed out of the heart of men proceede euill *6. 5.*  
 thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, *and 8.*  
 Theftes, couetousnes, wickednes, deceit, vn- *21.*  
 derstandinges, a wicked eie, backbiting, pride, foolish-  
 nes. 22 All these euill things come from within, *Matt.*  
 and defile a man, 24 \* And from thence he *15. 23.*

# S. M A R K E.

rose, and went into the borders of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would that no man should haue knowen: but he could not be hid. 25 For a certaine woman, whose liue daughter had an vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feete, 26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a Syrophenissian by nation) and shee besought him that hee would cast out the deuill out of her daughter. 27 But Iesus sayd vnto her, Let the children first be feede: for it is not good to take the childrens bread, and to cast it vnto whelpes. 28 Then she answered, and said vnto him, Trueth, Lord: yet indeed the whelpes eat vnder the table of the childrens crunnies. 29 Then hee said vnto her, for this saying goe thy way: the deuill is gone out of thy daughter. 30 And when shee was come home to her house, she found the deuill departed, and her daughter lying on the bed. 31 And he departed againe from the coastes of Tyrus and Sidon, and came vnto the sea of Galilee, through the middes of the coasts of Decapolis. 32 And they brought vnto him one that was deafe, and stambred in his speech, and prayd him to put his hand vpon him. 33 Then he tooke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers in his eares, and did spit, and touched his tongue. 34 And looking vp to heauen, he sighed, and said vnto him, Ephphatha, that is, opened. 35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed.

## C H A P. VIII:

and he spake plaine. 36 And he commanded them, that they shoulde tell no man: but howe much soeuer he forbade them. the more a great deale they published it, 37 And were beyond measure astonied, saying, \* He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumme to speake. Gene. 1. 31. eccles. 35. 26

C H A P. 8. 1. *The miracle of the seuen loanes.*

IN those \* dayes when there was a very great multitude, & had nothing to eate, Iesus called his disciples to him, and said vnto them, 2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue now continued with mee three dayes and haue nothing to eate. 3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne houses, they would faint by the way: for some of them came from farre. 4 Then his disciples answered him, Whence can a man satisfie these with bread here in the wilderness? 5 And he asked them, Howe many loanes haue yee? And they saide, seuen. 6 Then he commaunded the multitude to sitte downe on the ground: and he tooke the seuen loanes, and gaue thanks, brake *them*, and gaue to his disciples to set before *them* and they did set *them* before the people 7 They had also a fewe small fishes: and when hee had giuen thanks, he commaunded them also to be set before *them*. 8 So they did eate, and were sufficed and they tooke vp of the broken meat that was left, seuen baskets full. 9 (And they that had eaten were about foure thousande) so hee

# S. M A R K E.

*Matth.* sent them away. 10 \* And anon he entred into a  
 35.39. ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of  
*Matth.* Dalmanutha. 11 \* And the Pharises came forth,  
 36. 1. and began to dispute with him, seeking of him a  
 signe from heauen and tempting him 12 Then  
 he sighed deeply in his spirit, and sayd, Why  
 doth this generation seeke a signe? Verely I say  
 vnto you, a signe shall not be giuen vnto this ge-  
 neration. 13 So he left them, and went into the  
 shippe againe, and departed to the other side.

*Matth.* 14 \* And they had forgotten to take bread, nei-  
 36. 5. ther had they in the shippe with them, but one  
 loafe. 15 And hee charged them, saying, Take  
 heede and beware of the leauen of the Pharises,  
 and of the leauen of Herod. 16 And they rea-  
 soned among themselues, saying, *For* because  
 we haue no bread. 17 And when Iesus knew  
 it, hee said vnto them Why reason ye *this*, be-  
 cause ye haue no bread perceiue ye not yet, nei-  
 ther vnderstande haue ye yet your hearts yet harde-  
 ned? 18 Haue ye eyes, and see not? and haue ye  
 eares, and heare not? and doe ye not remember?

*John*  
 6. 21. 19 \* When I brake the five loaves among five  
 thousand, how many baskets full of broken meate  
 tooke yee vp? They sayd vnto him, Twelue.  
 20 And when I brake seuen a nong foure thou-  
 sand, how many baskets of the leauings of bro-  
 ken meate tooke ye vp? And they sayd, Seuen.  
 21 Then he said vnto them, How is it that ye vnder-  
 stand not? 22 And he came to Bethsaida, and  
 they brought a blinde man vnto him, and desired

# CHAP. VIII.

him to touch him. 23 Then he tooke the blinde by the hand, and led him out of the towne, and set in his eyes, and put his handes vpon him, and asked him, if he saw ought. 24 And he looked vp, and said, I see men: for I feele them walking like trees. 25 After that, he put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him look againe. And he was restored to his sight, and saw every man a farre off cleerly. 26 And he sent him home to his house, saying, Neither goe into the town, nor tell it to any in the town. 27 And *Matt.* Jesus went out, and his disciples into the townes *16.13.* of Cesarea Philippi. And by the way hee asked *luke* his disciples, saying vnto them, Whom doe men *9.18.* say that I am? 28 And they answered, *Some say,* John Baptist; and some, Elias: and some, One of the Prophets. 29 And he said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? Then Peter answered, and said vnto him, Thou art that Christ. 30 And he sharply charged them, that concerning him they should tell no man. 31 Then hee beganne to teach them, that the sonne of man must suffer many things, and should be reprocued of the Elders, and of the hie Priests, and of the Scribes, and be slaine, and within three dayes rise againe. 32 And he spake that thing boldly. Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him. 33 Then he turned backe, and looked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satana: for thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of

# S. M A R K E.

men. 34 And hee called the people vnto him  
**Mat.** with his disciples, and sayd vnto them, \* Who  
 10.38. soeuer will follow me, let him forsake him selfe  
 and take vp his crosse and follow me. 35 For  
**Mat.** whosoever \* will saue his life, shall lose it: but  
 10.39. whosoever shall lose his life for my seke and the  
 Gospels, hee shall saue it. 36 For what shall  
 profit a man, though hee should win the whole  
 world, if hee loose his soule? 37 Or what ex-  
**Mat.** change shall a man giue for his soule? 38 \* For  
 10.33. whosoever shall be ashamed of mee, and of my  
**Luk.** 9. words among this adulterous and sinfull gene-  
 36. 7. ration, of him shall the Sonne of man be asha-  
 32. 9. med also, when he commeth in the glory of his  
 Father with the holy Angels.

## CHAP. 9. 2 *Christes transfiguration.*

**Mat.** **A**ND he \* said vnto them, Verely I say vnto  
 16.28. you, that there be some of them that stand  
**Luk.** 9. here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue  
 27. seene the kingdome of God come with power.  
**Mat.** 2 \* And sixe dayes after, Iesus taketh vnto him  
 17. 1. Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and carrieth them  
**Luke** into an hie mountaine out of the way alone, and  
 9. 28. his shape was changed before them. 3 And his  
 raiment did shine, and was very white, as snowe,  
 so white as no fuller can make vpon the earth.  
 4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with  
 Moses, and they were talking with Iesus. 5 Then  
 Peter answered and sayd to Iesus, Master, it  
 good for vs to be heere: let vs make also three  
 Tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses,

# CHAP. IX.

and one for Elias. 6 Yet he knew not what he  
 sayd: for they were afraid. 7 And there was  
 a cloud that shadowed them, and a voyce came  
 out of the cloud, saying, \* This is my beloued *Mat.*  
 Sonne: heare him. 8 And suddenly they loo- *3.17.*  
 ked round about, & saw no more any man saue  
 Iesus onely with them. 9 \* And as they came *Mat.*  
 downe from the mountaine, hee charged them *17.9.*  
 that they should tell no man what they had  
 seene, saue when the Sonne of man were risen  
 from the dead againe. 10 So they kept that  
 matter to themselves, and demanded one of an-  
 other, what the rising from the dead againe  
 should meane. 11 Also they asked him saying,  
 Why say the Scribes, that \* Elias must first come? *Mal.*  
 12 And he answered, and sayd vnto them, Elias *4.5.*  
 surely shall first come, and restore all things:  
 and as it is written of the Sonne of man, hee *Esa.*  
 must suffer many things, and bee set at nought. *53.4.*  
 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come (and  
 they haue done vnto him whatsoener they  
 would) as it is written of him. 14 \* And when *Mat.*  
 he came to his disciples, hee saw a great multi- *17.14.*  
 tude about them, and the Scribes disputing with *luke*  
 them. 15 And straightway all the people, when *9.38.*  
 they beheld him, were amazed, and ran to him,  
 and saluted him. 16 Then he asked the Scribes,  
 What dispute you among your selues? 17 And  
 one of the companie answered, and sayd, Ma-  
 ster, I haue brought my sonne vnto thee, which  
 hath a dumbe spirit: 18 And wheresoeuer hee  
 taketh



# S. M A R K E.

taketh him, he teareth him, and hee fometh, and  
 gna beth his teeth, and pineth away : and I spake  
 to thy disciples that they should cast him out,  
 and they could not. 19 Then hee answered  
 him, and sayd, O faithlesse generation, howe  
 long now shall I be with you ! howe long now  
 shall I suffer you ! Bring him vnto me. 20 So  
 they brought him vnto him : and as soone as the  
 spirit sawe him, he tare him, and he fell downe  
 on the ground, wallowing and foming. 21 Then  
 he asked his father, Howe long time is it, since  
 he hath bene thus ? And hee sayde, Of a child  
 22 And oft times hee casteth him into the fire,  
 and into the water to destroy him : but if thou  
 canst doe any thing helpe vs, and haue com-  
 passion vpon vs. 23 And Iesus sayd vnto him,  
 If thou canst belecue it, all things are possible  
 to him that beleeueth. 24 And straightway the  
 father of the childe crying with teares sayd  
 Lorde, I beleue : helpe mine vnbeliefe. 25  
 When Iesus sawe that the people came run-  
 ning together, hee rebuked the vncleane spirit,  
 saying vnto him, Thou damne and deafe spirit,  
 I charge thee, come out of him, and enter  
 more into him. 26 Then the spirit cryed, and  
 rent him sore, and came out, and hee was as  
 dead, in so much that many sayd, He is de-  
 27 But Iesus tooke his hand and lift him  
 and he arose. 28 And when he was come in  
 the house, his disciples asked him secretly, Why  
 could not we cast him out ? 29 And Iesus

## C H A P : IX.

to them, This kinde can by no other meanes  
 be forth, but by prayer, and fasting. 30 \* And *Mat.*  
 they departed thence, & went together through *17 22.*  
 Galilee, and he would not that any should haue *luke*  
 knowen it. 31 For he taught his disciples, and *9. 22.*  
 said vnto them, The Sonne of man shall be de-  
 livered into the handes of men, and they shall  
 kill him, but after that hee is killed, he shall rise  
 againe the third day. 32 But they vnderstood  
 not that saying, and were afraide to aske him.  
 \* After, he came to Capernaum: and when *Mat.*  
 he was in the house, he asked them, What was *18 1.*  
 that yee disputed among you by the way? *luke*  
 And they held their peace: for by the way *9 46.*  
 they reasoned among themselves, who should be  
 the chiefest. 35 And he sate downe, and called  
 vnto him the twelve, and sayd to them, If any man desire  
 to be first, the same shall be last of all, and ser-  
 vant vnto all. 36 And he tooke a little childe,  
 and set him in the middes of them, and tooke  
 him in his armes, and said vnto them, 37 Who-  
 soeuer shall receiue one of such little children  
 in my Name, receiveth mee: and whosoever re-  
 ceiveth me, receiveth not mee, but him that sent  
 me. 38 \* Then Iohn answered him, saying, *Luke*  
 after, wee saw one casting out devils by thy *9. 49.*  
 Name which followeth not vs, and we forbade  
 him, because he followeth vs not. 39 \* But Ie- *1. Cor.*  
 sayde, Forbid him not: for there is no man *12. 3.*  
 that can doe a miracle by my Name, that can  
 openly speake euill of me. 40 For whosoever  
 is

# S. M A R K E.

- Mat.* is not against vs, is on our part. 41 \* And who  
 10.42. soeuer shall giue you a cup of water to drinke  
 for my Names sake, because ye belong to Christ  
 verely I say vnto you, hee shall not lose his re-  
*Mat.* ward. 42 \* And whosoever shall offend one of  
 18.6. these litle ones, that beleue in me, it were bet-  
*Luk.* 17 ter for him rather, that a millstone were hange  
 1.2. about his necke, and that he were cast into the  
*Mat.* sea. 43 \* Wherefore if thine hand cause thee  
 5.29. to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter  
 into life maimed, then hauing two hands to goe  
 into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quen-  
*Jsa.* ched, 44 \* Where their worme dieth not, and  
 66.24. the fire neuer goeth out. 45 Likewise, if the  
 foote cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better  
 for thee to goe halt into life, then hauing two  
 feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that neuer  
 shall be quenched, 46 Where their worme dieth  
 not, and the fire neuer goeth out. 47 And if  
 if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out:  
 it is better for thee to goe into the kingdome of  
 God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be  
 cast into hell fire, 48 Where their worme dieth  
 not, and the fire neuer goeth out. 49 For  
 euery man shall be salted with fire: \* and euery  
*Lewit.* sacrifice shall be salted with salt. 50 \* Salt is  
 2.13. good: but if the salt bee vnseuerie, wherewith  
*Mat.* shall it be seasoned? haue salt in your selues, that  
 5.13. haue peace one with another.

CHAP. 10. 2 Of diuorcement. 17 To follow  
 all and follow Christ. 46 Blinde Bartimeus

## C H A P. X.

**A**Nd he<sup>v</sup> arose from thence and went into the *Mat.*  
 coasts of Iudea by the farre side of Iordan, *19.1.*  
 and the people resorted vnto him againe, and as  
 he was wont, he taught them againe. 2 Then  
 the Pharises came and asked him, if it were law-  
 full for a man to put away *his* wife, and temp-  
 t him. 3 And hee answered, and saide vnto  
 them, \* What did Moses command you? 4 And *Deut,*  
 they sayde, Moses suffered to write a bill of di- *24.1.*  
 vorcement, and to put her away. 5 Then Iesus  
 answered, and said vnto them, For the hardnesse  
 of your heart hee wrote this precept vnto you.  
 But at the beginning of the creation, \* God *Gene.*  
 made them male and female. 7 \* For this cause *1.27.*  
 shall man leaue his father & mother, and cleaue *Gene.*  
 vnto his wife, 8 And they twaine shall be one *2.24.*  
 flesh: so that they are no more twaine, but one  
 flesh. 9 \* Therefore, what God hath coupled *1. Cor.*  
 together, let not man separate. 10 And in the *7.10.*  
 house his disciples asked him againe of that mat-  
 ter. 11 And hee said vnto them, \* Whosoever *Mat.*  
 shall put away his wife, & marrie another, com- *5.32.*  
 mitteth adulterie against her. 12 And if a wo-  
 man put away her husband, and be married to  
 another, shee committeth adulterie 13 \* Then *Mat.*  
 they brought litle children to him, that he should *19.13.*  
 touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that  
 brought them. 14 But when Iesus saw it, hee  
 was displeased, and sayd to them, Suffer the litle  
 children to come vnto mee, and forbid them  
 not: for of such is the kingdome of God.  
15 Verely

# S. M A R K E.

15 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoever shall receiue the kingdome of God as a little childe, he shall not enter therein. 16 And hee tooke them vp in his armes, and put ~~his~~ handes vpon them, and blessed them. 17 And when he was

*Mat.* gone out on the way, there came one \* running, 19.16. and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good master, what shall I doe, that I may possesse eternal life? 18 Iesus said to him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, euen God.

*Exod.* 19 Thou knowest the commandements, \* *10.* 13. Thou shalt not commit adulterie. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not steale. Thou shalt not beare false witness. Thou shalt hurt no man. Honour thy father and mother. 20 Then he answered, and sayd to him, Master, all these things I haue obserued from my youth. 21 And Iesus looked vpon him, and loued him, and sayd vnto him, One thing is lacking vnto thee. Goe, and sell all that thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, follow me, and take vp the crosse. 22 But he was sadde at that saying, and went away sorowfull: for he had great possessions. 23 And Iesus looked round about, and sayde vnto his disciples, How hardly doe they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God! 24 And his disciples were afraid at his words. But Iesus answered againe, and said vnto them, Children how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God! 25 It is easier for a camell to

# C H A P. X.

1. thorough the eye of a needle, then for a rich  
 man to enter into the kingdome of God.  
 2. And they were much more astonied, saying  
 with themselves, Who then can bee saved?  
 3. But Iesus looked vpon them, and sayd, With  
 men it is impossible, but not with God: for  
 with God all things are possible. 28 \* Then *Matt.*  
 Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, we haue for- 19.27.  
 saken all, and haue followed thee. 29. Iesus an- *luke*  
 swered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, there is 18.28.  
 no man that hath forsaken house, or brethren,  
 or sisters or father, or mother or wife, or chil-  
 dren, or landes for my sake and the Gospels,  
 30. But he shall receiue an hundred folde, now  
 in this present, house, and brethren, and sisters,  
 and mothers, and children, and lands with per-  
 secutions, and in the worlde to come, eternall  
 life. 31 \* But many that are first, shalbe last, and *Matt.*  
 the last, first. 32 \* And they were in the way go- 19.30.  
 ing vp to Hierusalem, and Iesus went before *luke*  
 them, and they were troubled, & as they follow- 13.30.  
 ed, they were aslepid, and Iesus tooke the twelue *Matt.*  
 againe & began to tel them what things should 20.17.  
 come vnto him, 33. Saying, Behold, we go vp to *luke*  
 Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shalbe deli- 18.34.  
 uered vnto the hie Priests, and to the Scribes,  
 and they shall condemne him to death and shall  
 deliver him to the Gentiles. 34 And they shall  
 smocke him, and scourge him, and spit vpon him,  
 and kill him: but y third day he shall rise againe. *Mat.*  
 \* Then James & Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus 20.20.  
 came

S. M A R K E.

came vnto him, saying, Master, wee would that thou shouldest doe for vs that that wee desire  
 36 And hee sayd vnto them, What would ye should doe for you? 37 And they sayd to him, Graunt vnto vs, that wee may sit . one at the right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy glory. 38 But Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye know not what ye aske : Can yee drinke of the cuppe that I shall drinke of, and bee baptized with the baptisme that I shall bee baptized with? 39 And they sayd vnto him, We can. But Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye shall drinke in deede of the cuppe that I shall drinke of, and bee baptized with the baptisme wherewith I shalbe baptized. 40 But to sit at my right hand and at my left, is not mine to giue, but it shall be giuen to them for whom it is prepared. 41 And when they had heard that, they began to disdaine at Iames and Iohn. 42 But Iesus called them vnto him, and sayd to them, \* Yee knowe that they which are princes among the Gentiles haue dominatie ouer them, and they that be great among them exercise authoritie ouer them. 43 But it shall not be so among you : but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your seruant. 44 And whosoever will be chiefe of you, shall be the seruant of all. 45 For euen the Sonne of man came not to be serued, but to serue, and to giue his life for the ransome of many. 46 \* In the same day they came to Iericho : and as hee went out of Iericho with his disciples, & a great multitude,

Luke.

23.25.

Mat.

20.29.

Luke

18.35.

Bartim

## C H A P. XI.

rtiments the sonne of Timeus, a blinde man,  
 e by the wayes side begging 47 And when  
 heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, he began  
 cry, and to say, Iesus the Sonne of David, haue  
 ercie on me. 48 And many rebuked him, be-  
 use he should hold his peace : but he cryed  
 uch more, O Sonne of David haue mercie on  
 e. 49 Then Iesus stood still and commanded  
 n to be called; and they called the blind, say-  
 vnto him, Be of good comfort : arise, he cal-  
 thee. 50 So he threw away his cloke, and  
 e, and came to Iesus. 51 And Iesus answered,  
 d said vnto him, What wilt thou that I doe  
 o thee? And the blinde said vnto him, Lorde,  
 t I may receiue sight. 52 Then Iesus said vn-  
 him, Goe thy way : thy faith hath saued thee.  
 d by and by he receiued his sight, & followed  
 us in the way.

CH A P. XII. 29. *The force of faith.*

Nd when they came neere to Hierusalem, Mat.  
 to Bethphage and Bethania vnto the mount 21.1.  
 Olives, hee sent forth two of his disciples, luke  
 And sayde vnto them, Goe your wayes into 18.29.  
 et owne that is ouer against you, & as soone  
 ee shall enter into it, yee shall finde a colte  
 d, whereon neuer man late : loose him, and  
 gh him. And if any man say vnto you, Why  
 yee thus? Say that the Lorde hath neede of  
 and straightway hee will send him hither.  
 and they went their way, and found a colte  
 by the doore without, in a place where



# S. MARKE.

two wayes met and they loosed him. 4 The  
certaine of them that stood there, sayde vnto  
them, What doe ye loosing the colt? 5 And  
they sayd vnto them, as Iesus had commande  
*John* them: So they let them goe. 7 \* And the  
22.14. brought the colte to Iesus, and cast their gar  
ments on him, and he sate vpon him. 8 And  
many spred their garments in y way: others  
dowre branches of the trees, and strawed them  
in the way. 9 And they that went before, and  
they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna  
Blessed be he that cometh in the Name of the  
Lord. 10 Blessed be the kingdome that cometh  
in the Name of the Lord of our fathers  
David: Hosanna, *O thou which art in the high  
est heauens.* 11 \* So Iesus entred into Hieru  
*Mat.* lem, and into the Temple: and when hee  
21.10. looked about on all things, and now euen  
ing, he went forth vnto Bethania with  
twelue. 12 \* And on the morow when  
*Mat.* they were come out from Bethania, he was hang  
21.19. 13 And seeing a figge tree as farre off, that  
haue leaues, he went to see if he might finde any  
thereon: but when he came vnto it, he founde  
thing but leaues: for the time of figges was  
yet. 14 Then Iesus answered, & said to it,  
uer man eate fruite of thee hereafter while  
the world standeth: & his disciples heard it. 15  
they came to Hierusalem, and Iesus went  
into the temple, and began to cast out them that  
sold and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrowe

# CHAP. XI.

les of the money changers, and the seates of  
 m that sold doves. 16 Neither would hee  
 ter that any man should cary a vessel through  
 e Temple. 17 And hee taught, saying vnto  
 m, Is it not written, \* Mine house shalbe cal- *Iſai.*  
 the house of prayer vnto all nations? \* but *567.*  
 have made it a denne of theenes. 18 And *Iere.*  
 Scribes and hie Priestes heard it, and sought *7.11.*  
 ve to destroy him: for they feared him, be-  
 se the whole multitude was astonished at his  
 strine. 19 But when euen was come, *Iesus*  
 nt out of the citie. 20 \* And in the morning *Matt.*  
 they journeyed together, they sawe the figge *21.19.*  
 e dried vp from the rootes. 21 Then Peter  
 mbered, and said vnto him, Master, beholde,  
 figge tree which thou cursedst is withered.  
 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them,  
 he the faith of God. 22 For verily I say vn-  
 you, that whosoever shal say vnto this moun-  
 e, Bee thou taken away, and cast into the sea,  
 shall not wauer in his heart, but shall be-  
 ne that those things which hee saith, shall  
 e to passe, whatsoever he saith, shall be done  
 in. 23 \* Therefore I say vnto you, what-  
 er ye desire when ye pray, beleene that ye  
 haue it, and it shalbe done vnto you. 24 \* But  
 ye shall stand and pray, forgive, if ye haue  
 thing against any man, that your Father al-  
 which is in heauen may forgive you your  
 passes. 25 For if you wil not forgive, your  
 er which is in heauen, will not pardon you  
 your

# S M A R K E.

**Mat.** your trespasses 27 \* Then they came againe  
**21. 23** to Hierusalem: and as he walked in the Temple,  
**Luke** there came to him the hie Priests, and y<sup>e</sup> Scribes,  
**20. 1.** and the Elders, 28 And said vnto him, By what  
 authoritie dost thou these things? and who  
 gaue thee this authoritie, that thou shouldst  
 doe these things? 29 Then Iesus answered, and  
 said vnto them, I will also aske of you a certaine  
 thing, and answere ye me, and I will tell you by  
 what authoritie I doe these things. 30 The Bap-  
 tisme of Iohn was it from heauen, or of men  
 answere me. 31 and they thought with them-  
 selues, saying, If we shal say from heauen he wil  
 say, Why then did ye not beleue him? 32 But  
 we say of men, we feare the people: for all men  
 counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet in deede.  
 33 Then they answered, and saide vnto Iesus  
 We cannot tell. And Iesus answered, and said  
 vnto them, Neither will I tell you by what au-  
 thoritie I doe these things.

## CHAP. 12. 11. Of the vineyard.

**1/ai.** **5. 1.** **A**ND he began to speake vnto them in par-  
 ables, \* A certaine man planted a vineyard  
 and compassed it with an hedge and digged  
 pit for the winepresse, and built a towre  
 and let it out to husbandmen, and went into  
 strange countrey. 2 And at the time he sent  
 the husbandmen a seruant, that he might receiue  
 of the husbandmen of the fruite of the vine-  
 yard. 3 But they tooke him, and beate him  
 and sent him away empty. 4 And againe

## C H A P. XII.

ut vnto them another seruant, and at him they  
 st stones, and brake his head, & sent him away  
 amelessly handled. 5 And againe he sent ano-  
 er, and him they slewe, and many other, bea-  
 ng some, and killing some. 6 Yet had he one  
 onne, his deare beloued. him also hee sent the  
 st vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my  
 onne. 7 But the husbandmen said among them-  
 lues, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him,  
 and the inheritance shall bee ours. 8 So they  
 oke him, and killed him, and cast him out of  
 e vineyard. 9 What shall then the Lord of  
 e vineyard doe? Hee will come and destroy  
 ese husbandmen, and giue the vineyarde to o-  
 ers. 10 Haue ye not read so much as this  
 cripture? The stone which the builders did *Psal.*  
 use, is made the head of the corner. 11 This *118.22*  
 as done of the Lorde, and it is marueilous in *isr.*  
 eyes. 12 Then they went about to take *28.16*  
 m, but they feared the people: for they per- *mat.*  
 ued that he spake that parable against them: *21.42*  
 erefore they left him, and went their way.  
 \*And they sent vnto him certaine of the Pha- *Mat.*  
 es, and of the Herodians that they might take *22.15*  
 m in *hu* talke. 14 And when they came, they *luke*  
 ide vnto him, Master, we knowe that thou art *20.20*  
 he and carest for no man: for thou considerest  
 the person of men, but teachest the way of  
 and truely. Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Ce-  
 s, or not? 15 Should wee giue it, or shoulde  
 e not giue it? But he knewe their hypocrisie,

# S. M A R K E.

and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring  
me a peny, that I may see it. 16 So they brought  
it, and he sayd vnto them, Whose is this image  
and superscription? and they said vnto him, Ce-  
sars. 17 Then Iesus answered, and sayde vnto  
*Rom.* them, \* Giue to Cesar the things that are Cesars  
13. 7. and to God, those that are Gods, and they mar-  
*Mat.* uelled at him. 18 \* Then came the Sadducees  
21. 23. ces vnto him, (which say there is no resurrection)  
*Dent.* on) and they asked him, saying, 19 Master, \* Mo-  
25. 5 ses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, and  
*mat.* leaue his wife, and leaue no children, that his  
22. 34. brother should take his wife, and raise vp seed  
vnto his brother. 20 There were seuen brethren,  
and the first tooke a wife, and when he  
died, left no issue. 21 Then the second tooke  
her, and he died, neither did he yet leaue issue:  
and the third likewise. 22 So those seuen had  
her, and left no issue: last of all the wife died  
also. 23 In the resurrection then, when they shall  
rise againe, whose wife shall she be of the seuen?  
seuen had her to wife. 24 Then Iesus answered,  
red, and said vnto them, Are ye not therefore  
deceiued, because ye knowe not the Scriptures,  
neither the power of God? 25 For when they shall  
rise againe from the dead, neither marry, nor  
marrie, nor wiues are married but are as the  
Angels which are in heauen. 26 And as touching  
the dead, that they shall rise againe, haue ye not  
*Exod.* read in the booke of Moses, howe in the bush  
3. 6. God spake vnto him, saying, \* I am the God of  
Abraham

# C H A P. XII.

abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of  
 Jacob? 27 God is not the God of the dead, but  
 of the living. Ye are therefore greatly deceived.  
 28 \* Then came one of the Scribes that had heard *Mat.*  
 them disputing together, and perceiuing that he *22.35*  
 had answered them well, hee asked him which  
 is the first commandment of all? 29 Iesus an-  
 swered him, The first of all the commandments  
 is, \* Heare, Israel The Lord our God is the onely *Deut.*  
 Lord. 30 Thou shalt therefore loue the Lord *6.4.*  
 thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy  
 soule, and with all thy minde, and will all thy  
 strength: this is the first commandment. 31 And  
 the second is like, that is, \* Thou shalt loue thy *Leuit.*  
 neighbour as thy selfe, There is none other com- *19.18.*  
 mandement greater then these. 32 Then that *Mat.*  
 Scribe said vnto him, Well master, thou hast said *22.39.*  
 the truth, that there is one God, and that there *10.10.*  
 is none but hee, 33 And to loue him with all *13.9.*  
 the heart, and with all the vnderstanding, and *Gal.5.*  
 with all the soule and with all the strength, and *14.*  
 to loue his neighbour as himselfe, is more then *1am.*  
 all whole burnt offerings & sacrifices. 34 Then *2.8.*  
 when Iesus sawe that hee answered discretely,  
 hee said vnto him, Thou art not farre from the  
 Kingdome of God. And no man after that durst  
 aske him any question. 35 \* And Iesus answe- *Mat.*  
 red and said teaching in the Temple, How say *22.41.*  
 the Scribes, that Christ is the Sonne of Dauid?  
 36 For Dauid himselfe said by the holy Ghost, *Psal.*  
 \* The Lord saide to my Lord, Sit at my right *110.1.*  
 hand

## S. M A R K E.

hand, till I make thine enemies thy foote stooles.

37 Then David himselfe calleth him Lord: by what meanes is hee then his sonne? And much

*Matt.* people heard him gladly. 38 \* Moreouer hee

*23. 6.* said vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the  
*Luke* Scribes which loue to goe in long robes, & long

*11. 43.* salutations in the markets, 39 And the chiefe  
*and* seates in the Synagogues, and the first roomes at

*20. 43.* feastes, 40 Which \* deuoure widowes houses,  
euen vnder a colour of long prayers. These shall

*Mat.* receiue the great damnation. 41 \* And as he

*23. 24.* sat ouer against the treasure, hee beheld

*Luke* howe the people cast money into the treasure,

*21. 1.* and many rich men cast in much. 42 And there

came a certaine poore widowe, and she threwe

in two mites which make a quadrin. 43 Then

hee called vnto him his disciples, and saide vnto

them, Verely I say vnto you, that this poore wi-

dowe hath cast more in, then all they which

haue cast into the treasure. 44 For they all

did cast in of their superfluitie: but she of her

pouertie did cast in all that she had, *euen* all her

liuing.

### CHAP. 13. 5. *Signes of the last day.*

*Matt.* And \* as he went out of the Temple, one of

*24. 1.* his disciples said vnto him, Master, see what

maner stones, & what maner buildings are here.

*Luke* 2 \* Then Iesus answered, and said vnto him, See-

*19. 43.* est thou these great buildings? there shall not be

left one stone vpon a stone, that shall not bee

throwen downe. 3 And as he sat on the mount

## C H A P. XII.

Of Olives, ouer against the Temple, Peter, and  
 James, and Iohn, & Andrew asked him secretly,  
 Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what  
 shall be the signe when all these things shall bee  
 fulfilled? 5 And Iesus answered them, and be-  
 ganne to say, \* Take heede least any man de- *Ephe.*  
 ceive you. 6 For many shall come in my name, 5.6.  
 saying, I am *(hrist)*, and shall deceiue many. 2 *thess.*  
 Furthermore when ye shall heare of warres, 2.3.  
 and rumors of warres, be ye not troubled: for  
*these things* must needs be: but the end *shal* not  
 yet. 8 For nation shall rise against nation,  
 and kingdome against kingdome, and there shall  
 be earthquakes in diuers quarters, and there shall  
 be famine & troubles: these *are* the beginnings  
 of sorowes. 9 But take ye heede to your selues:  
 for they shall deliuer you vp to the councils,  
 and to the Synagogues: ye shall be beaten, and  
 sought before rulers & Kings for my sake, for  
 a testimoniall vnto them. 10 And the Gospel  
 shall first be published among al nations. 11 \*But *Matt.*  
 when they leade you, and deliuer you vp, be not *10.19.*  
 careful before hand, neither studie what ye shall *luke*  
 say, but what is giuen you at the same time, that *12.12.*  
 shall make: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy *and*  
 ghost. 12 Yea, and the brother shall deliuer the *21.14.*  
 brother to death, & the father the sonne, and the  
 children shall rise against their parents, and shall  
 see them to die. 13 And ye shall be hated of all  
 men for my Names sake: but whosoever shall en- *Matt.*  
 dure vnto y<sup>e</sup> end, he shall be sau'd, 14 \*Moreover, *24.15.*  
 when



# S. M A R K E.

when ye shall see the abomination of desolation  
*Mat.* (spoken of by \* Daniel the Prophet) see where  
 9.27. it ought not, (let him that readeth consider it)  
 then let them *that be* in Iudea, flee into y<sup>e</sup> mount-  
 taines, 15 And let him that is vpon the house  
 not come downe into the house, neither enter  
 therein, to fetch any thing out of his house  
 16 And let him that is in the fildes, not turn  
 backe againe to take his garment. 17 Then w<sup>ill</sup>  
*shaloe* to them that are with childe, and to them  
 that glue sucke in those dayes. 18 Pray there-  
 fore that your flight be not in the winter. 19 For  
 those dayes shall bee such tribulations, as were  
 not from the beginning of the creation, when  
 God created vnto this time, neither shall be  
 20 And except that the Lord had shortned those  
 dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for y<sup>e</sup> elects  
 sake, which hee hath chosen, hee hath shortened  
*Mat.* those dayes. 21 Then \* if any man say to you  
 24.23. Loe, here is Christ, or, loe, *there*, beleeue  
*luke* not. 22 For false Christs shall rise, and false pro-  
 17.23. phets, & shal shew signes & wonders, to deceiue  
 and if it were possible, the very elect. 23 But take  
 21.8. ye heede, behold, I haue shewed you all these  
 before. 24 Moreover in those dayes, after that  
*Isa.* tribulation, the sunne shal waxe darke, and  
 13.10. moone shal not giue her light. 25 And  
 22.26. starres of heauen shal fall: and y<sup>e</sup> powers which  
 32.7. are in heauen, shal shake. 26 And then shall the  
*Mat.* see the Sonne of man comming in the cloudes  
 24.31. with great power and glory. 27 \* And be

## CHAP. XIII.

then sende his Angels, and shall gather together  
 the elect from the foure winds, and from the vt-  
 most part of the earth, to the vtmost part of hea-  
 ven. 28 Now learne a parable of the figtree.  
 When her bough is yet tender, and it bringeth  
 forth leaues, yee knowe that summer is neere.  
 29 So in like maner, when yee see these things  
 come to passe, know that *the kingdom of God* is  
 nere, *even at the doores*. 30 Verely I say vnto  
 you, that this generation shall not passe, till all  
 these things be done. 31 Heauen & earth shall  
 passe away, but my words shall not passe away.  
 But of that day and houre knoweth no man,  
 neither the Angels which are in heauen, neither  
 the Sonne himselte, but the Father. 33 \* Take *Matth.*  
 heed, watch, & pray: for ye know not when the *24.13.*  
 he is. 34 *For the Sonne of man* as a man go-  
 ing into a strange countrey, & leaueth his house,  
 and giueth authority to his seruants, & to euery  
 man his worke, and commandeth the porter to  
 watch. 35 Watch ye therefore. (for ye knowe  
 not when the master of the house will come, at  
 noon, or at midnight, at the cocke crowing, or in  
 the dawning.) 36 Lest if he come suddenly, he  
 should finde you sleeping. 37 And those things  
 that I say vnto you, I say vnto all men, Watch.

## CHAP. 14. 22 The Lords Supper.

And two dayes after followed *the feast of Matthe.*  
 the Pascheouer, & of vnleauened bread: and *16.1.*  
 the hie Priests, & Scribes sought how they might *take*  
 take him by craft, and put him to death. 2 But *22.1.*  
they

# S. M A R K E.

*Mat.* they said, Not in the feast *day*, lest there be any  
*26.6.* tumult among the people. 3 \* And when hee  
*iohn* was in Bethania in the house of Simon the leper,  
*12.2.* as he sate at table there came a woman hauing a  
 boxe of oyntment of spikenard, very costily, and  
 she brake the boxe, and powred it on his head.

4 Therefore some disdained among themselves,  
 and said, To what end is this waste of oyntment?  
 5 For it might haue bin sold for more then three  
 hundred pence, and bin giuen to the poore. And  
 they murmured against her. 6 But Iesus sayd,  
 Let her alone: why trouble yee her? she hath  
 wrought a good worke on me. 7 For ye haue  
 the poore with you alwayes, and when ye will  
 ye may doe them good: but me ye shal not haue  
 alwayes. 8 She hath done that she could: she  
 came aforehand to anoynt my body to the be-  
 rying. 9 Verely I say vnto you, where soeuer  
 this Gospel shall be preached throughout the  
 whole world, this also that she hath done, shall  
 be spoken of in remembrance of her. 10 \* Then Iesus

*Mat.* Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto  
*26.14.* the hie Priests, to betray him vnto them. 11 And  
*luke* when they heard it, they were glad, & promised  
*22.4.* that they would giue him money: therefore he  
 sought how he might conueniently betray him.

12 \* Now y<sup>e</sup> first day of vneleauened bread, when  
*Mat.* they sacrificed the Pascheouer, his disciples sayd  
*26.17.* vnto him, Where wilt thou that we go and pre-  
*luke* pare, that thou mayest eat y<sup>e</sup> Pascheouer? 13 Then  
*22.8.* he sent forth two of his disciples, and said vnto  
 them,

# C H A P. XIII.

em. Goe ye into the citie, and there shal a man  
 eete you bearing a pitcher of water: followe  
 ni. 14 And whithersoever he goeth in, say ye  
 the goodman of the house, The Master sayth,  
 Where is y<sup>e</sup> lodging where I shal eate the Passe-  
 ner w<sup>th</sup> my disciples? 15 And he will shew you  
 upper chamber *which is* large, trimmed and  
 epared: there make it ready for vs. 16 So his  
 sciples went forth, & came to the city, & found  
 he had said vnto them, & made ready the Passe-  
 ner. 17 And at Euen he came with the twelue.

\* And as they sate at table, and did eate, Iesus *Psal.*  
 d, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall *41.10.*  
 tray me, which eateth with me. 19 Then they *Mat. 8.*  
 gan to be sorowfull, and to say to him one by *26.20,*  
 e, Is it I? And another, Is it I? 20 And he an- *23.*  
 swered, & said vnto them, *It is* one of the twelue  
 at dippeth with me in the platter. 21 Truely  
 the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written  
 of him: but wo *be* to y<sup>e</sup> man, by whō the Sonne *Acts*  
 of man is betraied: it had bin good for that man, *1.16.*  
 he had neuer bin borne 22 \*And as they did *Mat.*  
 e, Iesus tooke the bread, and when he had gi- *26.26.*  
 uen thanks, he brake it, and gaue it to them, and *1.cor.*  
 said, Take, eat this is my body. 23 Also he tooke *11.24.*  
 the cup, & when he had giuen thankes, gaue it to  
 them. and they all dranke of it. 24 And he said  
 to them This is my blood of the new Testa-  
 ment, which is shed for many. 25 Verely I say  
 to you, I will drinke no more of the fruite of  
 the vine vntill that day, that I drinke it new in  
 the

the kingdome of God. 26 And when they had sung a Psalm, they went out to the mount of Olives. 27 \*I he Iesus said vnto them, A'l ye shal be offended by mee this night: for it is written, *Zeck.* \* I will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe shal be scattered. 28 But after that I am risen, I wil go into \* Galile before you. 29 And Peter said vnto him, Although all men should be offended at thee, yet would not I. 30 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, this day, *even* in this night, before the cocke crowe twise, thou shalt denie me thrise. 31 But he said more earnestly, If I should die with thee, I will not denie thee. likewise also said they all. 32 \*After, they came into a place named Gethsemane: then he said to his disciples, Sit ye here, till I haue prayed. *luke* 33 And he tooke with him Peter, & James, and Iohn, and hee began to be troubled, and is great heavinesse, 34 And sayd vnto them, My soule is very heauie, *even* vnto the death: tarry here and watch. 35 So he went forward a little, and fell downe on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, that houre might passe from him. 36 And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible vnto thee: take away this cuppe from mee: neuerthelesse not that I will, but that thou wilt, *be done.* 37 Then he came and found them sleeping, and said to Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one houre? 38 Watch ye, and pray, that yee enter not into temptation: the spirit in deed is ready, but the flesh is weak.

39 And againe he went away, and prayed, and  
 spake the same words. 40 And he returned, and  
 found them asleepe againe: for their eyes were  
 heavy: neither knew they what they should an-  
 swere him. 41 And he came the third time, and  
 sayd vnto them, Sleepe hencefoorth, and take  
 your rest: it is ynough: the houre is come: be-  
 holde, the Sonne of man is deliuered into the  
 hands of sinners. 42 Rise vp, let vs go, lo, he that  
 betrayeth me, is at hand. 43 \*And immediatly *Mat.*  
 while he yet spake, came Iudas that was one of *26.47.*  
 the twelue, and with him a great multitude with  
 words & stauces from the hie Priests, & Scribes,  
 and Elders. 44 And he that betrayed him, had  
 giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall  
 kisse, he it is. take him and leade him away safe-  
 ly. 45 And as soone as he was come, hee went  
 straightway to him, and said, Haile Master, and  
 kissed him. 46 Then they laid their handes on  
 him, and tooke him. 47 And one of them that  
 stood by, drew out a sword and smote a seruant  
 of the hie Priest, and cut off his eare. 48 And Ie-  
 sus answered, and said vnto them, Yee be come  
 out as against a thiefe with swords and stauces, to  
 take me. 49 I was dayly with you teaching in  
 the Temple, & ye tooke me not: but *this is done*  
 that the Scriptures should be fulfilled. 50 Then  
 they all forsooke him, and fled. 51 And there  
 followed him a certaine yong man, clothed in  
 linen vpon his bare *body*, and the yong men  
 sought him. 52 But he left his linen cloth and  
 fled

# S. MARKE.

**Matt.** fled from them naked. 53 \*So they led Iesus 26.57. way to the hie Priest, and to him came together *luke* all the hie Priests, and the Elders, & the Scribes, 22.54. 54 And Peter folowed him a farre off, euen into *john* the hall of the hie Priest, and sate with the ser- 18.24 uants, and warmed *himself* at the fire. 55 And **Matt.** the hie\* Priests, & al the Council sought for wit- 26.59. nes against Iesus, to put him to death, but found none. 56 For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together. 57 Then there arose certaine, & bare false witness against him, saying, 58 We heard him say, *John* \*I wil destroy this temple made with hands and 2.19. within three dayes I will builde another made without hands. 59 But their witness yet agreed not together. 60 Then the hie Priest stood vp amongst them, and asked Iesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is the matter y<sup>e</sup> these beare witness against thee? 61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the hie Priest asked him, & said vnto him, Art thou that Christ the sounne of the blessed? 62 And Iesus said, I **Matt.** he, \* and yee shall see the Sonne of man sit at the 24.39. right hand of the power of God, and come in the cloudes of heauen. 63 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, and said, What haue wee any more neede of witnesses? 64 Ye haue heard this blasphemie: what thinke ye? And they all condemned him to be worthe of death. 65 And some began to spit at him, and to couer his face, and to beate him with fitts, and to say vnto him

Prophecies

## C H A P. XV.

prophecie. And the sergeants smote him with  
 rods. 66 \* And as Peter was beneath in *Mat.*  
 the hall, there came one of the maydes of the hie *26.69*  
 priest, 67 And when she saw Peter warming *luke*  
 himself the looked on him, and said, Thou wast *22.55,*  
 so with Iesus of Nazareth. 68 But he denied *10hn*  
 saying, I know him not, neither wote I what *18.25,*  
 thou sayest. Then he went out into the porch:  
 and the cock crew. 69 \* Then a maid saw him *Mat.*  
 againe, and began to say to them that stood by, *26.71.*  
 this is one of them. 70 But he denied it againe, *luke*  
 and anon after they that stood by said again to *22.58*  
 Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art  
 of Galile, and thy speech is like. 71 And he be-  
 gan to curse and sweare, saying, I know not this  
 man of whom ye speake. 72 \* Then the second *Mat.*  
 time the cocke crew, and Peter remembred the *26.75*  
 word that Iesus had saide vnto him, Before the  
 cocke crow twile, thou shalt denie mee thrise,  
 and weying that with himselfe, he wept.

### CHAP. 15. 4. Christ is crucified.

And anon in the dawning y<sup>e</sup> hie Priests held *Mat.*  
 a Council with the Elders, and the Scribes, *27.10*  
 and the whole Council, and bound Iesus, & led *luke*  
 him away, and deliuered him to Pilate. 2 Then *22.56.*  
 Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Iewes? *10hn*  
 And he answered, & said vnto him, Thou sayest *18.19.*  
 3 And the hie Priests accused him of many *Mat.*  
 things. 4 \* Wherefore Pilate asked him againe, *27.13.*  
 Answerest thou nothing? Beholde howe *luke*  
 many things they witnesse against thee. 5 But *23.29*

K

Iesus



# S. M A R K E.

Iesus answered no more at all, so that Pilate  
marueiled. 6 Now at the feast, Pilate did deli-  
uer a prisoner vnto them, whomsoever they  
would desire. 7 Then there was one named Ba-  
rabbas, which was bound with his felowes, that  
had made insurrection, who in the insurrection  
had committed murder. 8 And the people cri-  
ed aloud, and began to desire *that he would doe*  
as he had euer done to them. 9 Then Pilate an-  
swered them, and said, Will ye that I let loose v-  
nto you the King of the Iewes? 10 For he knew  
that the hie Priests had deliuered him of enuie.  
11 But the hie Priests had moued the people  
*to desire* that he would rather deliuer Barabbas  
vnto them. 12 And Pilate answered, and sayde  
again vnto them, What will ye then that I doe  
*with him*, whom ye call the King of the Iewes?  
13 And they cried againe, Crucifie him. 14 Then  
Pilate saide vnto them, But what euill hath he  
done? And they cried the more feruently, Cruci-  
fie him. 15 So Pilate willing to content the peo-  
ple, loosed them Barabbas, and deliuered Iesus  
when he had scourged him that he might be cru-  
cified. 16 Then the souldiers led him away in  
to the hall, which is the common hall, & called  
together the whole band, 17 And clad him with  
purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, & put  
it about *his head*, 18 And began to salute him  
*saying*, Haile, King of the Iewes. 19 And the  
first smote him on the head with a reed, & spit vpon  
him, & bowed the knees, & did him reuerence

# CH A P. XV.

And when they had mocked him, they tooke  
the purple off him, and put his owne clothes on  
him, & led him out to crucifie him. 21 \* And they *Matt.*  
compelled one that passed by, called Simon of *27.32.*  
Cyrene (which came out of the countrey, & was *luke*  
brother of Alexander & Rufus) to beare his crosse. *23.26.*  
22 \* And they brought him to a place named *Mat.*  
Golgotha, which is by interpretation, the place *27.33.*  
of a dead mans skuls. 23 And they gaue him to *luke*  
drinke wine mingled with myrrhe but he recei *23.33.*  
ued it not. 24 \* And when they had crucified *Luke*  
him, they parted his garments casting lottes for *23.34.*  
them, what euery man should haue. 25 And it  
was the thirde houre, when they crucified him.  
26 And the title of his cause was written aboue,  
**THE KING OF THE IEWES.**  
27 They crucified also with him two theeues,  
the one on y<sup>e</sup> right hand, & the other on his left.  
28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled which saith,  
And he was counted among the wicked. 29 And *Isay*  
they that went by, railed on him, wagging their *55.12.*  
heads, and saying, \* Hey, thou that destroyest the *Iohn*  
temple and buildest it in three dayes, 30 Saue *2.19.*  
thy selfe & come downe fro the crosse. 31 Like-  
wise also euen the hie Priestes mocking, said a-  
mong themselues with the Scribes, He saued o-  
ther men, himselfe he cannot saue. 32 Let Christ  
the King of Israel now come downe from the  
crosse, that we may see and beleue. They also  
were crucified w<sup>th</sup> him, reviled him. 33 Now  
when the sixt houre was come, darkenes arose

# S. MARK E.

ouer all the land vntil the ninth houre. 34 And  
at the ninth houre Iesus cryed w<sup>th</sup> a loud voyce,  
*Psal.* saying, \* Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is  
*22.1.* by interpretation, My God, my God, why hast  
*Matt.* thou forsaken me? 35 And some of them y<sup>e</sup> stood  
*27.46* by, when they heard it said, Behold, he calleth E-  
*Psal.* lias. 36 And one ran and fill da<sup>e</sup> \* sponge full  
*69.22* of vinegar, and put it on a reede, and gaue him  
to drinke, saying, Let him alone: let vs see if E-  
lias will come, and take him downe. 37 And Ie-  
sus cried with a loude voyce, and gaue vp the  
ghost. 38 And the vail of the temple was rent  
in twaine fro the top to the bottome. 39 Now  
when the Centurion which stood ouer agaynst  
him, saw that hee thus crying gaue vp the ghost,  
he said, Truly this man was the Sonne of God.  
40 There were also women, which beynge  
farre off, among whom was Mary Magdalene and  
Mary (the mother of Iames the lesse, & of Ioseph  
and Salome. 41 Which also when he was in  
*Luke* Galile,\* followed him, and ministred vnto him  
*8.2.* and many other women which came vp vnto  
*Mat.* vnto Iernsalem. 42 \* And now when night was  
*27.57* come (because it was the day of the preparati-  
*Luke* on that is before the Sabbath) 43 \* Ioseph of Ari-  
*27.59* mathea, an honourable counsellour, which also  
*John* looked for the kingdome of God, came, and  
*29.38.* went in boldly vnto Pilate, and asked the body  
of Iesus. 44 And Pilate marueiled, if hee were  
already dead, & called vnto him the Centurion  
and asked of him whether he had bin any while  
dead.

## C H A P. XVI.

dead. 45 And when he knew *the truth* of the Centurio, he gave the body to Ioseph: 46 Who bought a linnen cloth, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linnen cloth, & laid him in a tombe that was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary Ioses *ma-* beheld where he should be laid.

### CHAP. 16. 1. *Christs resurrection.*

And\* when the Sabbath day was past, Mary *Luke* Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of Iames, *24. 1.* and Salome, bought sweete oynments, that they *john* might come, and anoynt him. 2 Therefore ear- *20. 1.*

ly in the morning the first day of the weeke, they came vnto the sepulchre, when the sunne was now risen. 3 And they sayde one to another,

Who shall rolle vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre? 4 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away (for

it was a very great one) 5 \* So they went into *Mat.* the sepulchre, and saw a yong man sitting at the *28. 1.* right side, clothed in a long white robe: and *john*

they were sore troubled. 6 But he saide vnto *20. 12.* them, Be not so troubled: ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which hath bin crucified he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they put him.

7 But goe your way, and tell his disciples, and Peter, y he wil go before you into Galile: there *Chap.* shall ye see him, \* as hee said vnto you. 8 And *14. 28.*

they went out quickly, and fled from the sepul- *mat.* chre: for they trembled and were amased: nei- *26. 32.*

# S. M A R K E.

ther said they any thing to any man : for they  
were afraid. 9 And when Iesus was risen a-  
gaine, early the first day of the weeke he appea-  
red first to Marie Magdalene \* out of whom he  
*John* had cast seuen deuils. 10 And she went and told  
*20.16.* *Luke* them that had bene with him, which mourned  
*8.2.* and wept. 11 And when they heard that he was  
aliue, and had appeared to her, they beleeued it  
*Luke.* not. 12 \* After that, he appeared vnto two of  
*24.13.* them in another forme, as they walked, and went  
into the countrey. 13 And they went, and told it  
*Luke.* to y<sup>e</sup> remnant, neither beleued they them. 14 \* Fi-  
*24.36.* nally, he appeared vnto y<sup>e</sup> cleuen as they sate to-  
*John* gether, & reproched them for their vnbeli:fe &  
*20.19.* hardnesse of heart, because they beleued not  
them which had seene him, being risen vp againe.  
*Matt.* 15 And he said vnto them. \* Goe ye into all the  
*28.19.* world, and preach the Gospel to euery creature.  
16 He that shal beleue, & be baptized, shalbe sa-  
*John* ued : \* but he that wil not beleue, shalbe damned.  
*12.48.* 17 And these tokens shal folow them y<sup>e</sup> beleue,  
*Acts* \* In my Name they \* shal cast out deuils, and shal  
*16.18.* speake w<sup>th</sup> new tongues, 18 \* And shal take away  
*Acts* serpents, & if they shal drinke any deadly thing,  
*24.* it shall not hurt them : they shall lay their hands  
*Acts* on the sicke, & they shal recouer. 19 \* So after the  
*18.5.* Lord had spokē vnto them he was receiued into  
*Luke* heauen, & sate at the right hand of God. 20 And  
*24.51.* they went forth, and preached euery where. And  
*Hebr.* the \* Lord wrought with them, and confirmed  
*4.* the word with signes that followed, A M E N.

THE

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS  
Christ, according to Luke.

CHAP. 1. *The Angel foretelleth the birth  
of Iesus Christ. 46 Marias song.*

**I**N as much as many haue taken in  
hand to set forth the storie of  
those things, whereof we are fully  
perswaded, 2 As they haue deli-  
uered them vnto vs, which from  
the beginning saw them their selues, and were  
ministers of the word, 3 It seemed good also  
to me (most noble Theophilus) as soone as I had  
searched out perfectly all things from the be-  
ginning, to write vnto thee thereof, from point  
to point, 4 That thou mightest acknowledge  
the certentie of those things, whereof thou hast  
bene instructed.

5 | N the time of Herod king of Iudea, there  
was a certaine Priest named Za-harias, of  
the course of Abia: & his wife was of the daugh-  
ters of Aaron, & her name was Elisabet. 6 Both  
were iust before God, and walked in al the com-  
mandements and ordinances of the Lord, with-  
out reproofe. 7 And they had no childe, because  
that Elisabet was barren: and both were well  
stricken in age. 8 And it came to passe, as hee  
executed the Priestes office before God, as his  
course came in order, 9 \*According to the cu-  
stome of the Priestes office, his lot was to burne  
incense, when he went into the Temple of the  
Lord. 10 And the whole multitude of the peo-

1. Chr.  
24. 1.

Exo 1  
30. 7

# S. L V K E.

**Zenit.** ple were without in prayer, \* while the incense  
**36.7.** was burning. 11 Then appeared vnto him an

Angel of the Lord standing at the right side of  
the altar of incense. 12 And when Zacharias

saw him, he was troubled, & feare fel vpon him.  
12 But the Angel sayd vnto him, Feare not, Za-  
charias: for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife E-

lisabet shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt

call his name Iohn. 14 And thou shalt haue ioy  
and gladnesse, & many shall reioyce at his birth.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord,

and shall neither drinke wine nor strong drinke,

and he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, euen

frō his mothers wombe. 16 \* And many of the

children of Israel shall hee turne to their Lord

God. 17 \* For he shall goe before him in the spi-

rit and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the

fathers to the children, & the disobedient to the

wisedome of the iust men, to make ready a peo-

ple prepared for the Lord. 18 Then Zacharias

said vnto the Angel. Whereby shal I know this?

for I am an olde man, and my wife is of a great

age. 19 And the Angel answered, and said vnto

him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of

God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, & to shew

thee these good tidings. 20 And beholde, thou

shalt be dumb, and not be able to speake vntill

the day that these things be done, because thou

belieuest not my wordes, which shalbe fulfil-

led in their season. 21 Now the people waited

for Zacharias, and maruelled that he taried so

long

## C H A P. I.

ing in the Temple. 22 And when he came out,  
 he could not speake vnto them: then they per-  
 ceiued that he had scene a vision in the Temple:  
 for he made signes vnto the, & remained dumbe.  
 And it came to passe, when the dayes of his  
 office were fulfilled, that hee departed to his  
 owne house. 21 And after those dayes, his wife  
 Elisabeth concieued, and hid her selfe fixe mo-  
 neths, saying, 25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with  
 me in the dayes wherein he looked on mee, to  
 ke from mee my rebuke among men. 25 And  
 the six month, the Angel Gabriel was sent  
 in God vnto a citie of Galile named Naza-  
 reth, 27 \* To a virgine affianced to a man *Mat.*  
 whose name was Ioseph, of the house of David, 1. 18.  
 the virgins name was Mary. 28 And the An-  
 gel went in vnto her, and sayd, Haile thou that  
 art freely beloued: the Lord is with thee: bless-  
 ed art thou among women. 29 And when she  
 heard him, shee was troubled at his saying, and  
 sought what manner of salutation that should be.  
 Then the Angel said vnto her, Feare not Mary:  
 for thou hast found fauour with God. 31 \* For *Isai.*  
 thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe, and beare 7. 14.  
 a sonne, \* and shalt call his Name IESVS. (*hap.*  
 for he shall be great, & shall be called the Sonne of 2. 21.  
 the Most High, and the Lord God shall giue vnto  
 him the throne of his father David. 33 \* And he *Dan. 7*  
 shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for ever, and 14. 27.  
 his kingdome shall haue none end. 34 Then said *micah*  
 vnto the Angel, How shall this be, seeing I 4. 7.  
 know



S. I. V. K. E.

know not man? 35 And the Angel answered and  
said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon  
thee, and the power of the most High shall ouer  
shadow thee: therefore also y<sup>e</sup> holy thing which  
shall be borne of thee, shall be called the Sonne  
of God. 36 And beholde, thy cousin Elisabet, she  
hath also conceived a sonne in her olde age: and  
this is her sixt moneth, which was called barren.  
37 For with God shall nothing be vnpossible.  
38 Then Mary sayd, Beholde the seruant of the  
Lord, be it vnto me according to thy word.  
And the Angel departed from her. 39 And Mary  
rose in those dayes, and went into the hill country  
with haste to a city of Iudah, 40 And entered  
into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabet.  
41 And it came to passe, as Elisabet heard y<sup>e</sup> salu-  
tation of Mary the babe sprang in her belly.  
Elisabet was filled with the holy Ghost. 42 And  
she cried with a loud voyce, and said, Blessed  
thou among women, because the fruite of thy  
wombe is blessed. 43 And whence cometh this  
to me, that the mother of my Lord should come  
vnto me? 44 For lo, as soon as the voyce of thy  
salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe sprang  
in my belly for ioy. 45 And blessed art thou  
belieued: for those things shall be performed  
which were tolde her from the Lord. 46 Then  
Mary said, My soule magnifieth the Lord, 47 And  
my spirit reioyceth in God my Sauour. 48 For  
he hath looked on the poore degree of his  
seruant: for beholde, from henceforth shall all  
men

# CHAP. I.

All me blessed, 49 Because he y is mighty hath  
 one for me great things, and holy is his Name.  
 And his mercy is from generation to genera-  
 on on them that feare him 51 \*He hath shew-  
 strength with his arme: \*he hath scattered the  
 cloud in the imagination of their hearts 52 He  
 hath put downe the mighty from *thei* seats, and  
 exalted them of lowe degree 53 \* He hath fil-  
 led the hungry with good things and sent away  
 the rich emptie. 54 \*He hath vpholden Israel  
 his seruant to be mindful of *his* mercy 55 (\* As  
 he hath spoken to our fathers, *to wit*, to Abraham  
 his friend, for euer. 56 And Mary abode with  
 her about three moneths: after, she returned to  
 her owne house. 57 Now Elisabets time was  
 filled, that shee should be deliuered, and shee  
 brought forth a sonne. 58 And her neighbours  
 and cousins heard tel how the Lord had shewed  
 great mercy vpon her, \* and they reioyced  
 with her 59 And it was so, that on the eight day,  
 they came to circumcise the babe, and called him  
 Zacharias after the name of his father. 60 But  
 his mother answered, & said, Not so, but he shall  
 be called Iohn. 61 And they said vnto her, There  
 is none of thy kinred that is named with this  
 name. 62 Then they made signes to his father,  
 how he would haue him called. 63 So he asked  
 for writing tables & wrote, saying, His name is  
 Iohn, & they marueiled all. 64 And his mouth  
 was opened immediatly, and his tongue, and he  
 began to speake and praised God. 65 Then feare came

*7thi.*  
*51.9.*  
*1 sai.*  
*29 150*  
*Psal.*  
*34 10.*  
*1 sai.*  
*30.18.*  
*Gene.*  
*17 19.*  
*2<sup>a</sup> 22.*  
*17 psal.*  
*132.11.*

*Verse*  
*14.*

# S. L V K E.

on all them that dwelt neere vnto them, and all these wordes were noised abroad thorowout all the hill countries of Iudea. 66 And all they that heard them, laid them vp in their hearts, saying, What maner childe shall this be! and the hand of the Lord was with him. 67 Then his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied saying, 68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, because he hath visited \* and redeemed his people, 69 \* And hath raised vp the horn of saluation vnto vs, in the house of his seruant David, 70 \* As hee spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which were since the world began, saying, 71 That he would send vs deliverance from our enemies, and from the hands of all that hate vs, 72 That he might shew mercy towards our fathers, and remember his holy covenent, 73 \* And the othe which hee swore to our father Abraham, 74 Which was, that he would graunt vnto vs, that wee being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies, should see him without feare. 75 All the dayes of our life \* in holinesse and righteousness before him. 76 And thou babe, shalt be called the Prophet of the most High: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord, to prepare his wayes. 77 And to giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people by the remission of their finnes, 78 Through the tender mercy of our God whereby the spring from an high hath visited vs. 79 And to giue light to them that sit in darkenesse, and

Chap.

2.30.

mat.

121.

Psal.

132.18.

Jere.

23.6.

Eccl.

10.

Gene.

22.16.

1.Pet.

1.15.

Zech.

3.8.

## C H A P. II.

the shadow of death, and to guide our feete into the way of peace. 86 And the childe grewe, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the wilderness, till the day came that hee should shew himselfe vnto Israel.

### CHAP. 2. 6 *The birth of Christ.*

And it came to passe in those dayes, that there came a decree from Augustus Cæsar, that all the world should be taxed. 2 (This first taxing was made when Cyrenius was gouernour of Syria) 3 Therefore went all to be taxed, every one to his owne citie. 4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galile out of a citie called Nazareth, into Iudea vnto the citie \* of David, which is called Beth lehem (because he was of the house and linage of Dauid,) 5 To bee taxed with Marie that was giuen him to wife, which was with childe. 6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that shee should be deliuered, 7 And she brought forth her first begotten sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and layd him in a cratch, because there was no roome for him in the linn. 8 And there were in the same countrey shepheards, abiding in the field, and keeping watch by night ouer their flocke. And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lorde shone about them, and they were sore afraid. 10 Then the Angel sayde vnto them, Be not afraid: for be-  
104<sup>u</sup>  
7.42.  
that

# S. I V K E.

that shall be to all the people: 11 *That is*, that  
vnto you is borne this day in the citie of Dauid,  
a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. 12 And this  
*shall be* a signe to you, Yee shall finde the babe  
swaddled and layd in a cratch. 13 And straight-  
way there was with the Angell a multitude of  
heauenly souldiers, praying God, and saying,  
14 Glory be to God in the high *heauen*, and  
peace in earth, and towards men good will.  
15 And it came to passe when the Angels were  
gone away from them into heauen, that the  
shepherds said one to another, Let vs goe  
vnto Beth leem, and see this thing that is come  
to passe, which the Lorde hath shewed vnto vs.  
16 So they came with haste, and found both Ma-  
rie and Ioseph, and the babe layd in the cratch.  
17 And when they had seene it, they published  
abroad the thing, which was tolde them of this  
childe. 18 And all that heard it, wondred at the  
things which were told them of the shepherds.  
19 But Marie kept all those sayings, & pondered  
*them* in her heart. 20 And the shepherds re-  
turned glorifying and praying God, for all that  
they had heard and seene, as it was spoken vnto  
*Gene.* them. 21 \* And when the eight dayes were  
17. 12. accomplished, that they should circumsise the  
*Chap.* childe, his name was then called \* I E S U S  
1. 31. which was named of the Angel, before he was  
*Lewis.* conceived in the wombe. 12 \* And when the  
12. 6. dayes of her purification after the Law of Moyses  
were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem

## C H A P. II.

em, to present him to the Lord, 23 (As it is  
 written in the Law of the Lord, \* Every man *Exod.*  
 wilde that first openeth the wombe, shalbe cal *13.2.*  
 d holy to the Lord) 24 And to giue an obla-  
 tion, \* as it is commanded in the Law of the Lord, *Leuit.*  
 a pair of turtle doves, or two yong pigeons. *2.6.*  
 And beholde, there was a man in Hierusa-  
 lem, whose name was Simeon: this man was iust,  
 and feared God, and waited for the consolation  
 of Israel, and the holy Ghost was vpon him.  
 And it was declared to him from God by  
 the holy Ghost, that he should not see death,  
 before he had seene that Anointed of the Lord.  
 And he came by the motion of the Spirit into  
 the Temple, and when the parents brought in  
 the babe Iesus, to doe for him after the custome  
 of the Law, 28 Then he tooke him in his armes,  
 and prayed God, and sayd, 29 Lord, now let  
 thy seruant depart in peace according  
 to thy word, 30 For mine eyes haue seene thy  
 salvation, 31 Which thou hast prepared be-  
 fore the face of all people, 32 A light to be re-  
 ualed to the Gentiles, and the glory of thy peo-  
 ple Israel. 33 And Ioseph and his mother mar-  
 uiled at those things, which were spoken tou-  
 ching him. 34 And Simeon blessed them, and *Esay*  
 said vnto Marie his mother, Beholde, this *childe* *8.14.*  
 appointed \* for the fall and rising againe of *rom.*  
 many in Israel, and for a signe which shalbe spo- *9.32.*  
 ken against, 35 (Ye a, and a sword shall pearce *1. pet.*  
 thow thy soule) that the thoughts of many *2.8.*  
 hearts

# S. L V K E.

hearts may be opened. 36 And there was a Prophetesse, one Anna the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser, which was of a great age, after she had liued with an husband seuen yeres from her virginitie. 37 And she ~~was~~ a widow about fourescore and foure yeres, and went not out of the Temple, but serued God with fastings and prayers, night and day. 38 She then coming at the same instant vpon them, confessed likewise the Lord, and spake of him to all that looked for redemption in Hierusalem. 39 And when they had performed all things according to the Law of the Lord, they returned into Galile to their owne citie Nazareth. 40 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in Spirit and was filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was with him. 41 Now his parents went to Hierusalem euery yeere \* at the feast of the Pascheuer.

*Deut.* 16. 1. 42 And when he was twelue yeere old and they were come vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the feast, 43 And had finished the dayes thereof, as they returned, the childe Iesus remained in Hierusalem, and Ioseph knewe not, nor his mother. 44 But they supposing that he had bene in the company, went a dayes iourney, and sought him among *then* kinsfolke and acquaintance. 45 And when they found him not, they turned backe to Hierusalem, and sought him. 46 And it came to passe three dayes after, they found him in the Temple, sitting in the middes of the doctours, both hearing them,

### CHAP. III.

asking them questions: 47 And all that heard him, were astonished at his understanding, and answers. 48 So when they sawe him, they were amazed: and his mother saide vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? behold thy father and I haue sought thee with many hearts. 49 Then said he vnto them, How can it that ye sought me? knew ye not that I must be about my Fathers business? 50 But they understood not the worde that hee spake to them. 51 Then he went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject to them: and his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. And Iesus increased in wisdom, and stature, and in fauour with God and men.

HAP. 3. 4. *John preacheth. 21 Christ baptized.*

Now in the fiftenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being Governor of Iudea and Herod being Tetrarch of Galilee, & his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, and Lysanius the Tetrarch of Abilene, 2 (\* When Annas *Acts.* and Caiaphas were the hie Priests) the word of 4. 6. came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zacharias in *Mat.* the wilderness. 2 \* And he came into all the 3. 2. about Iordan, preaching the baptisme *mark.* repentance for the remission of sinnes, 4 As 1. 4. written in the booke of y<sup>e</sup> sayings of Esaias *Isa.* Prophet, which sayeth, \* The voyce of him 40. 3. cryeth in the wilderness. Prepare yee the 106. 1. of the Lorde: make his paths straight. 1. 23.

L

5 Every



# S. I V K E.

5 Euery valley shalbe filled,& euery mountaine and hill shalbe brought lowe,& crooked things shalbe made straight. and the rough wayes *shall be made smoothe.* 6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God. 7 Then saide he to the people that were come out to be baptized of him,

**Mat.** 23. 7. O generations of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruites worthy amendment of life, and begin not to say with your selues, Wee haue Abraham to *our* father: for I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham 9 Now also is *ye* axe laid vnto the roote of the trees: therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruit shall be hewen downe, and cast into the fire 10 Then the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then? 11 And he answered and said vnto them,

**James** 2. 15. He that hath two coates, let him part with him that hath none: and he that hath meate, let him doe likewise. 12 Then came there Publicanes also to be baptized, and saide vnto him. Master, What shall we doe? 13 And he said vnto them, Require no more then that which is appointed vnto you 14 The souldiers likewise demanded of him saying, And what shall we doe? and he said vnto them Doe violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages. 15 As *ye* people waited, & all men mused in

**Mat.** 3. 11. their hearts of Iohn, if he were not that Christ, 12 Iohn answered and saide to them all, *in* deeds

# C H A P. III.

deede I baptize you with water, but one stronger then I, commeth, whose shoes latcher I am not worthie to vnloose: hee will baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. 17 Whose fanne is in his hand, and hee will make cleane his floore, and will gather the wheate into his garner, but the chaffe will hee burne vp with fire that neuer shall bee quenched. 18 Thus then exhorting with many other things he preached vnto the people. 19 \*But when Herode the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which Herod had done, 20 He added yet this aboute also, he shut vp Iohn in prison 21 \*Now it came to passe, as al the people were baptized, and that Iesus was baptized, and did pray, that the heauen was opened: 22 And the holy Ghost came downe in a bodiij shape like a doue vpon him, and there was a voyce from heauen, saying, Thou art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am well pleased. 23 And Iesus himselte began to be about thirtie yceres of age, being as men supposed the sonne of Ioseph. *which was the sonne of Eli,* 24 *The sonne of Matthat, the sonne of Leui, the sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Ianna, the sonne of Ioseph,* 25 *The sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of Amos, the sonne of Naum, the sonne of Esli, the sonne of Nagge,* 26 *The sonne of Maath, the sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of Semei, the sonne of Ioseph, the sonne of Iuda,* 27 *The sonne of Ianna, the sonne of Rhesa, the sonne of Zorobabel,*

Mat.  
14. 30

Mat.  
3. 13.  
mark  
1. 9.  
Iohn  
1. 33

# S. L V K E.

babel, the sonne of Salathiel, the sonne of Neri,  
 28 The sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Addi, the  
 sonne of Cosam, the sonne of Elmodam, the sonne  
 of Er, 29 The sonne of Iose, the sonne of Eliezer,  
 the sonne of Iorim, the sonne of Matthat, the sonne  
 of Leui, 30 The sonne of Simeon, the sonne of  
 Iuda, the sonne of Iosaph, the sonne of Ionan, the  
 sonne of Eliacim, 31 The sonne of Melea, the  
 sonne of Manan, the sonne of Mattatha, the sonne  
 of Nathan, the sonne of David, 32 The sonne of  
 Iesse, the sonne of Obed, the sonne of Booz, the  
 sonne of Salmon, the sonne of Naasson, 33 The  
 sonne of Aminadab, the sonne of Aram, the sonne  
 of Elsom, the sonne of Phares, the sonne of Iu-  
 da, 34 The sonne of Iacob, the sonne of Isaac, the  
 sonne of Abraham, the sonne of Thara, the sonne  
 of Nather, 35 The sonne of Saruch, the sonne of  
 Ragau, the sonne of Phulec, the sonne of Eben,  
 the sonne of Sala, 36 The sonne of Cainan, the  
 sonne of Arphaxad, the sonne of Sem, the sonne  
 of Noe, the sonne of Lamech, 37 The sonne of  
 Methusela, the sonne of Enoch, the sonne of Jared,  
 the sonne of Muleleel, the sonne of Cainan, 38 The  
 sonne of Enos, the sonne of Seth, the sonne of A-  
 dam, the sonne of God.

CHAP. 4 I. Christ is baptized. 14 The  
 devils acknowledge him.

Mat. 4.1. **A**ND Iesus full of the holy Ghost returned  
 4.1. to the wilderness, : \* And was there fourte  
 4.12. dayes tempted of the devill, & in those dayes he

# C H A P. IIII.

did eate nothing; but when they were ended, he  
 afterward was hungrie 3 Then the deuill said  
 vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, com-  
 mand this stone that it be made bread. 4 But  
 Iesus answered him, saying, It is written. \* That *Deut.*  
 man shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery *8.3.*  
 word of God. 5 Then the deuill tooke him vp *mat.*  
 into an high mountaine and shewed him all the *4.4.*  
 kingdomes of the world in the twinckling of  
 an eye. 6 And the deuill said vnto him, All this  
 power will I giue thee, and the glory of those  
 kindomes: for that is deliuered to me: and to  
 whomsoeuer I wil, I giue it. 7 If thou therefore  
 wilt worship me they shall be all thine. 8 But  
 Iesus answered him, and said, Hence from me,  
 Satan: for it is written, \* Thou shalt worship the *Deut.*  
 Lord thy God and him alone thou shalt serue. *6.13.*  
 9 Then he brought him to Hierusalem, and set *and*  
 him on a pinnacle of the Temple. and said vnto *10.20.*  
 him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe  
 downe from hence. 10 For it is written, \* That *Psal.*  
 he will giue his angels charge ouer thee to *91.12.*  
 keepe thee: 11 And with *their* hands they shall  
 lift thee vp, least at any time thou shouldest dash  
 thy foote against a stone. 12 And Iesus answe-  
 red and said vnto him, It is saide, \* Thou shalt *Deut.*  
 not tempt the Lord thy God. 13 And when the *6.16.*  
 deuill had ended all the tentation hee departed  
 from him for a litle season. 14 And Iesus retur-  
 ned by the power of the Spirit into Galile: and  
 there went a fame of him throughout all the  
 region

S. L V K E.

region round about. 15 For he taught in their Synagogues, and was honoured of all men.

**Matt.** 16 " And he came to Nazareth where he had bin  
13.54. brought vp, and (as his custome was) went into  
**mark.** the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood

**6.1.** vp to reade 17 And there was deliuered vnto

**John** him the booke of the Prophet Esaias: & when

**4.33.** he had openened the booke, he found the place,

**Isai.** where it was written, 18 "The Spirit of the Lord

**61.1.** is vpon me, because he hath anoynted me, that I

should preach the Gospel to the poore: he hath

sent me, that I should heale the broken hearted,

that I should preach deliuerance to the captiues,

and recovering of sight to the blinde, that I

should set at libertie them that are bruised:

19 And that I should preach the acceptable

yeere of the Lord. 20 And he closed the booke,

and gaue it againe to the minister, & sat downe

and the eyes of all that were in the Synagogue,

were fastened on him. 21 Then he began to say

vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in

your eares 22 And all bare him witnesse, and

wondred at the gracious words which pro-

ceeded out of his mouth and said, Is not this Io-

sephs sonne? 23 Then he said vnto them, Ye will

surely say vnto mee this prouerbe, Physicion,

heale thy selfe: whatsoener we haue heard done

in Capernaum, do it here likewise in thine owne

countrie. 24 And he said, Verely I say vnto you,

**John** \* No Prophet is accepted in his owne countrie,

**4.41.** 25 But I tell you of a trueth, many widowers

## CHAP. IIII.

were in Israel in y<sup>e</sup> dayes of \*Elias, when heauen *1. King.*  
 was shut three yeeres and sixe moneths, when *17.9.*  
 great famine was throughout all y<sup>e</sup> land: *26* But *James*  
 vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue into Sa. *5.17.*  
 repta; a citie of Sidon, vnto a certaine widow.  
*27* Also many lepers were in Israel, in the time  
 of \*Eliseus the Prophet: yet none of them was *2. King.*  
 made cleane, sauing Naaman y<sup>e</sup> Syrian. *28* Then *5. 14.*  
 all *that were* in the Synagogue, when they  
 heard it, were filled with wrath, *29* And rose  
 vp, & thrust him out of the citie, and led him vn-  
 to the edge of the hill, whereon their citie was  
 built, to cast him downe headlong. *30* But hee  
 passed through the middes of them, and went  
 his way, *31* \* And came downe into Caperna. *Mat.*  
 urn a citie of Galile, and there taught them on *4.13.*  
 the Sabbath dayes. *32* \* And they were astonied *Mat.*  
 at his doctrine: for his word was with authori *7. 29.*  
 tie. *33* \* And in the Synagogue there was a *Mar.*  
 man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, *1. 23.*  
 which cried with a loud voyce, *34* Saying, Oh,  
 what haue wee to doe with thee, thou Iesus of  
 Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I know  
 who thou art, *even* the holy one of God. *35* And  
 Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and  
 come out of him. Then the deuill throwing him  
 in the middes of *them*, came out of him, & hurt  
 him nothing at all. *36* So feare came on them  
 all, and they spake among themselues, saying,  
 What thing is this? for with authority & power  
 hee commandeth the foule spirits, and they

## S. L V R E.

came out. 37 And the same of him spread abroad throughout all the places of the countrey round

*Mat.* about. 38 \* And he rose vp, and came out of the 8.14. Synagogue, and entred into Simons house. And

*mark.* Simons wiues mother was taken with a great 8.30. feuer, and they required him for her. 39 Then

hee stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and it left her, and immediately shee arose, and mini-

stred vnto them. 40 Now at the sunne setting, all they that had sicke *folles* of diners diseases,

brought them vnto him, and he laid his hands on euery one of them, and healed them. 41 \* And

*Mar.* 1.35. deuils also came out of many, crying, and say- ing, Thou art that Christ the Sonne of God: but

hee rebuked them, and suffered them not to say that they knew him to be that Christ. 42 And

when it was day, he departed, and went forth into a desert place: and the people sought him,

and came to him, & kept him that he should not depart from them. 43 But hee sayd vnto them,

Surely I must also preach the kingdome of God to other cities: for therefore am I sent.

44 And hee preached in the Synagogues of Galile.

CHAP. 5. 6 *The draught of fish.*

*Mat.* 4.18. **T**hen it came to passe as the people pressed vpon him to heare the word of God, that he

*mark.* stood by the lake of Gennesaret, 2 And sawe 1.16. two shipp stand by the lake side, but the fisher-

men were gone out of them, and were washing their nets. 3 And he entred into one of the shipp,

which

# C H A P. V.

which was Simons, and required him that hee would thrust off a little from the land : & he sat downe, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said vnto Simon, Launch out into the deepe, & let downe your nets to make a draught. 5 Then Simon answered, and said vnto him, Master, wee haue trauailed fore all night and haue taken nothing: neuerthelesse at thy word I will let downe the

net. 6 And when they had so done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, so that their net brake.

7 And they beckened to their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and helpe them, who came then, and filled

both the ships, that they did sirke. 8 Now when Simon Peter sawe it, hee fell downe at Iesus

feets, saying. Lord, goe from me. for I am a sinfull man. 9 For he was vtterly astonied, and all

that were with him, for the draught of fishes which they tooke. 10 And so was also James

and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Iesus sayd vnto

Simon, Feare not : From henceforth thou shalt catch men. 11 And when they had brought the

ships to land, they forsooke al & followed him.

12 \* Nowe it came to passe, as he was in a certaine citie, behold, there was a man full of leprosy. *Mat. 8.2.*

and when he saw Iesus, he fel on his face and sought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou

must make me cleane. 13 So he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane,



S. L V K E.

cleane And immediatly the leprosie departed from him. 14 And he commanded him that he should tell it no man: but go, *saith he*, and shewe thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleming,

*Leuit.* \*as Moses hath comanded for a witnes vnto them,

14. 4. 15 But so much more went there a fame abroad

of him, & great multitudes came together, to heare & to be healed of him of their infirmities.

16 But he kept himselfe apart in the wilderness and prayed. 17 And it came to passe on a cer-

taine day, as he was teaching, that the Pharisees and doctors of the Law sate by, which were come

out of euery towne of Galile, and Iudea, & Hierusalem, & the power of the Lord was *in him* to

*Matt.* heale them. 18 \* Then beholde, men brought a

9. 2. man lying in a bed, which was taken with a pa-

*mark.* sie, and they sought meanes to bring him in, & to

2. 3. lay him before him. 19 And when they could

not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the prease, they went vp on the house,

and let him downe through the tiling, bed and all, in the middes before Iesus. 20 And when he

saw their faith, he said vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiven thee. 21 Then the Scribes and the

Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? who can forgive

sinnes but God onely? 22 But when Iesus perceiued their reasoning, hee answered and said

vnto them, What reason yee in your hearts? 23 Whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are for-

giuen thee, or to say, Rise and walke? 24 But the

# C H A P. V.

we may know that the Sonne of man hath author-  
 itie to forgine sinnes in earth (he sayd vnto the  
 sicke of the pallsie) I say to thee, Arise: take vp  
 thy bed, and goe to thine house. 25 And imme-  
 diatly he rose vp before them, and tooke vp his  
 bed whereon he lay, and departed to his owne  
 house. praysing God. 26 And they were all a-  
 mased, and praysed God. and were filled with  
 feare, saying, Doubtlesse, we haue scene strange  
 things to day. 27 \* And after that, he went forth *Matt.*  
 and saw a Publicane named Leui, sitting at the *9.9.*  
 receite of custome, and said vnto him, Followe *mar.*  
 me. 28 And he left all, rose vp, & followed him. *2.14.*  
 29 The Leui made him a great feast in his owne  
 house, where there was a great cōpany of Pub-  
 licanes, & of other that sate at table with them.  
 30 But they that were Scribes and Pharises a-  
 mong them, murmured against his disciples. say-  
 ing, Why eate yee and drinke ye with Publi-  
 canes and sinners? 31 Then Iesus answered, and  
 said vnto them, They that are whole neede not  
 the Physicion, but they that are sicke 32 \* I came *1.Tim.*  
 not to call the righteous, but sinners to repen- *1.15.*  
 tance. 33 \* Then they said vnto him, Why doe *Matt.*  
 the disciples of Iohn fast often, and pray, and the *9.14.*  
 disciples of the Pharises also, but thine eate and *mar.*  
 drinke? 34 And he said vnto them, Can ye make *2.18.*  
 the children of the wedding chamber to fast, as  
 long as the bridegrome is w<sup>th</sup> them? 35 But the  
 dayes will come, euen when the bridegrome  
 shall be taken away from them: then shall they  
 fast

# S. I V R E.

fast in those dayes. 36 Againe he spake also vnto them a parable, No man putteth a piece of a new garment into an olde vesture: for then the new renteth it, and the piece taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old. 37 Also no man powreth new wine into olde vessels: for then the new wine wil breake the vessels, and it will runne out, and the vessels will perish. 38 But new wine must be powred into new vessels, so both are preserued. 39 Also no man that drinketh olde wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The olde is more profitable.

CHAP. 6. 1 True keeping of the Sabbath.

*Mat.* **A**ND \* it came to passe on a second solemne  
*12.1.* Sabbath, that he went through the corne  
*mar.* fields, & his disciples plucked the eares of corne,  
*3.23.* and did eate, & rub them in *their* hands. 2 And  
certaine of the Pharisees said vnto them, Why do  
ye that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sab-  
bath dayes? 3 Then Iesus answered them, and  
*1 Sam.* said, \* Haue ye not read this, that Dauid did wile  
*21.6.* he him selfe was an hungred, & they which were  
with him, 4 How he went into the house of  
God, and tooke, and ate the shewbread, and  
gaue also to them which were with him, which  
*Exod.* was not lawfull to eate but for the \* Priests on-  
*29.33.* ly? 5 And he said vnto them, The Sonne of man  
*Mat.* is Lord also of the Sabbath day. 6 \* It came to  
*12.9.* passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred in-  
*mark.* to the Synagogue, and taught, and there was  
*3.1.* a man, whose right hande was dried vp. 7 And

# C H A P. VI.

the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether  
 he would heale on the Sabbath day, that they  
 might finde an accusation *against* him. 8 But  
 he knew their thoughts, & said to the man which  
 had the withered hand, Arise, and stand vp in the  
 middes. And he arose, and stood vp. 9 Then  
 said Iesus vnto them, I wil aske you a question,  
 Whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to  
 doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to de-  
 Roy it? 10 And he beheld them all in compasse,  
 and said vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand.  
 And he did so, and his hand was restored againe  
 as whole as the other. 11 Then they were fil-  
 led full of madnesse, and communed one with  
 another what they might doe to Iesus. 12 And  
 it came to passe in those dayes, that he went into  
 a mountaine to pray, & spent the night in pray-  
 er to God. 13 And when it was day, \*he called *Chap.*  
 his disciples, and of them he chose twelue, which *9. 1.*  
 also he called Apostles. 14 (Simon whō he na- *matt.*  
 med also Peter, and Andrew his brother, James *10. 1.*  
 and Iohn, Philip and Bartlemew: 15 Matthew, *Mat.*  
 and Thomas: James the sonne of Alphaeus, and *3. 13.*  
 Simon called Zealous, 16 Iudas James *bro ther,* and  
 Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traitor.) *6. 7.*  
 Then he came downe with them & stood in  
 a plaine place, with the cōpany of his disciples,  
 and a great multitude of people out of al Iudea,  
 and Hierusalem, & from the sea coast of Tyrus,  
 and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to bee  
 healed of their diseases, 18 And they that were  
 vexed

# S. L V K E.

vexed with foule spirits, and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, & healed

*Matt.* themall. 20 \*And he lifted vp his eyes vpo his

5.3. disciples, & said, Blessed *be* ye poore: for yours

*E/ay* is the kingdome of God 21 \*Blessed *are* ye that

65.13. hunger now: for ye shalbe satisfied. Blessed *are*

*Isai.* ye that weepe now: for ye shal laugh. 22 \*Bles-

61.3. sed *are* ye when men hate you, and when they

*Mat.* separate you, & reuile you, & put out your name

5.11. as euil, for the Sonne of mans sake. 23 Reioyce

ye in that day, and be glad: for behold, your re-

*Amos* warde is great in heauen: for after this maner

6.1. their fathers did to the Prophets. 24 \*But woe

*Isai.* be to you that are rich: for ye haue receiued your

65.13. consolation. 25 \*Woe be to you that are full: for

ye shall hunger. Woe be to you that now laugh:

for ye shall waile & weepe. 26 Woe be to you

*Matt.* when all men speake wel of you: for so did their

5.41. fathers to the false prophets. 27 \*But I say vn-

to you which heare, Loue your enemies: do wel

*Matt.* to them which hate you. 28 Blesse them y curse

5.39. you, & pray for them which hurt you. 29 \*And

1. Cor. vnto him that smiteth thee on the one cheeke,

6.7. offer also the other: \* and him that taketh away

thy cloake, forbid not to take thy coate also.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee: and of

*Matt.* him that taketh away the things that be thine,

7.12. aske them not againe. 31 \*And as ye would that

*Matt.* men should do to you, so do ye to them likewise.

5.46. 32 \* For if ye loue them which loue you, what

chaunce

# C H A P. VI.

thanke shall yee haue? for euen the sinners loue those that loue them. 33 And if ye do good for them which doe good for you, what thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners do y<sup>e</sup> same. 34 \*And *Mat* if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receiue, 5.42. what thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners *deut.* lend to sinners, to receiue the like. 35 Wherefore 13.8. loue ye your enemies, & do good, and lend, looking for nothing againe, & your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the \* most *Mat.* High: for he is kind vnto the vnkind, and to the 5.45. euil. 36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is merciful. 37 \*Iudge not, and ye shall *Mat.* not be iudged: condemne not, and ye shall not 7.1. be condemned: forgiue, and ye shall be forgiven. 38 Giue, and it shall be giuen vnto you: \*a good *Mat* measure, pressed downe, shaken together & run 7.2. ning ouer shall men giue into your bosome: for *mark.* with what measure ye mete, with the same shall. 4.24. men mete to you againe. 39 And he spake a parable vnto them, \*Can the blind leade the blind? *Mat.* shall they not both fall into the ditch? 40 \*The 15.14. discipule is not aboue his master: but whosoener *Mat.* a perfect discipule, shall be as his master. 10.24. 41 \*And why seeest thou a mote in thy brothers *Mat.* eye, & considerest not the beame that is in thine 7.3. owne eye? 42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou seeest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrite, cast out the beame out of thine owne eye first, and then shall

# S. L V K E.

shalt thou see perfectly to pul out the mote that  
*Mat.* is in thy brothers eye. 43 \* For it is not a good  
 7. 17. tree that bringeth forth euill fruite: neither an  
*Mat.* euill tree that bringeth forth good fruit. 44 \* For  
 12. 33. every tree is knowen by his owne fruit: \* for  
*Mat.* neither of thorns gather men figs, nor of busshes  
 7. 16. gather they grapes. 45 A good man out of the  
 good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good,  
 and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his  
 heart bringeth forth euill: for of the abundance  
*Mat.* of the heart his mouth speaketh. 46 \* But why  
 7. 21. call ye me Lord, Lord, and doe not the things  
*rom.* that I speake? 47 Whosoener commeth to me,  
 2. 13. and heareth my words, & doeth the same, I will  
 3am. shew you to whom he is like: 48 Hee is like a  
 2. 21. man which built an house, & digged deepe, and  
 laid the foundation on a rocke: and when the  
 waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, and  
 could not shake it: for it was grounded vpon a  
 rocke. 49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is  
 like a man that built an house vpon the earth  
 without foundation, against which the flood did  
 beate, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that  
 house was great.

## CHAP. 7. 9 The Centurions faith.

*Mat.* 8. 5. **W**Hen \* hee had ended all his sayings in the  
 audience of the people, he entred into Ca-  
 pernaum. 1 And a certaine Centurion, seruant  
 was sicke & ready to die, which was deare vnto  
 him. 2 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto  
 him the Elders of y<sup>e</sup> Iewes, beseeching him that

# CHAP. VII.

he would come, and heale his seruant. 4 So they came to Iesus, and besought him instantly, saying that he was worthy that he should doe this for him: 5 For he loueth, *(sayd she)*, our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue. 6 The Iesus went with them: but when he was now not farre from the house, the Centuriõ sent friends to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy self: for I am not worthy y thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe: 7 Wherefore I thought not my self worthy to come vnto thee: but say the word & my seruant shalbe whole: 8 For I likewise am a mā set vnder authority, & haue vnder me souldiers: and I say vnto one, Go, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he commeth, & to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it. 9 When Iesus heard these things, he marueiled at him, & turned him, and said to the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith no not in Israel. 10 And when they that were sent, turned backe to the house, they found the seruant that was sicke, whole. 11 And it came to passe the day after, y he went into a city called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him, and a great multitude. 12 Now when he came neere to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man carried out, *who was* the onely begotten sonne of his mother, which was a widowe, and much people of the city was with her. 13 And when the Lord sawe her, he had compassion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe not. 14 And he

M

went



# S. I V K E.

went and touched the coffin (and they that bare him, stood stil and he said, Yong man, I say vnto thee, Arise. 15 And he that was dead satte vp, and began to speake, & he deliuered him to his mother. 16 Then there came a feare on them all, & they glorified God, saying, A great Prophet is risen among vs, and God hath visited his people. 17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout al Iudea, & throughout all the region round about. 18 And y<sup>e</sup> disciples of Iohn shewed him of al these things. 19 So Iohn called vnto him two certaine men of his disciples, & sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou he that should come, or shall wee waite for another? 20 And when the men were come vnto him, they sayde, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or shall wee waite for another? 21 And at that time he cured many of their sicknesses, & plagues, & of euill spirits, & vnto many blind men he gaue sight freely. 22 And Iesus answered, & said vnto them, Go your waies & shew Iohn, what things yee haue scene & heard: that the blind see, the halt go, the lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, & the poore receiue the Gospel. 23 And blessed is he, y<sup>e</sup> shall not be offended in me. 24 And when y<sup>e</sup> messengers of Iohn were departed, he began to speake vnto the people of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernes to see? A reede shaken with the winde? 25 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft rayment? behold, they which are

gorgeous

## C H A P. VII.

gorgeously apparelled, and liue delicately, are in Kings courts 26 But what went ye forth to see? A Prophet? yea I say vnto you, and greater then a Prophet. 27 This is he of whom it is writtē, \*Beholde, I send my messenger before thy face, *Mat.* which shal prepare thy way before thee. 28 For *3.1.* I say vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuerthelesse, he that is the least in the kingdom of God, is greater then he. 29 Then all the people that heard, and the Publicanes iustified God, being baptized with y<sup>e</sup> baptisme of Iohn. 30 But the Pharises and the expounders of the Lawe despised the counsell of God against themselues, and were not baptized of him. 31 \*And the Lord *Mat.* said, whereunto shall I liken the men of this ge- *11. 16.* neration? and what *thing* are they like vnto? 32 They are like vnto litle childrē sitting in the market place, and crying one to another, & saying, We haue piped vnto you and yee haue not daunced: we haue mourned to you, and ye haue not wept. 33 For Iohn Baptist came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine: and ye say, Hee hath the deuill 34 The Sonne of man is come, and eateth & drinketh: and ye say, Behold a man which is a glutton, & a drinker of wine, a friend of Publicans & sinners: 35 But wisdome is iustified of all her children. 36 And one of the Pharises desired him that he would eate w<sup>th</sup> him: and he went into the Pharises house & sate down at table, 37 And behold, a womā in the city which

# S. L V K E

was a finner, when she knew that Iesus sate at table in the Pharises house, she brought a boxe of  
**Mar.** oyntment. 38 \* And she stood at his feet behind  
**15.43** him weeping, & began to wash his feet w<sup>th</sup> teares,  
**john** and did wipe them with the haire of her head,  
**20.11** and kissed his feet, & annoynted them with the  
 ointment. 39 Now whē the Pharise which bade  
 him, saw it, he spake within himselfe. saying, If  
 this man were a Prophet, he would surely haue  
 knowen who and what maner of woman this is  
 which toucheth him: for she is a finner. 40 And  
 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Simon, I haue  
 somewhat to say vnto thee And he said Master,  
 say on. 41 There was a certain lender which had  
 two detters: the one ought five hundred pence,  
 and the other fiftie: 42 When they had nothing  
 to pay, hee forgauē them both: Which of them  
 therfore tel *me*, wil loue him most? 43 Simon an-  
 swered, and said, I suppose that he. to whom hee  
 forgauē most. And he sayd vnto him, Thou hast  
 truely iudged. 44 Then he turned to the woman,  
 and sayd vnto Simon. Seest thou this woman? I  
 entred into thine house, and thou gauest me  
 water to my feet: but she hath washed my feet  
 with teares, and wiped them with the haire of  
 her head. 45 Thou gauest me no kisse, but she  
 since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse  
 my feet. 46 Mine head with oyle thou didst not  
 annoynt: but she hath annoynted my feet with  
 oyntment. 47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, man-  
 ynes are forgiven her: for she loued much. T

who

## C H A P. VIII.

whom a litle is forgiuen,hee doeth loue a litle.

48 And he said vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiue thee 49 And they that sate at table with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that euen forgiueth sinnes? 50 And hee said to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee: goe in peace.

C H A P. 8. 4. *The parable of the sower.*

16 *The candle.*

**A**Nd it came to passe afterward, that hee himselfe went through euery city and towne, preaching and publishing the kingdom of God, and the twelue were with him, 2 And certaine women which were healed of euill spirits and infirmities, as \* Mary which was called magdalene, out of whom went seuen deuils, 3 And Iohanna the wife of Chuza Herods steward, & Susanna, & many other which ministred vnto him of their substance. 4 \* Now when much people were gathered together, and were come vnto him out of al cities, he spake by a parable. 5 A sower went out to sow his seed & as he sowed, some fel by the wayes side, & it was troden vnder feet, & the foules of heauen deuoured it vp. 6 And some fell on the stones, and when it was sprung vp, it withered away, because it lacked moistnes. 7 And some fel among thornes, & the thornes sprang vp w<sup>th</sup> it, and choked it. 8 And some fel on good ground, & sprang vp and bare fruit, an hundred fold. And as he saide these things, he cried He y<sup>e</sup> hath eares to heare, let him heare. 9 Then his disciples asked him, demanding

*Mat.*

16. 9.

*Mat.*

13. 3.

*Mat.*

4. 9.

# S. I V K E.

what parable that was 10 And he said, vnto you  
it is giuen to know the secrets of the kingdome  
of God, but to other in parables, that when they  
see, they should not see, and when they heare,  
they should not vnderstand. 11 \* The parable  
is this, The seede is the word of God. 12 And  
they that are beside the way, are they that heare:  
afterward commeth the deuill, and taketh away  
the word out of their hearts, lest they should  
belecue, and bee saued. 13 But they that are on  
the stones, ~~are they~~ which when they haue heard,  
receiue the word with ioy: but they haue no  
roots: which for a while beleue, but in y<sup>e</sup> time  
of tentation goe away. 14 And that which fell  
among thornes, are they which haue heard, and  
after their departure are choked with cares &  
with riches, & voluptuous liuing, & bring forth  
no fruit. 15 But that which fell in good ground,  
are they which with an honest and good heart  
heare the word, and keepe it, and bring forth  
fruit with patience. 16 \* No man when he hath  
lighted a candle, couereth it vnder a vessell, nei-  
ther putteth it vnder the bed, but setteth it on a  
candlesticke, that they that enter in, may see the  
light. 17 \* For nothing is secret, that shall not  
be euident: neither any thing hid, that shall not  
be knowen & come to light. 18 Take heed ther-  
fore how ye heare: for whosoever hath, to him  
shalbe giuen: and whosoever hath not, from him  
shalbe taken euen that which it seemeth that he  
hath. 19 \* Then came to him his mother and his  
brethren,

## C H A P V I I I.

brethren, & could not come neere to him for the  
 preasse. 20 And it was tolde him *by certaine*,  
 which sayd, Thy mother and thy brethren stand  
 without, and would see thee. 21 But he answe-  
 red and sayd vnto them My mother, and my bre-  
 thren are these which heare the word of God, &  
 doe it. 22 \* And it came to passe on a certaine  
 day, that he went into a ship with his disciples,  
 & he said vnto them, Let vs go ouer to the other  
 side of the lake. And they lanchd forth. 23 And  
 as they sailed, he fel asleepe, & there came down  
 a storme of wind on the lake, & they were filled  
 with water, & were in ieopardy. 24 Then they  
 went to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Ma-  
 ster, we perish. And hee arose, and rebuked the  
 winde, & the waues of water: and they ceased,  
 and it was calme. 25 Then he sayd vnto them,  
 Where is your faith? and they feared, and won-  
 dred among themselues saying, Who is this that  
 commandeth both the windes & water, and they  
 obey him! 26 \* So they sailed vnto the region  
 of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galile.  
 27 And as he went out to land, there met him a  
 certaine man out of the citie, which had deuils  
 long time, and hee ware no garment, neither a-  
 bode in house, but in the graues. 28 And when  
 he saw Iesus, he cried out, and fell downe before  
 him, and with a loud voyce said, What haue I to  
 doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of God the most  
 High? I beseech thee torment me not: 29 For  
 hee commanded the soule spirit to come out of

*Mat.*  
 8. 23.  
*mark.*  
 4. 36.

*Mat.*  
 8. 28.  
*mark.*  
 5. 1.

# S. L V K E.

the man: (for oft times he had caught him: there-  
fore he was bound with chaines, and kept in fet-  
ters, but he brake the bands, and was caried of  
the deuill into wildernesles) 30 Then Iesus af-  
ked him saying, What is thy name? and he said,  
Legion, because many deuils were entred into  
him. 31 And they besought him that he would  
not comaund them to goe out into the deepe.  
32 And there was there by an heard of many  
swine, feeding on a hill: and the *deuils* besought  
him, that he would suffer them to enter into them.  
So hee suffered them. 33 Then went the deuils  
out of the man, and entred into the swine: & the  
heard was caried with violence from a sleepe  
down place into y lake, & was choked. 34 When  
the heardmen sawe what was done, they fled:  
and when they were departed, they tolde it in  
the city & in the countrey. 35 Then they came  
out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and  
found the man out of whom the deuils were de-  
parted, sitting at the feet of Iesus clothed, and in  
his right minde: and they were afraid. 36 They  
also which sawe it, tolde them by what meanes  
he that was possessed with the deuill, was healed.  
37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey  
about y Gadarenes, besought him, that he would  
depart from them: for they were taken with a  
great feare: and he went into the ship, & return-  
ed. 38 Then the man, out of whom the deuils  
were departed, besought him that he might bee  
with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

## C H A P. VIII.

39 Returne into thine owne house, and shewe  
 what great things God hath done to thee. So he  
 went his way, and preached thorowout all the  
 city what great things Iesus had done vnto him.  
 40 And it came to passe, when Iesus was come  
 againe, that the people receiued him: for they  
 all waited for him. 41 \* And beholde, there *Mat.*  
 came a man named Iairus, & he was the ruler of *9.18.*  
 the Synagogue, who fell downe at Iesus feete, *marke*  
 and besought him that hee would come into his *5.22.*  
 house: 42 For he had but a daughter onely, a-  
 bout twelue yeeres of age, & she lay a dying, (&  
 as he went, the people thronged him. 43 And a  
 woman hauing an issue of blood, twelue yeeres  
 long, which had spent al her substance vpon Phy-  
 sicians & could not be healed of any: 44 When  
 he came behinde *him*, she touched the hem of  
 his garment, and immediatly her issue of blood  
 stanchd. 45 Then Iesus sayd, Who is it that  
 hath touched me? When euery man denied, Pe-  
 ter sayd & they that were with him, Master, the  
 multitude thrust thee, and tread on thee, & sayest  
 thou who hath touched me? 46 And Iesus said,  
 Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that  
 vertue is gone out of me. 47 When the wo-  
 man saw that she was not hid, shee came tremb-  
 ling, and fell downe before him, and tolde him  
 before al the people, for what cause she had tou-  
 ched him. and how she was healed immediatly.  
 48 And he said vnto her, Daughter, be of good  
 comfort: thy faith hath saued thee: goe in peace.  
 49 While



# S. I V R E.

49 While hee yet spake, there came one from the ruler of the Synagogues house, which said to him, Thy daughter is dead : disease not the Master. 50 When Iesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not : beleue only, & she shalbe saued. 51 And when he went into the house, he suffered no man to go in with him, saue Peter & Iames, and Iohn, and the father & mother of the maid. 52 And all wept, and sorowed for her: but he said, Weepe not : for she is not dead, but sleepeth. 53 And they laught him to scorne, knowing that shee was dead. 54 So hee thrust them all out, and tooke her by the hand, & cried, saying, Mayd, arise. 55 And her spirit came againe, and she arose straightway : and he commanded to giue her meate. 56 Then her parents were astonied : but hee commanded them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. 9. *Of three that would follow Christ.*

*Mat.* **T**hen \* called he his twelue disciples together,  
*10.1.* and gaue them power & authoritie ouer all  
*Mat.* deuils, and to heale diseases. 2 \* And hee sent  
*10.7.* them forth to preach the kingdome of God and  
*Mat.* to cure the sicke. 3 And he said to them, \* Take  
*10.9.* nothing to your iourney, neither stauies nor  
*mark.* scrip, neither bread, nor siluer neither haue two  
*6.8.* coates a piece 4 And whatsoever house ye enter  
into there abide, and thence depart. 5 And  
howe many soeuer will not receiue you, when  
*Chap.* ye goe out of that citie, \* shake off the very dust  
*10.11.* from your feete for a testimonie against them.

6 And

## C H A P. IX.

6 And they went out, and went thorow euery  
towne, preaching the Gospel, and healing euery  
where. 7 \*Now Herode the Tetrarch heard of *Matt.*  
all that was done by him: and he doubted, be- *14.1.*  
cause that it was said of some, that Iohn was ri- *marke*  
sen againe from the dead: 8 And of some, that *6.14.*  
Elias had appeared: and of some, that one of the  
olde Prophets was risen againe. 9 Then He-  
rod sayd, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is  
this, of whom I heare such things? and he desi-  
red to see him. 10 \* And when the Apostles re- *Matt.*  
turned, they tolde him what great things they *6.30.*  
had done. \* Then hee tooke them to him, and *Mat.*  
went aside into a solitary place, *14.13.*  
where to the citie  
called Bethsaida. 11 But when the people knew *marke*  
it, they followed him: and he receiued them and *6.32.*  
spake vnto them of the kingdome of God. and  
healed them that had need to be healed: 12 \*And *Matt.*  
when the day began to weare away, the twelue *14.15.*  
came and sayd vnto him, Send the people away, *marke*  
that they may goe into the townes and villages *5.35.*  
round about and lodge, and get meate: for we *10.1.*  
are here in a desert place. 13 But he said vnto *6.5.*  
them, Giue ye them to eate. And they said, We  
haue no mee but fise loaves and two fishes, ex-  
cept we should go and buy meat for all this peo-  
ple. 14 For they were about fise thousand  
men. Then he said to his disciples, Cause them  
to sit downe by fifties in a company. 15 And  
they did so, and caused al to sit downe. 16 Then  
he tooke the fise loaves, and the two fishes, and  
looked

# S. L V K E.

looked vp to heauen, & blessed them, and brake,  
& gaue to the disciples, to set before the people.

17 So they did all eate, and were satisfied: and  
there was taken vp of that remained to them,

*Mat.* twelue baskets ful of broken meate. 18 \* And it

16.13. came to passe, as he was alone praying, his disci-

*marke* ples were with him: and he asked them, saying,

8.27. Whom say the people that I am? 19 They an-

swered and said, Iohn Baptist: and other say, E-

lias: and some say, that one of the olde Prophets

is risen againe. 20 And he said vnto them, But

whom say ye that I am? Peter answered, & sayd,

That Christ of God. 21 And he warned & com-

manded them, that they should tell that to no

*Matt.* man, 22 Saying, \* The Sonue of man must suffe

17.22. for many things and be reprobued of the Elders,

*marke* and of the hie Priests, & Scribes, & be slaine, and

8.31. the third day rise againe. 23 And he said to them

all, If any man will come after me, let him denie

himselfe, & take vp his crosse dayly & folow me,

*Chap.* 24 \* For whosoever wil saue his li'e, shall lose

17.33. it: and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake,

*Matt.* the same shal saue it. 25 \* For what auantageth

16.26. it a man, if he win the whole world, and destroy

*Chap.* himselfe, or lose himselfe? 26 \* For whosoever

12.9. shalbe ashamed of me, and of my words of him

*mat.* shal the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he shal

10.33. come in his glory, & in the glory of the Father, &

*Mat.* of the holy Angels. 27 \* And I telyou of a sure-

16.28. tie, there be some standing here, which shall not

taste of death till they haue seene the kingdome

## C H A P. IX.

of God. 28 \* And it came to passe about an *Mat.*  
 eight dayes after those words, that he tooke Pe- 17.2.  
 ter & Iohn, and Iames, & went vp into a moun- *marke*  
 taine to pray. 29 And as he prayed, the fashion 9.2.  
 of his countenance was changed, & his garment  
 was white & glitred. 30 And behold, two men  
 talked with him, which were Moses and Elias.  
 31 Which appeared in glory, & tolde of his de-  
 parting, which he should accomplish at Hieru-  
 salem. 32 But Peter & they that were with him,  
 were heauie with sleepe, and when they awoke,  
 they saw his glory, and the two men standing  
 with him. 33 And it came to passe, as they depar-  
 ted from him, Peter said vnto Iesus Master, it is  
 good for vs to be here: let vs therefore make  
 three Tabernacles, one for thee, & one for Mo-  
 ses, and one for Elias, and wist not what he said.  
 34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud and  
 ouersadowed them, and they feared when they  
 were entring into the cloude. 35 \* And there *2. Pet.*  
 came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is that *17.*  
 my beloued Sonne, heare him. 36 And whē the  
 voice was past, Iesus was found alone: and they  
 kept it close, & tolde no man in those dayes any  
 of those things which they had seene. 37 And  
 it came to passe on the next day, as they came  
 do vne from the mountaine, much people met  
 him. 38 \* And beholde, a man of the company *Mat.*  
 cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, beholde *17.14.*  
 my sonne: for he is all that I haue. 39 And loe, *marke*  
 a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, & he *9.17.*  
 scarce

# S. L V K E.

teareth him, that he formeth and hardly departeth from him, when he hath bruised him. 40 Now I haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but they could not. 41 Then Iesus answered, and sayd. O generation faithlesse, and crooked, how long now shall I bee with you and suffer you to bring thy sonne hither. 42 And whiles he was yet comming, the deuill rent him, & tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, & healed the childe, and deliuered him to his father. 43 And they were all amased at the mighty power of God: and while they all wondred at all things, which Iesus did, hee sayde vnto his disciples,

*Mat.* 44 Marke these words diligently: \* for it shall  
17.23. come to passe, that the Sonne of man shall be de-  
*marke* liuered into the hands of men. 45 But they vn-  
9.31. derstood not that worde: for it was hid from them, so that they could not perceiue it: & they

*Mat.* feared to aske him of that worde. 46 \* Then  
18.1. there arose a disputation among them, which of them should be the greatest. 47 When Iesus saw the thoughts of their hearts, he tooke a little child, and set him by him, 48 And said vnto the,  
Whosoever receiueh this little childe in my Name, receiueh mee: and whosoever shall receiue me receiueh him that sent me: for he that

*Mar.* is least among you all, he shal be great. 49 \* And  
9.38. Iohn answered, and said, Master, we saw one casting out deuils in thy Name, and wee forbade him, because he followeth thee not with vs.  
50 Then Iesus sayd vnto him, Forbid ye him

## C H A P. IX.

not: for hee that is not against vs, is with vs.  
51 And it came to passe, when the dayes were  
accomplished, that he should be receiued vp. he  
setled himselfe fully to go to Hierusalē, 52 And  
sent messengers before him: and they went and  
entred into a towne of the Samaritanes, to pre-  
pare him *lodging*. 53 But they would not re-  
ceiue him because his behauiour was, as though  
he would go to Hierusalem. 54 And when his  
disciples, James and Iohn saw it, they said, Lord,  
wilt thou *ŷ* we command, that fire come downe  
from heauen, & consume the, euen as \* Elias did *1. Kin.*  
55 But Iesus turned about, & rebuked them, and *1. 10,*  
said, Ye know not of what spirit ye are. 56 For *12, 13.*  
the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens  
liues, but to saue them. Then they went to ano-  
ther towne. 57 And it came to passe that as they  
went in the way, a \* certaine man said vnto him, *Matt.*  
I will follow thee, Lord, whithersoever thou *8. 19.*  
goest. 58 And Iesus sayd vnto him, The foxes  
haue holes, and the birds of the heauen nests,  
but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay  
his head. 59 But he said vnto another, Follow  
me. And the same sayd, Lord, suffer me first to go  
and bury my father. 60 And Iesus sayde vnto  
him, Let the dead bury their dead: but goe thou,  
and preach the kingdome of God. 61 Then  
another sayd, I will follow thee, Lord: but let  
me first go bid them farewell, which are at mine  
house. 62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man  
that putteth his hand to the plough, and looketh  
backe,

S. L V K E.

backe, is apt to the kingdome of God.

CHAP. 10. 30 *Who is our neighbour.*

*Mat.* **A**fter these things the Lord appointed other  
10. 1. *seuentie* also, and sent them two & two be-  
fore him into euery city and place, whither he  
himself should come. 2 And he said vnto them,

*Mat.* \* The haruest is great, but the laborers are few:

9. 37. pray therefore the Lord of the haruest to send

*Mat.* forth labourers into his haruest 3 \* Goe your

10. 16. wayes: beholde I send you forth as lambes a-

mong wolues. 4 Beare no bag neither scrip, nor

1. *Kin.* shoes, and \* salute no man by the way. 5 \* And

4. 29. into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be

*Mat.* to this house. 6 And if the sonne of peace be

10. 12. there, your peace shall rest vpon him: if not it shall

turne to you againe. 7 And in that house tarry

still, eating and drinking such things as by them

*Deut.* shall be set before you. \* for the laborer is worthy

24. 14. of his wages. Go not from house to house. 8 \* But

*Mat.* into whatsoever citie ye shall enter, if they re-

10. 11. ceive you, eate such things as are set before you

9 And heale the sicke that are there and say vnto

them, The kingdome of God is come neere vnto you.

10 But into whatsoever citie ye shall

enter, if they will not receive you, goe your

wayes out into the streetes of the same, and say

*Cha.* 9 11 \* Euen the very dust, which cleaueth on vs

5. *all.* your citie, wee wipe off against you: notwithstanding

13. 51. standing know this, that the kingdome of God

*and* was come neere vnto you 12 For I say vnto

18. 6. you, that it shall be easier in that day for them

to say

# C H A P. X.

Sodom, then for that citie. **12** \* Wo be to thee *Mat.*  
 Chorazin: woe be to thee Bethsaida: for if the **11.21.**  
 miracles had beene done in Tyrus and Sidon,  
 which haue beene done in you, they had a great  
 while agoe repented, sitting in sackcloth and  
 ashes. **14** Therefore it shalbe easier for Tyrus  
 and Sidon, at the iudgement, then for you.  
**15** And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to  
 heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell. **16** \* He *Mat.*  
 that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despi- **10.40.**  
 seth you despiseth me: and hee that despiseth *197m*  
 me despiseth him that sent me. **17** And the se- **13.20**  
 nentie turned againe with ioy, saying, Lord, euen  
 the deuils are subdued vnto vs through thy  
 Name. **18** And he said vnto them, I saw Satan,  
 like lightning fall downe from heauen. **19** Be-  
 holde I giue vnto you power to tread on ser-  
 pents, & scorpions, & ouer all the power of the  
 enemie, & nothing shal hurt you. **20** Neuerthe-  
 lesse, in this reioyce not, that the spirits are sub-  
 dued vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your  
 names are written in heauen. **21** That same  
 houre reioyced Iesus in the Spirit, & said, I con-  
 fesse vnto thee, Father, Lorde of heauen & earth,  
 that thou hast hid these things from the wise and  
 understanding, and hast reueiled them to babes:  
 yea so, Father, because it so pleased thee. **22** All  
 things are giuen me of my Father: and no man  
 knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father: nei-  
 ther who the Father is saue the Sonne, & he to  
 whom the Sonne will reueile him. **23** And he



**Mat.** turned to his disciples, & said secretly, \* Blessed  
**23.16.** are the eyes which see <sup>y</sup> ye see, **24** For I tel you,  
 that many Prophets & kings haue desired to see  
 those things which ye see, & haue not seene <sup>the</sup>:  
 and to heare those things which yee heare, and  
**Mat.** haue not heard <sup>them</sup>. **25** \*Then behold, a cer-  
**22.35.** taine Lawyer stoode vp, & tempted him, saying,  
**mark.** Master, what shall I doe, to inherite eternall life?  
**23.28** **26** And he said vnto him, What is written in the  
 Law? how readeest thou? **27** And he answered, and  
**Deu.** said, \*Thou shalt loue <sup>y</sup> Lord thy God with all  
**6.5.** thine heart, & with all thy soule, & with all thy  
**Leuit.** strength, & with all thy thought, \* & thy neigh-  
**19.18.** bour as thy selfe. **28** Then he said vnto him,  
 Thou hast answered right: this doe, & thou shalt  
 liue. **29** But he willing to iustifie himselfe, sayd  
 vnto Iesus, Who is then my neighbour? **30** And  
 Iesus answered, and saide, A certaine man went  
 downe frō Hierusalem to Iericho, & fell among  
 theeues, & they robbed him of his raiment, and  
 wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe  
 dead. **31** Nowe so it fell out, that there came  
 downe a certaine Priest that same way, & when  
 he sawe him, hee passed by on the other side,  
**32** And likewise also a Leuite, when hee was  
 come neere to the place, went and looked on  
 him, and passed by on the other side. **33** Then a  
 certaine Samaritane, as he journeyed, came  
 neere vnto him, and when he sawe him, he had  
 compassion on him, **34** And went to him, and  
 bound vp his wounds, and powred in oyle and  
 wine,

## C H A P. XI.

wine, & put him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him. 35 And on the morowe when he departed, hee tooke out two pence, & gaue them to y<sup>e</sup> hoste, and said vnto him, Take care of him, & whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe, I will recompense thee. 36 Which now of these thee, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues? 37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe, & do thou likewise. 38 Now it came to passe as they went, that he entred into a certaine towne, & a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house. 39 And shee had a sister called Marie, which also sat at Iesus seere and heard his preaching. 40 But Martha was cumbred about much seruing, and came to him, & said, Master doest thou not care that my sifter hath left me to serue alone? bid her therefore that she helpe me. 41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou carest, and art troubled about many things: 42 But one thing is needefull, Marie hath chosen the good part, which shal not be taken away from her.

### C H A P. II. 1. *Howe we should pray.*

And so it was, that as hee was praying in a certaine place, when hee ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples. 2 \* And he saide *Mat. 6.9.* vnto them, When yee pray, say, Our Father, which art in heauen, halowed be thy Name: Thy

N 2                      kingdome

S. L V K E.

kingdome come : Let thy will be done, euen in  
earth, as it is in heauen. 3 Our dayly bread giue  
vs for the day: 4 And forgieue vs our finnes: for  
euen we forgieue euery man that is indetted to  
vs: And lead vs not into temptation: but deliuer  
vs from euill. 5 Moreover he said vnto them,  
Which of you shall haue a friend and shall goe  
to him at midnight and say vnto him. Friends,  
lend me three loanes? 6 For a friend of mine is  
come out of the way to me, and I haue nothing  
to set before him: 7 And he within should an-  
swere and say, Trouble me not: 8 I doe now  
shut and my children are with me in bed : I can  
not rise & giue them to thee. 8 I say vnto you,  
though he would not arise, & giue him, because  
he is his friend, yet doubtles because of his im-  
portunitie, he would arise, & giue him as many  
as he needed. 9 \* And I say vnto you, Aske, and  
it shall be giue you: seeke, & ye shall finde: knocke,  
and it shall be opened vnto you. 10 \* For every  
one that asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh,  
findeth: and to him that knocketh it shall be ope-  
ned. 11 \* If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you  
that is a father, will he giue him a stone? or if he  
ask a fish, will hee for a fish giue him a serpent?  
12 Or if he aske an egge, wil he giue him a scorp-  
pion? 13 If ye then which are euill, can giue  
good gifts vnto your children, how much more  
shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Ghost  
to them that desire him? 14 \* Then he cast out  
the deuill which was dumme: and when the deuill

Mat.

7.7.

Mat.

7.8.

Mat.

7.9.

Mat.

9.32.

# C H A P. XI.

was gone out, the dumme spake, and the people wondered. 15 But some of them said, He casteth out devils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the devils. 16 And others tempted him. seeking of him a signe from heaven. 17 But he knewe their thoughts, & said vnto them, \* Every kingdome diuided against it selfe, shalbe desolate, and an house diuided against an house, falleth. 18 So if Satan also be diuided against himselfe, how shal his kingdome stand, because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub? 19 If I through Beelzebub cast out devils, by whome doe your children cast them out? Therefore shal they be your iudges. 20 But if I by the finger of God cast out devils, doubtlesse the kingdome of God is come vnto you. 21 When a strong man armed, keepeth his palace, the things that he possesseth, are in peace. 22 But when a stronger then he commeth vpon him, and ouercommeth him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and diuideth his spoyle. 23 He that is not with me, is against me: and hee that gathereth not with me, scattereth. 24 \* When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, hee walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and when he findeth none, he sayth, I will returne vnto mine house whence I came out. 25 And when hee cometh, hee findeth it swept and garnished. 26 Then goeth he, & taketh to him seuen other spirits worse then himselfe: and they enter in, and dwell there: so the last state of that man is

Mat.  
9. 34.  
12.  
24.  
Mark.  
3. 22.  
Mass.  
12. 25.  
Mark.  
3. 24.  
Mat.  
12. 43.  
Heb.  
6. 49.

# S. I V K E.

worse then the first. 27 And it came to passe as hee said these things, a certaine woman of the company lifted vp her voyce, and said vnto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked. 28 But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that heare the word of God,

**Mat.** and keepe it. 29 \* And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is a wicked generation: they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen them, but the signe

**Jonas.** of \* Ionas the Prophet. 30 For as Ionas was a signe to the Nineuites: so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation. 31 \* The Queene of

**1. Kin.** the South shall rise in iudgement, with the men of this generation, and shall condemne them: for

**2. cor.** she came from the vtmost partes of the earth to heare the wisdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here. 32 The men of Nineue shall rise in iudgement with this gene-

**Jonas.** ration, and shall condemne it: for they \* repented at the preaching of Ionas: and behold, a greater then Ionas is here. 33 \* No man when he

**chap.** hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a priue place, neither vnder a bushell: but on a candlestick, that they which come in, may see y light.

**Mark.** 34 \* The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, then is thy whole body light: but if thine eye bee euill, then thy body

**Mat.** is darke. 35 Take heede therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darkened. 36 If therefore thy whole body shall be light, hauing no

part

# CHAP. XI.

part darke, then shall all bee light, euen as when  
a candle doeth light thee with the brightnesse.  
37 And as he spake, a certaine Pharise besought  
him to dine with him: and he went in and sate  
downe at table. 38 And when the Pharise sawe  
it, he marueiled that he had not first washed be-  
fore dinner. 39 \*And the Lord said to him, In *Matt.*  
decide yee Pharises make cleane the outside of 23.29:  
the cup, & of the platter: but the inward part is  
full of rauening and wickednesse. 40 Ye fooles,  
did not he that made that which is without, make  
that which is within also? 41 Therefore giue  
almes of those things which you haue, and be-  
hold, all things shalbe cleane to you. 42 But wo  
be to you, Pharises: for ye cith the mint, and the  
rewe, and all maner of herbes, and passe ouer  
iudgement and the loue of God: these ought ye  
to haue done, and not to haue left the other  
vndone. 43 \*Wo be to you Pharises: for ye loue *Chap.*  
the vppermost seates in the Synagogues, and 20.4  
greetings in the markets. 44 Woe be to you,  
Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for \*ye are as *Ma*  
grauies which appeare not, and the men y walke 23.3  
ouer them perceiue not. 45 Then answered one  
of the Lawyers, and said vnto him, Master, thus  
saying, thou puttest vs to rebuke also. 46 And *Ma*  
he said, Wo be to you also, ye Lawyers: \*for ye 23.4  
lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, & *alte*  
ye your selues touch not the burdens with one 15.1  
of your fingers. 47 We be to you: \*for ye build *Ma*  
the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers 23.

## S. I V K E.

killed them. 48 Truly ye beare witnesse, & allow the deedes of your fathers: for they killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. 49 Therefore said the wisdome of God, I will send them Prophets and Apostles, & of them they shall slay, & persecute away, 50 That the blood of al the Prophets, shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation, 51 From the blood of \* Abel vnto the blood \* of Zacharias, which was slaine betwene the altar & the Temple, verely I say vnto you, it shall be required of this generation. 52 We be to you Lawyers; for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your selues, and them that came in, ye forbade 53 And as hee said these things vnto them, the Scribes and Pharises began to vrge him sore, and to prouoke him to speake of many things, 54 Laying waite for him, and seeking to catch some thing of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him.

CHAP. 12. 17 *The parable of the rich man.*

**Mat.** **IN** \* the meane time, there gathered together  
**6.5.** an innumerable multitude of people, so that  
**Mark.** they trode one another: & he began to say vnto  
**1.14.** his disciples first, Take heede to your selues of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocrisie.  
**Mat.** 2 \* For there is nothing couered, that shall not  
**6.26.** be reueiled: neither hid, y<sup>e</sup> shall not be knowne.  
**Mark.** 3 Wherefore whatsoeuer yee haue spoken in  
**1.22.** darkenesse, it shall be heard in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in y<sup>e</sup> care, in secret places, shall be

## C H A P. XII.

shalbe preached on the houses. 4 \* And I say *Matt.*  
 vnto you, my friends, be not afraid of them that 10.28.  
 kill the body, and after that are not able to doe  
 any more. 5 But I will forewarne you whom ye  
 shal feare: feare him, which after he hath killed,  
 hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say vnto you,  
 him feare. 6 Are not five sparrowes bought for  
 two farthings, *and* yet not one of them is forgot-  
 ten before God? 7 \* Yea, and all the haire of 1.52.  
 your head are numbred: feare not therefore: ye 14.45.  
 are more of value then many sparrowes. 8 \* Al- *Chap.*  
 so I say vnto you, Whosoever shall confesse me 9.26.  
 before men, him shall the Sonne of man confesse *Matt.*  
 before the Angels of God. 9 But hee that 10.32.  
 shall denie me before men, shall be denied be- 2.177.  
 fore the Angels of God. 10 \* And whosoever 1.12.  
 shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, *Matt.*  
 shalbe forgien him: but vnto him that shall 12.31.  
 aspheme the holy Ghost, it shall not bee for- *mark.*  
 gien. 11 \* And when they shall bring you vnto 4.38.  
 the Synagogues, and vnto the rulers & princes, 1.106.  
 take no thought howe, or what thing yee shall 5. 15.  
 aswere, or what yee shall speake. 12 For the *Matt.*  
 holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre, 10.19.  
 what ye ought to say. 13 And one of the com- *mark.*  
 any said vnto him, Master, bid my brother di- 13. 11.  
 uide the inheritance with me. 14 And hee said  
 to him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a diui-  
 ner ouer you? 15 Wherefore he said vnto them,  
 take heede, and beware of couetousnesse: for  
 though a man haue abundance, yet his life  
 standeth



# S. I V K E.

standeth not in his riches. 16 And he put forth  
a parable vnto them, saying, The ground of a  
certaine rich man brought forth fruites plente-  
ously. 17 Therefore he thought with himselfe  
saying, What shall I doe, because I haue no  
room, where I may lay vp my fruites? 18 And  
he said, This will I doe, I will pull downe my  
barnes, and build greater, and therein will I ga-  
ther all my fruites, and my goods. 19 And  
he will say to my soule, Soule, thou hast much  
goods laid vp for many yeeres: lue at ease, eat  
drinke, and take thy pastime. 20 But God said  
vnto him, O foole this night will they fetch a-  
way thy soule from thee: then whose shall those  
things be which thou hast prouided? 21 So he  
that gathereth riches to himselfe, and is not rich  
in God. 22 And hee spake vnto his disciples

*Matt.* Therefore I say vnto you, \* Take no thought  
6. 25. for your life, what ye shal eat: neither for your  
1. *pet.* body, what ye shall put on. 23 The life is more  
5 7. then meate: and the body more then the raiment  
*psal.* 24 Consider the rauens: for they neither sew nor  
55. 22. reape: which neither haue storehouse nor barn  
and yet God feedeth them: how much more shall  
ye better then foules? 25 And which of you  
taking thought, can adde to his stature one  
bite? 26 If ye then be not able to doe the least  
thing, why take yee thought for the remnant?  
27 Consider the lilies how they grow: they labour  
not, neither spinne they: yet I say vnto you  
Solomon himselfe in all his royalty was not clothed  
thus

## C H A P. XII.

ed like one of these. 28 If then God so clothe  
 the grasse which is to day in the field, and to mor-  
 row is cast into the ouen, how much more wil he  
 clothe you, O ye of litle faith? 29 Therfore aske  
 not what yee shall eat, or what ye shall drinke,  
 neither hang you in suspense. 30 For all such  
 things the people of the world seeke for: & your  
 Father knoweth that yee haue neede of these  
 things. 31 But rather seeke ye after the kingdom  
 of God, & all these things shalbe cast vpon you.  
 Feare not, litle flocke: for it is your Fathers  
 will, to giue you the kingdom. 32 \* Sel that  
 ye haue, and giue almes: make you bags which  
 waxe not olde, a treasure that can neuer faile in  
 the ouen, where no thiefe cometh, neither mothe  
 rrupteth. 33 For where your treasure is, there  
 will your hearts be also. 34 \* Let your loynes be  
 girded about, and your lights burning, 35 And  
 ye your selues like vnto men that wait for their  
 Master, when he wil returne from the wedding,  
 that when he cometh and knocketh, they may  
 open vnto him immediatly. 36 Blessed are those  
 seruants, whom the Lord when he cometh shall  
 find awake: Verely I say vnto you, he wil gird  
 himselfe about, and make them to sit downe at  
 his table, and wil come forth, & serue them. 37 And  
 hee come in the second watch, or come in the  
 third watch, and shall finde them so, blessed are  
 those seruants. 38 \* Now vnderstand this, that  
 the good man of the house had kuowen at  
 what houre the thiefe would haue come, hee  
 would

*Mat.*

*6.20.*

*1. P<sup>er</sup>*

*1.3.*

*Mat.*

*24.43.*

*reuel.*

*16.15.*

*and*

*3.3.*

# S. L V K E.

would haue watched, and would not haue suffered his house to be digged through 40 Be ye also prepared therefore: for the Sonne of man wil come at an houre whē ye thinke not 41 The Peter said vnto him, Master, tellest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen to all? 42 And the Lord said, Who is a faithfull steward, and wise, whom the master shall make ruler ouer his household, to giue them their portion of meate in season 43 Blessed is that seruant, whom his master when he cometh, shal finde so doing. 44 Of a truth I say vnto you, that he will make him ruler ouer all that he hath. 45 But if that seruant say in his heart, My master doth deferre his coming, and shall begin to smite the seruants & maydens, and to eat, & drinke, and to be drunken: 46 The master of that seruant will come in a day when he thinketh not, & at an houre when he is not ware, and wil cut him off, and giue him his portion with the vnbeleeuers. 47 And that seruant that knew his masters wil, and prepared not himselfe, neither did according to his will, shalbe beaten with many stripes. 48 But he which knew it not, and yet did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes: for vnto whomsoever much is given, of him shal much be required, and to whom men much commit, the more of him wil they aske. 49 I am come to put fire on y<sup>e</sup> earth, and what is my desire, if it be already kindled 50 Notwithstanding I must be baptized with water, and how am I grieved, til it be ended

## C H A P. XIII.

\* Thinke ye that I am come to giue peace on *Mat.*  
 earth? I tel you, nay, but rather debate. 53 For *10.34.*  
 henceforth there shalbe siue in one house di-  
 uided, three against two, and two against three.  
 The father shalbe diuided ag-ainst the sonne,  
 and the sonne against the father: the mother a-  
 gainst the daughter, & the daughter against the  
 mother: the mother in law against her daughter  
 in law, & the daughter in law agai-<sup>st</sup> her mother  
 in law. 54 \* Then said he to the people, When *Mat.*  
 ye see a cloud rise out of the West, straightway *16.2.*  
 ye say, A showre cometh: and so it is. 55 And  
 when ye see the Southwinde blow, ye say, that it  
 shalbe hote: & it cometh to passe. 56 Hypo-  
 crites, ye can discern the face of the earth, and  
 of the skie: but why discern ye not this time?  
 Yea & why iudge ye not of your selues what  
 might? 58 \* While thou goest w<sup>th</sup> thine aduer. *Mat.*  
 sary to the ruler, as thou art in the way, giue di- *5.25.*  
 gnance in the way, y<sup>e</sup> thou mayest be deliuered  
 from him, lest he draw thee to the iudge, & the  
 iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, & the iayler cast  
 thee into prison. 59 I tel thee, thou shalt not de-  
 part thence, till thou hast payed the vtmost mite.

C H A P. 13. 6 *The barren figge tree.*

19 *The graine of mustard seede.*

Here were certaine men present at the same  
 season, that shewed him of the Galileans,  
 whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sa-  
 crifices. 2 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto  
 them, Suppose yee, that these Galileans were  
 greater

greater sinners then all the *other* Galileans, because they haue suffred such things? 3 I tel you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shall all likewise perish. 4 Or thinke you y<sup>e</sup> those eigh-  
teene, vpon whom the tower in Siloam fell and slew them, were sinners about all men that dwelt in Hierusalem? 5 I tell you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shall all likewise perish. 6 He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a fig tree plâted in his vineyard: & he came & sought fruit thereon, & found none. 7 Then said he to the dressers of his vineyard, Beholde, this thre-  
yeres haue I come & sought fruit of this fig tree, and finde none: cut it downe: why keepeth it also the ground barren? 8 And he answered, and said vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yere also, & I dig round about it, and dounge it. 9 And if it beare fruit, *well*: if not, then after thou shalt cut it downe. 10 And he taught in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath day. 11 And beholde there was a woman, which had a spirit of infirmitie eigh-  
teene yeres, & was bowed together, & could not lift vp *her selfe* in any wise. 12 When Iesus saw her, he called her to him, and said to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease. 13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediatly she was made straight againe, & glorified God. 14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and sayde vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke.

worke: in them therefore come and be healed,  
 and not on the Sabbath day. 15 Then answered  
 him the Lord, and said, Hypocrite, doth not eche  
 one of you on the Sabbath *as* loose his oxe or  
 his asse from the stall and leade him away to the  
 water? 16 And ought not this daughter of Abra-  
 ham, whō Satan had bound, loe, eightene yeres,  
 be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?  
 17 And when he said these things, all his aduersa-  
 ries were ashamed: but all the people reioyced  
 at all the excellent things, that were done by him.  
 18 \*Th n sayde hee, What is the kingdome of *Mat.*  
 God like? or whereto shall I compare it? 19 It is like  
 a graine of mustarde seede, which a man *marke*  
 tooke and sowed in his garden, and it grew, and  
 4.31.  
 waxed a great tree, and the foules of the heauen  
 made nests in the branches thereof. 20 \*And a- *Mat.*  
 gaine he said, Whereunto shal I liken the king- *13.33.*  
 dome of God? 21 It is like leauen which a wo-  
 man tooke, and hid in three pecks of flowre till  
 it was leauened. 22 \*And he went through all *Mat.*  
 cities and townes, teaching, and journeying to- *9.35.*  
 wards Hierusalem. 23 Then said one vnto him, *mar.*  
 Lord, are there few? shalbe sauēd? And he said *6.6.*  
 vnto them, 24 \* Striue to enter in at the strait *Mat.*  
 gate: for many, I say vnto you, will seeke to en- *7.13.*  
 ter in, and shal not be able. 25 When the good  
 man of the house is risen vp, and hath shut to the  
 doore & ye begin to stand without, & to knocke  
 at the doore saying, Lord, Lord, open vnto vs, &  
 he shall answere and say vnto you, I know you  
 not

S. L V K E.

not whence ye are, 26 Then shal ye begin to say,  
 We haue eaten and drunke in thy presence and  
*Mat.* thou hast taught in our streets. 27 \* But he shal  
 7.23. say, I tel you, I know ye not whence ye are: de-  
 and part fro me al ye workers of iniquity. 28 There  
 25.41 shalbe weeping and gna'th'g of teeth when yee  
 p/4. shal see Abraham, and Isaac and Iacob, & al the  
 6.8. Prophets in the kingdom of God, & your selues  
 thrust out at doores. 29 Then shal come *many*  
 from the East and from the West, and from the  
 North, and from the South, and shal sit at rable  
*Matt.* in the kingdom of God. 30 \* And behold, there  
 19.30. are last, which shalbe first, & there are first, which  
 and shal be last. 31 The same day there came cer-  
 30.16. taine Pharises, and said vnto him, Depart, and  
 go hence: for Herod will kill thee. 32 Then said  
 he vnto them, Goe ye and tel that foxe, Behold,  
 I cast out deuils and wil heale still to day and to  
 morowe, and the third day I shal be perfected.  
 33 Neuerthelesse I must walke to day, and to  
 morow, and the day following: for it cannot be  
 that a Prophet should perish out of Hierusa-  
*Mat.* lem. 34 \* O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which kil-  
 33 37. lest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent  
 to thee, how often would I haue gathered thy  
 children together, as the henne gathereth her  
 broode vnder her wings, and yee would not.  
 35 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate:  
 and verely I tell you, yee shal not see me vntill  
 the time come that ye shal say, Blessed is he that  
 commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. 14. 16. *Of the great Supper.*

**A**ND it came to passe that when hee was en-  
tred into the house of one of the chiefe Pha-  
rises on the Sabbath *day*, to eat bread, they wat-  
ched him. 2 And beholde, there was a certaine  
man before him, which had the dropsie. 3 Then  
Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers & Pha-  
rises, saying, Is it lawful to heale on the Sabbath  
*day*? 4 And they held their peace. Then he tooke  
him, and healed him, and let him go. 5 And an-  
swered them, saying, Which of you *shal haue an*  
*asse*, or an oxe fallen into a pitte, and will not  
straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?  
6 And they coude not answere him againe to  
those things. 7 He spake also a parable to the  
ghests, when hee marked howe they chose out  
the chiefe roomes, and sayd vnto them, 8 When  
thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding,  
set not thy selfe downe in the chiefe place least  
a more honourable man then thou, bee bidden  
of him, 9 And he that bade both him and thee,  
come, and say to thee, Giue this man roome, and  
thou then begin with shame to take the lowest  
roome. 10 \* But when thou art bidden, go and  
sit downe in the lowest roome, that when he that  
bade thee, cometh, he may say vnto thee, Friend,  
sit vp hier: then shalt thou haue worshop in the  
presence of them that sit at table with thee.  
11 \* For whosoever exalteth himselfe, shall bee  
brought lowe, and hee that humbleth himselfe,  
shall be exalted. 12 Then saide he also to him  
that had bidden him, \* When thou makest a din-

*Prova*

25.52

*Chap.*

18.14

*Prova*

3. 27.

*Job.*

47.8



ner or supper, call not thy friendes, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor the rich neighbours least they also bid thee againe, and a recompense be made thee. 13 But when thou makest a feast call the poore, the maimed, the lame, and the blinde, 14 And thou shalt bee blessed, because they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the iust. 15 Now when one of them that sate at table, heard these things, he said vnto him, Blessed is he that eateth bread in the kingdome of God.

*Mat.* 15 Then said he to him, \* A certaine man made  
22. 1. a great supper, and bade many, 17 And sent his  
*reuel.* seruant at supper time to say to them that were  
19. 9. bidden, Come: for all things are now ready.  
18 But they all with one *mind* began to make  
excuse: The first said vnto him, I haue bought a  
farme, and I must needs goe out, and see it: I  
pray thee haue mee excused. 19 And another  
said, I haue bought five yoke of oxen, and I goe  
out to prooue them: I pray thee haue mee excu-  
sed. 20 And another said, I haue married a wife,  
and therefore I cannot come. 21 So that ser-  
uant returned, & shewed his master these things.  
Then was the good man of the house angry,  
and said to his seruant, Goe out quickly into the  
streetes & lanes of the citie, and bring in hither  
the poore and the maimed and the halt and the  
blind. 22 And the seruant sayd, Lord, it is done  
as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room  
23 Then the master sayd to the seruant, Goe out  
joh

## C H A P. XIII:

into the hie wayes, and hedges, and compell  
them to come in, that mine house may be filled.

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men  
which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 Now there went great multitudes with him,  
and he turned and sayd vnto them, 26 \* If any

man come to mee, and hate not his father, and  
mother, & wife, and children, and brethren, and

sisters: yea, and his owne life also, he cannot bee  
my disciple. 27 \* And whosoener beareth not

his crosse, and cometh after me, cannot be my  
disciple 28 For which of you minding to build a

towre, sitteth not downe before, & counteth the  
cost, whether he haue sufficient to performe it,

29 Least that after he hath laid the foundation,  
and is not able to performe it, all that behold it,

begin to mocke him, 30 Saying, This man be-  
gan to build, and was not able to make an ende?

31 Or what King going to make warre against  
another King, sitteth not downe first, and taketh

counsell, whether he be able with ten thousand,  
to meete him that cometh against him with

twentie thousand? 32 Or els while hee is yet a  
great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desi-

reth peace. 33 So likewise, whosoener he be of  
you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot

be my disciple. 34 \* Salt is good: but if sale  
haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it be salted?

35 It is neither meete for the land, nor yet for  
the dounghill, but men cast it out. Hee that hath

ears to heare, let him heare.

S. L V K E.

CHAP. 15. 11. *The prodigall sonne.*

**For,** **T**hen resorted vnto him al the Publicanes & drew sinners, to heare him. 2 Therefore the Pharisees and Scribes murmured, saying, He receiueith sinners, and eateth with them. 3 Then spake he this parable to them, saying, 4 \*What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if he lose one of them, doth not leaue ninetie and nine in the wilderness, and goe after that which is lost, vntill he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders with ioy. 6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying vnto them Reioyce with me: for I haue found my sheepe which was lost. 7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioy shalbe in heauen for one sinner that couerteth, more then for ninetie and nine iust men, which neede none amendment of life. 8 Either what woman hauing tenne groates if she lose one groate, doeth not light a candle, & sweepe the house & seeke diligently till shee finde it? 9 And when shee hath found it, she calleth her friends, and neighbours, saying, Reioyce with me: for I haue found the groate which I had lost. 10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioy in the presence of the Angels of God, for one sinner, that conuerteth. 11 He sayd moreouer, A certaine man had two sonnes. 12 And the yonger of them sayd to his father, Father, giue me the portion of the goods that falleth to mee. So hee diuided vnto them his substance. 13 So not many dayes after

## C H A P. XV.

when the yonger sonne had gathered all together, he tooke his iourney into a farre countrey, and there hee wasted his goods with riotous li-  
 uing. 14 Now when he had spent al, there arose  
 a great dearth thorowout that land: and he be-  
 gan to be in necessitie. 15 Then he went and  
 claue to a citizen of that countrey, and hee sent  
 him to his farme, to feede swine. 16 And hee  
 would faine haue filled his belly with the huskes,  
 that the swine ate: but no man gaue *them* him.  
 17 Then he came to himselfe, and said, How ma-  
 ny hired seruants at my fathers haue bread y-  
 nough, and I die for hunger? 18 I wil rise and  
 go to my father, and say vnto him, Father, I haue  
 sinned against heauen, and before thee, 19 And  
 am no more worthy to bee called thy sonne:  
 make me as one of thy hired seruants. 20 So he  
 arose and came to his father, and when hee was  
 yet a great way off, his father sawe him, and had  
 compassion, and ranne and fell on his necke, and  
 kissed him. 21 And the sonne sayde vnto him,  
 Father I haue sinned against heauen and before  
 thee, and am no more worthy to bee called thy  
 sonne. 22 Then the father sayd to his seruants,  
 Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and  
 put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feete,  
 23 And bring the fat calfe, and kill him and let  
 vs eate and be mery: 24 For this my sonne was  
 dead and is aliue againe: and he was lost, but he  
 is found. And they began to be mery. 25 Now the  
 elder brother was in the field, & when hee came

S. L V K E.

and drewe neere to the houle, hee heard melody  
and dancing, 26 And called one of his seruants,  
and asked what those things meant. 27 And he  
said vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy fa-  
ther hath killed the fatted calfe, because he hath  
receiued him safe and sound. 28 Then hee was  
angrie, and would not goe in : therefore came  
his father out and intreated him. 29 But hee an-  
swered and said to his father, Loe, these many  
yeeres haue I done thee seruice, neither brake I  
at any time thy commaundement, and yet thou  
neuer gauest me a kid, that I might make merry  
with my friendes. 30 But when this thy sonne  
was come, which hath deuoured thy goods with  
harlots, thou hast for his sake killed the fat calfe.  
31 And he said vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer  
with me, and all that I haue is thine. It was meet  
that wee should make merry, and bee glad : for  
this thy brother was dead, and is aiiue againe:  
and he was lost, but he is found.

CHAP. 16 1 *The vnjust steward. 19 Of  
Dimes and Lazarus.*

**A**ND he said also vnto his disciples, There  
was a certaine rich man, which had a stew-  
ard, & he was accused vnto him, that hee waited  
his goods. 2 And he called him, and said vnto  
him, How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an  
account of thy stewardship : for thou mayest be  
no longer steward. 3 Then the steward sayde  
within himselfe, What shal I doe? for my master  
taketh away from mee the stewardship : I can  
not

## C H A P. XVI.

not dig, *and* to beg I am ashamed. 4 I know what I will doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue mee into their houses. 5 Then called hee vnto him euery one of his masters debtors, and sayd vnto the first, How much owest thou vnto my master? 6 And hee sayd, An hundred measures of oyle. And he said to him, Take thy writing, and sit downe quickly, and write fiftie. 7 Then sayd he to another, Howe much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheate. Then hee sayd to him, Take thy writing, and write foure score. 8 And the Lord commended the vniust steward because hee had done wisely. Wherefore the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light. 9 And I say vnto you, Make you friendes with the riches of iniquitie, that when yee shall want, they may receiue you into euerlasting habitations. 10 Hee that is faithfull in the least, he is also faithfull in much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vniust also in much. 11 If then ye haue not bene faithfull in the wicked riches, who will trust you in the true *treasures*? 12 And if ye haue not bene faithfull in another mans goods, who shall giue you that which is yours? 13 \* No seruant can *Matt.* serue two masters: for either hee shall hate the *6.24.* one, and loue the other: or els he shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serue God and riches. 14 All these things heard the Pharisees also which were couetous, and they

# S. L V K E.

scoffed at him. 15 Then he sayd vnto them, Yea are they, which iustifie your selues before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abominati-

*Mat.* on in the sight of God. 16 \* The Lawe and the  
 xi. 12. Prophets *endured* vntill Iohn: and since that time the kingdome of God is preached, & euery

*Mat.* man preasleth into it. 17 \* Nowe it is more ea-  
 s. 18. sie that heauen and earth should passe away, then

*Mat.* that one tittle of the Law should fall. 18 \* Who-  
 s. 32. soeuer putteth away his wife, and marrieth ano-  
 and ther, committeth adultery: and whosoever mar-

39. 9. rieth her that is put away from her husband, co-  
 3. cor. mitteth adultery. 19 There was a certaine rich

7. 11. man, which was clothed in purple, & fine linnen,  
 and fared well and delicately euery day. 20 Also

there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores, 21 And desired to bee refreshed with the crummes that fell from the rich mans table: yea, and the dogs came and licked his sores. 22 And it was so that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome. The rich man also died, and was buried. 23 And being in hell in torments, he lift vp his eyes, and saw Abraham as farre off, and Lazarus in his bosome. 24 Then hee cried, and said, Father Abraham, haue mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongne: for I am tormented in this flame. 25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time

receiuest

## C H A P. XVII.

receiuedst thy pleasures, and likewise Iazarus paines: nowe therefore is hee comforted, and thou art tormented. 26 Besides all this, betweene you and vs there is a great gulf set, so that they which would goe from hence to you, can not: neither can they turne from thence to vs. 27 Then hee said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house, 28 (For I haue five brethren) that he may tellise vnto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. 29 Abraham sayd vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets: let them heare them 30 And he said Nay, father Abraham: but if one came vnto them from the dead, they wil amend their liues. 31 Then hee sayd vnto him, If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they bee perswaded, though one arise from the dead againe.

CHAP. 17. 11 *O the ten lepers.* 38 *The manner of Christs comming.*

**T**hen said hee to the disciples, \* It cannot be *Matt.* auoyded, but that offences will come, but 18. 7. woe is to him by whom they come. 2 It is better for him that a great millstone were hanged 9. 42. about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones. 3 Take heede to your selues: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him: and if he repent, forgiue him. 4 \* And though he sinne *Matt.* against thee seuen times in a day and seuen times 18. 21. a day turne againe to thee, saying, It repenteth



# S. L V K E.

me, thou shalt forgine him. 5 And the Apostles  
 sayd vnto the Lord, Increase our faith. 6 And  
*Mat.* the Lord said, \* If ye had faith, *as much* as is a  
 27.20. graine of mustard seed, and should say vnto this  
 mulbery tree, Plucke thy selfe vp by the roots,  
 and plant thy selfe in the sea, it should euen o-  
 bey you. 7 Who is it also of you, that hauing  
 a seruant plowing or feeding cattell, would say  
 vnto him by & by, when he were come from the  
 field, Goe, and sit downe at ta le? 8 And would  
 not rather say to him, Dresse wherewith I may  
 suppe, and gird thy selfe, and serue mee, till I  
 haue eaten and drunken, and afterward thou  
 shalt eate and drinck? 9 Doeth hee thanke that  
 seruant, because he did that which was comman-  
 ded vnto him? I trow not. 10 So likewise ye,  
 when yee haue done all those things which are  
 commanded you, say, We are vnprofitable ser-  
 uants: we haue done that which was our duty  
 to do. 11 And so it was when he went to Hieru-  
 salem, that he passed thorow the mids of Sama-  
 ria, and Galile. 12 And as he entred into a cer-  
 taine towne, there met him ten men that were  
 lepers, which stood as farre off. 13 And they lift  
 vp their voyces, and said Iesus, Master, haue mer-  
 cy on vs. 14 And when hee saw *them* he sayd  
*Leuit.* vnto them, \* Goe shewe your selues vnto the  
 24.2. Priests. And it came to passe, that as they went,  
 they were censed. 15 Then one of them when  
 he saw that he was healed, turned backe, & with  
 a loud voyce praised God, 16 And fell downe

## C H A P. XVII.

on his face at his feet, and gaue him thanks: and  
 he was a Samaritane. 17 And Iesus answered,  
 and sayd, Are there not ten cleansed? but where  
 are the nine? 18 There are none found that re-  
 turned to giue God prayse, saue this stranger.  
 19 And he sayd vnto him, Arise, goe thy way,  
 thy faith hath saued thee. 20 And when he was  
 demanded of the Pharises, when the kingdome  
 of God should come, he answered them & sayd,  
 The kingdome of God cometh not with ob-  
 seruation. 21 Neither shal men say, Loe here,  
 or loe there: for behold, the kingdome of God  
 is within you. 22 And hee said vnto the disci-  
 ples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire  
 to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man,  
 and ye shall not see it. 23 \* Then they shall say *Mass.*  
 to you, Behold here, or behold there: *but go not* 24.23.  
 thither, neither followe them. 24 For as the *marke*  
 lightning that lightneth out of the one *part* vn- 13.31.  
 der heauen, shyneth vnto the other *part* vnder  
 heauen, so shall the Sonne of man be in his day.  
 25 But first must he suffer many things, and be re-  
 prooued of this generation. 26 \* And as it *Gene.*  
 was in the dayes of Noe, so shall it be in the 7.5.  
 dayes of the Sonne of man. 27 They ate, they *mass.*  
 dranke, they married wiues, and gaue in marri- 24.38.  
 age vnto the day that Noe went into the Arke: 1. pet.  
 and the flood came and destroyed them all. 5.20.  
 28 \* Likewise also, as it was in the dayes of Lot, *Gene.*  
 they ate, they dranke they bought, they solde, 19.24.  
 they planted, they built. 29 But in the day that  
 Lot

# S L V K E.

Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heauen, & destroyed the all. 30 After these *ensamples* shall it be in the day when the Sonne of man is reueiled. 31 At that day he that is vpon the house, & his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it out: and he that is in the fiede likewise, let him not turne backe to that he left behinde. 32 \* Remember Lots wife. 33 \* Whosoever will seeke to save his soule, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose it, shall get it life. 34 \* I tell you, in that night there shalbe two in one bed: the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe left. 35 Two women shalbe grinding together: the one shalbe taken, and the other shalbe left. 36 Two shalbe in the field: one shalbe receiued, and another shalbe left. 37 And they answered, and sayd to him, Where, Lord? And hee sayd vnto them, *Mat.* \* Where soeuer the body is, thither shall also the *24.28.* egles be gathered together.

## CHAP. 18. 2 The vnrighteous Iudge.

### 10 The Pharisee and Publicane.

*Rom.* And he spake also a parable vnto them, *12.12.* to this end that they \* ought alwayes to pray, and *2. thes.* not to waxe faint, 2 Saying, There was a Iudge *5.17.* in a certaine city, which feared not God, neither reuerenced man. 3 And there was a widow in that city, which came vnto him, saying, Doe me iustice against mine aduersary. 4 And he would not of a long time: but afterward he said with himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor reue-

sence

## C H A P. XVIII.

rente man, 5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will doe her right, lest at the last shee come and make mee weary. 6 And the Lord sayd, Heare what the vnrighteous Iudge sayth. 7 Now shall not God auenge his elect, which cry day and night vnto him, yea, though he suffer long for them? 8 I tell you he will auenge them quickly: but when the Sonne of man cometh, shall he finde faith on the earth? 9 Hee spake also this parable vnto certaine, which trusted in themselues that they were iust, & despised other: 10 Twomen went vp into the Temple to pray: the one a Pharise, and the other a Publicane. 11 The Pharise stood & prayed thus with himselfe, O God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other men, extortioners, vnjust, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane. 12 I fast twise in the weeke: I giue tithe of all that euer I possesse. 13 But the Publicane standing as farre off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes to heauen, but smote his breast, saying, O God be merciful to me a sinner. 14 I tell you, this man departed to his house iustified, rather then the other: \*for euery *Chap.*  
 man that exalteth himselfe, shalbe brought low, *14 11.*  
 and hee that humbleth himselfe, shalbe exalted. 15 \*They brought vnto him also babes, that hee *Mat.*  
 should touch them And when his disciples saw *19. 13.*  
 it, they rebuked them 16 But Iesus called them *make*  
 vnto him, and sayd, Suffer the babes to come vn- *10. 13.*  
 to mee, and forbid them not: for of such is the  
 kingdome of God. 17 Verely I say vnto you,  
 whoso euer

whosoever receiveth not the kingdom of God,  
*Matt.* as a babe, he shall not enter therein. 18 \* Then  
 19.16. a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good master,  
*marke* what ought I to doe, to inherite ete'nall life?  
 20.17. 19 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Why callest thou  
 mee good? none is good saue one, *eu'n* God.  
 20.20. 20 Thou knowest the commandements,\* Thou  
 20.13. shalt not commit adultery: Thou shalt not kill:  
 Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare  
 false witness: Honour thy father & thy mother.  
 21 And he saide, All these haue I kept from my  
 youth. 22 Now when Iesus heard that, he sayd  
 vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing. Sell all that  
 euer thou hast, & distribute vnto the poore, and  
 thou shalt haue treasure in heauen & come fol-  
 low me. 23 But when he heard those things, he  
 was very heauie: for hee was marneilous rich.  
 24 And when Iesus saw him very sorrowfull, he  
 sayd, With what difficultie shall they that haue  
 riches, enter into the kingdome of God!  
 25 Surely it is easier for a camel to go thorow  
 a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into  
 the kingdome of God. 26 Then sayd they that  
 heard it, And who then can be sau'd? 27 And  
 he said, The things which are vnpossible with  
*Matt.* men, are possible with God. 28 \* Then Peter  
 19.27. said, Lo, we haue left all, and haue folowed thee.  
*marke* 29 And he sayd vnto them, Verely I say vnto  
 20.28. you, there is no man that hath left house, or pa-  
 rents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the  
 kingdome of Gods sake, 30 Which shall not  
 receiue

receiue much more in this world, and in the  
 world to come life euerlasting. 31 \*Then Iesus *Mat.*  
 tooke vnto him the twelue, and sayd vnto them, 20.17.  
 Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and all things *marke*  
 shall be fulfilled to the Sonne of man, that are 10.32.  
 written by the Prophets. 32 For he shall be de-  
 liuered vnto the Gentiles, & shall be mocked, and  
 shall be spitefully entreated, & shall be spitted on.  
 33 And when they haue scourged him, they will  
 put him to death: but the third day he shall rise  
 againe. 34 But they vnderstood none of these  
 things, and this saying was hid from them, nei-  
 ther perceiued they the things which were spo-  
 ken. 35 \* And it came to passe, that as he was *Mat.*  
 come neere vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man 20.29.  
 sat by the way side begging. 36 And when he *marke*  
 heard y<sup>e</sup> people passe by, he asked what it meant. 10.46.  
 37 And they sayd vnto him, that Iesus of Naza-  
 reth passed by. 38 Then he cried, saying, Iesus  
 the sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me. 39 And  
 they which went before, rebuked him that hee  
 should hold his peace: but he cried much more,  
 O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me. 40 And  
 Iesus stood still, and commaunded him to bee  
 brought vnto him. And when he was come nere,  
 he asked him, 41 Saying, What wilt thou that  
 I do vnto thee? And he sayd, Lord, that I may re-  
 ceiue my sight. 42 And Iesus sayd vnto him,  
 Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saued thee.  
 43 Then immediatly he receiued his sight, and  
 followed him, praying God: and all the peo-  
 ple,

### 3. LVKE.

ple, when they saw *this*, gaue prayse to God.

CHAP. 9 13. *The parable of the ten talents.*

**N**OW when Iesus entred and passed thorow Iericho, 2 Beholde, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was rich 3 And hee sought to see Iesus, who he should bee, and could not for the preasse because he was of a low stature, 4 Wherefore he ran before, and climed vp into a wilde fig tree, that he might see him: for he should come that way. 5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp, and saw him, and said vnto him, Zaccheus, come downe at once: for to day I must abide at thine house. 6 Then hee came downe hastily, and receiued him ioyfully, 7 And when all they saw it, they murmured, saying, that he was gone in to lodge with a sinfull man. 8 And Zaccheus stood forth, and sayde vnto the Lord, Beholde, Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue vnto the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauillation, I restore him foure folde. 9 Then Iesus said vnto him, This day is saluation come vnto this house, for as much as he is also become the sonne of Abraham. 10 \* For the Sonne of man is come to

*Mat.* 18. 11. seeke, and to saue that which was lost. 11 And while they heard these things, he continued and spake a parable, because he was neere to Hierusalem, & because also they thought that the king-

*Mat.* 25. 14. dome of God should shortly appeare 12 Hee sayd therefore, \* A certaine noble man went in-

# C H A P. XIX.

to a farre countrey, to receiue for himfelfe a  
kingdome, and fo to come againe. 13 And hee  
called his ten feruants, and deliuered them ten  
pieces of money, and fayd vnto them, Occupie  
till I come. 14 Now his citizens hated him and  
fent an ambassage after him, faying We will not  
haue this man to reigne ouer vs. 15 And it came  
to paffe when hee was come againe, and had re-  
ceined his kingdome, that he commaunded the  
feruants to be called to him, to whom he gaue  
his money, that he might knowe what euery  
man had gained. 16 Then came the first, faying,  
Lord, thy piece hath increased tenne pieces.  
17 And he fayde vnto him, Well good feruant:  
becafe thou haft bene faithfull in a very little  
thing, take thou authoritie ouer tenne cities.  
18 And the fecond came, faying, Lord, thy piece  
hath increased five pieces. 19 And to the fame  
he faid, Be thou alfo ruler ouer five cities. 20 So  
the other came, and faid, Lord, behold thy piece,  
which I haue laid vp in a napkin: 21 For I fea-  
red thee, becaufe thou art a ftrait man: thou ta-  
keft vp that thou layedft not downe, & reapeft  
that thou diddeft not fow. 22 Then he faid vn-  
to him, Of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee,  
Deuill feruant. Thou kneweft that I am a ftrait  
man, taking vp that I laid not downe, and rea-  
ping y I did not fow. 23 Wherefore then ga-  
neft not thou my money into the banke, that at  
my coming I might haue required it with van-  
tage? 24 And he faid to them, that floode by,



# S. L V K E.

Take from him that piece, and giue it him that hath tenne pieces. 25 (And they said vnto him,

**Chap.** Lord, he hath ten pieces) 26 \*For I say vnto you,  
**B. 18.** that vnto all them that haue, it shalbe giuen: and

**Mat. 18.** from him that hath not, euen that he hath, shalbe  
**23. 12** taken from him 27 Moreover, those mine ene-

mies, which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 And when he had thus spoken, he went forth

**Mat.** before, ascending vp to Hierusalem. 29 \* And it

**21. 1.** came to passe, when he was come neere to Beth-

**mark.** phage, and Bethania, besides the mount which is

**21. 1.** called *the mount* of Oliues, he sent two of his

disciples, 30 Saying, Goe ye to the towne which is before you, wherein, as soone as ye are come, ye

shall finde a colt tyed, whereon neuer man sate: loose him, & bring him *hither*. 31 And if

any man aske you, why ye loose him, thus shall ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath neede

of him. 32 So they that were sent, went their way, & found it as he had said vnto them 33 And

as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof sayd vnto them, Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they sayd, The Lord hath neede of him.

**Mat.** 35 \*So they brought him to Iesus, and they cast

**21. 7.** their garments on the colt, and set Iesus there-

**john** on. 36 And as he went, they spred their clothes

**22. 14.** in the way. 37 And when he was now come

neere to the going downe of the mount of Oliues, the whole multitude of the Disciples be-

gan to reioyce, and to praise God with a loude  
voyce

## C H A P. XIX.

voyce, for all the great workes that they had  
 seene, 38 Saying, Blessed be the King that com-  
 meth in the Name of the Lord: peace in heauen,  
 and glory in the highest places. 39 Then some  
 of the Pharisees of the companie said vnto him,  
 Master, rebuke thy disciples. 40 But he answered,  
 and said vnto them, I tell yon, that if these  
 should hold their peace, the stones would crie.  
 41 \*And when he was come neere, he behelde  
 the Citie, and wept for it, 42 Saying, O if thou  
 haddest euen knowen at the least in this thy  
 day those things, which *belong* vnto thy peace!  
 but now are they hid from thine eyes. 43 For  
 the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine ene-  
 mies shall cast a trench about thee, and com-  
 passe thee rounde, and keepe thee in on euery  
 side, 44 And shall make thee euen with the  
 ground and thy children which are in thee, and  
 they shall not leaue in thee a stone vpon a  
 stone, because thou knewest not that season of  
 thy visitation. 45 \*He went also into the Tem-  
 ple, and beganne to cast out them that solde  
 therein, and them that bought, 46 Saying vn-  
 to them, It is written, \* Mine house is the  
 house of prayer, \* but ye haue made it a denne  
 of theeues. 47 And he taught dayly in the Tem-  
 ple And the hie Priests and the Scribes, and the  
 chiefe of the people sought to destroy him.  
 48 But they coulde not finde what they might  
 doe to him: for all the people hanged vpon  
 him, when they heard him.

*Chap.*  
 21. 6.

*Mat.*  
 21. 13

*Mark.*  
 11. 17.  
*Isai.*  
 56. 7.  
*Iere.*  
 7. 11.

S. L V K E.

CHAP. 20. 9 The vineyard let  
out to husbandmen.

**Mat.** **21. 23.** **mark.** **11. 27.** **And** \* it came to pass, that on one of those  
dayes, as he taught the people in the Tem-  
ple, and preached the Gospel, the high Priests  
and the Scribes came vpon him with y<sup>e</sup> Elders,  
2 And spake vnto him saying, Tell vs by what  
authoritie thou doest these things, or who is he  
that hath giuen thee this autho<sup>ty</sup> itie? 3 And he  
answered and sayd vnto them, I also will aske  
you one thing: tell me therefore: 4 The bap-  
tisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?  
5 And they reasoned within thei<sup>r</sup> selues, saying, If  
we shal say, From heauen, he wil say, Why then  
beleueed ye him not? 6 But if we shall say, Of  
men, all the people wil stone vs: for they be per-  
swaded that Iohn was a Prophet. 7 Therefore  
they answered, that they could not tell whence  
it was. 8 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Neither  
tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things.  
9 \* Then began he to speake to the people this  
parable, A certaine man planted a vineyard, and  
let it forth to husbandmen: and went into a  
strange countrey for a great time. 10 And at  
the time co<sup>m</sup>ment, he sent a seruant to the hus-  
bandmen, that they should giue him of the fruite  
of the vineyard: but the husbandmen did beate  
him, and sent him away emptye. 11 Againe  
he sent yet another seruant: and they did beate  
him, and foule entreated him, and sent him away  
emptye. 12 Moreover he sent the third, and him  
they

**Mat.**  
**21. 33.**  
**mark.**  
**12. 1.**  
**Mat.**  
**5. 1.**  
**seve.**  
**3. 21.**

# C H A P. XX.

they wounded, and cast out. 13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard, What shall I doe? I will send my beloued Sonne, it may be that they will doe reuence, when they see him. 14 But when the husbandmen sawe him, they reasoned with themselves, saying, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may bee ours. 15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What shall the Lord of the vineyard therefore doe vnto them? 16 He wil come and destroy these husbandmen, and wil giue out his vineyard to others. But when they heard it they said, God forbid. 17 And he beheld them, & said, What meaneth this then that is written, \* The *Psal.* stone that the builders refused, that is made the 118.2 head of the corner? 18 Whosoever shall fall vpon that stone shall be broken: and on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder. 19 Then the hie Priests & the Scribes the same houre went about to lay handson him: (but they feared the people) for they perceiued that hee had spoken this parable against them. 20 \* And *Mat.* they watched him and sent forth spies, which 22.1 should saine themselves iust men, to take him in *mark* his talke, and to deliuer him vnto the power and 12.13 authoritie of the governour. 21 And they asked him saying, Master, we knowe that thou sayest and teachest right, neither dost thou accept mans person, but teachest the way of God truly. 22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Cesar tribute or no? 23 But he perceiued their craftinesse, and said

S. L V K E.

said vnto them, Why tempt ye me? 24 Shewe  
 me a penie : Whose image and superscription  
 hath it? They answered, & said, Cefars 25 Then  
*Rom.* he said vnto them, \* Giue then vnto Cesar the  
 13. 7. things which are Cefars and to God those which  
 are Gods. 26 And they could not reprove his  
 saying before the people : but they marvelled  
*Matt.* at his answer, and held their peace. 27 \* Then  
 12. 23. came to him certaine of the Sadduces (which de-  
*mark.* nie that there is any resurrection) and they asked  
 12. 18. him, 28 Saying, Master, \* Moses wrote vnto vs,  
*Dent.* If any mans brother die hauing a wife, and hee  
 15. 5. die without children, that his brother should  
 take his wife, and raise vp seede to his brother.  
 29 Now there were seuen brethreu, and the first  
 tooke a wife, and hee died without children.  
 30 And the second tooke the wife, and he died  
 childelesse. 31 Then the third tooke her: and  
 so likewise the seuen died, and left no children.  
 32 And last of al the woman died also. 33 There-  
 fore at the resurrection, whose wife of them  
 shall she be? for seuen had her to wife. 34 Then  
 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, The children  
 of this world marrie wiues, and are married.  
 35 But they which shall be counted worthy to  
 enjoy that world, and the resurrection from the  
 dead, neither marrie wiues, neither are married.  
 36 For they can die no more, forasmuch as they  
 are equall vnto the Angels, and are the sonnes of  
 God, since they are the children of the resur-  
 rection. 37 And that the dead shal rise againe, euen  
 \* *Moses*

# C H A P. XXI.

\* Moses shewed it besides the bush, when hee **Exod**  
 said, The Lord is the God of Abraham, and the **3.6**  
 God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. 38 For he  
 is not the God of the dead, but of them which  
 liue: for all liue vnto him. 39 Then certaine  
 of the Scribes answered, and said, Master, thou  
 hast well said. 40 And after that, durst they not  
 aske him any thing at all. 41 \* Then said he vnto **Matt**  
 them, How say they that Christ is Dauids sonne? **22.4**  
 42 And dauid himselfe saith in the booke of **mar**  
 the Psalmes, \* The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit **12.3**  
 at my right hand, 43 Till I shal make thine ene- **Psal**  
 mies thy foote stoole. 44 Seeing Dauid calleth **110.**  
 him Lord, how is he then his Sonne? 45 Then  
 in the audience of all the people, hee saide vnto  
 his disciples, 46 \* Beware of the Scribes, which **(chap**  
 willingly goe in long robes, and loue salutations **11.4**  
 in the markets, and the highest seates in the as-  
 semblies, and the chiefe roomes at feastes:  
 47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and in  
 shewe make long prayers: These shall receiue  
 greater damnation.

## C H A P. 21. 1. *The widowes mite.* 3 *The destruction of Ierusalem.*

**A**ND \* as he beheld, he saw y rich men, which **Ma**  
 cast their gifts into the treasure. 2 And he **12.4**  
 saw also a certaine poore widow which cast in  
 thither two mites. 3 And he said, Of a trueth I  
 say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in  
 more then they all. 4 For they all haue of their  
 superfluitie cast into the offerings of God: but she

# S. L V K E.

of her pennurie hath cast in all the lining that she  
**Chap.** had 5 \* Now as some spake of y<sup>e</sup> Temple, how it  
**19. 43.** was garnished with goodly stones, & with con-  
**mat.** secrate things, hee said, 6 Are these the things  
**24. 1.** that ye looke vpon? the daies will come, wherein  
**mark.** a stone shall not be left vpon a stone, y<sup>e</sup> shall not  
**13. 1.** bee throwen downe. 7 Then they asked him,  
saying, Master, but when shall these things bee and  
what signe shall there be, when these things shall  
**Ephes.** come to passe? 8 \* And he said, Take heede that  
**5. 6.** ye be not deceived: for many will come in my  
**2. 6. 1.** Name, saying I am *Chr. st.* and the time draweth  
**2. 3.** neere: followe yee not them therefore 9 And  
when ye heare of waies and seditions, be not  
afraid: for these things must first come, but the  
end followeth not by & by. 10 Then said he vn-  
to them, Nation shall rise against nation, & king-  
**Matt.** dome against kingdome, 11 \* And great earth-  
**24. 7.** quakes shall be in diuers places, and hunger, and  
pestilence, & fearefull things, & great signes shall  
there be from heauen. 12 But before all these,  
they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute  
you, deliuering you vp to the assemblies, and into  
prisons, and bring you before kings & rulers, for  
my Names sake. 13 And this shall turne to you,  
**Chap.** for a testimoniall. 14 \* I say it vp therof re in  
**12. 12.** your hearts, that yee cast not before hand what  
**mat.** ye shall answere 15 For I will giue you a mouth  
**10. 19.** and wisdom, whereagainst all your aduersa-  
**mark** ries shall not be able to speake, nor resist. 16 Yea,  
**23. 11** ye shall be betrayed also of your parents, and of  
your

# C H A P. XXI.

your brethren, & kinsmen, & friends, & some of  
you shall they put to death. 17 And ye shall be  
hated of all men for my Names sake. 18 \* Yet *Mat.*  
there shall not one haire of your heads perith. 19 30.  
By your patience possesse your soules. 20 \* And *San.*  
when yee see Hierusalem besieged with souldi- 9 27.  
ers, then vnderstand that the desolation thereof *maist.*  
is neere. 21 Then let them which are in Iudea 24. 15.  
flee to the mountaines: and let them which are *marke*  
in the middes thereof, depart out: and let not 13. 14.  
them that are in the countrey. enter therein.  
22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, to ful-  
fill all things that are written 23 But wote to  
them that be with childe, and to them that giue  
sucke in these dayes: for there shall be great di-  
stresse in this land, and wrath ouer this people.  
24 And they shall fall on the edge of the sword,  
and shalbe led captiues into all nations, and Hie-  
rusalem shalbe troden vnder soote of the Gen-  
tiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.  
25 \* Then there shalbe signes in the Sonne, & in *Isai.*  
the moone, & in the starres and vpon the earth 13. 10.  
trouble among the nations with perplexitie: the *zek.*  
sea & the waters shall roare. 26 And mens hearts 32. 7.  
shall faile them for feare, and for looking after *maist.*  
those things which shall come on the wor'd: 24 29.  
for the powers of heauen shalbe shaken. 27 And *mark.*  
then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a 13. 24.  
cloud, with power & great glory. 28 And when  
these things begin to come to passe, then looke *Rom.*  
vp, and lift vp your heads, \* for your redemption 8. 27.  
draweth



# S. L V K E.

draweth neere 29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold, the fig tree and all trees, 30 When they now shoote forth, ye seeing them, knowe of your owne selues, that summer is then neere. 31 So likewise ye, whē ye see these things come to passe, know yee that the kingdome of God is neere. 32 Verely I say vnto you, This age shall not passe, till all these things be done: 33 Heauen & earth shall passe away, but my words shall

*Rom.* not passe away. 34 \* Take heede to your selues, lest at any time your hearts bee oppressed with surfeiting & drunkennes, & cares of this life, lest that day come on you at vnwares. 35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth 36 Watch therefore and pray continually, that yee may be counted worthy to escape all these things that shal come to passe, and that ye may stand before the Sonne of man. 37 Now in the day time he taught in the Temple, and at night he went out, & abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives. 38 And all the people came in the morning to him, to heare him in the Temple.

*Matt.* CHAP. 22. 3. *Christ is solde and intred.*

26. 1. **N**OW the \* feast of vneleauened bread draweth neere, which is called the Pascheouer. 2 And

*mark.* the hie Priests & Scribes sought how they might kill him: for they feared the people. 3 \* The

26. 14. entred Satan into Iudas, who was called Iscariot, and was of the number of the twelue. 4 And

*mark.* 14. 10. went his way, and communed w<sup>th</sup> the hie Priests

## C H A P. XXII.

and captaines, how he might betray him to them.  
 So they were glad, & agreed to giue him money. 6 And he consented, & sought opportunity to betray him vnto them, when the people were away. 7 \* The came y<sup>e</sup> day of vneleauened bread, *Matt.*  
 when the Passeeouer must be sacrificed. 8 And he *26.17.*  
 sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe and prepare vs the Passeeouer, that we may eate it. 9 And they said to him, Where wilt thou, that we prepare it? 10 Then he said vnto them, Behold, when ye be entred into the citie, there shall a man meete you, bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house that he entreth in, 11 And say vnto the goodman of the house, The matter sayth vnto thee, Where is the lodging where I shall eate my Passeeouer with my disciples? 12 Then he shall shew you a great hie chamber trimmed: there make it ready. 13 So they went & found as hee had said vnto them, and made ready the Passeeouer. 14 \* And when the houre was come, *Mat.*  
 he sate downe, & the twelue Apostles with him. *26.20.*  
 15 Then he said vnto them, I haue earnestly desired to eate this Passeeouer with you, before I suffer. 16 For I say vnto you, Henceforth I will not eate of it any more, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God. 17 And he tooke the *Matt.*  
 cup, and gaue thanks, and said, Take this, & di- *26.26.*  
 uide it among you. 18 For I say vnto you, I will *marke*  
 not drinke of y<sup>e</sup> fruit of the vine, vntill the king- *14.22.*  
 dome of God be come. 19 \* And hee tooke *1.cor.*  
 bread, and when he had giuen thanks, he brake *11.24.*  
 it,

# S. I V R E.

it, and gaue to them, saying, This is my body, which is giuen for you: do this in y<sup>e</sup> remembrance of me. 20 Likewise also after supper he took the cup, saying, This cup is the new Testament in

*Mat.* my blood, which is shed for you. 21 \* Yet be  
26.21 hold, the hand of him that betrayeth me: is with  
*marke* mee at the table 22 And truly the Sonne of  
14.18. man goeth as it is appointed. but wee be to that  
*psal.* man, by whom he is betrayed 23 Then they  
41.9. began to enquire among themselves, which of  
*Mat.* them it should be, that should do that 24 \* And  
20.21 there arose also a strife among them, which of  
*marke* them should seeme to be the greatest 25 But he  
10.42 said vnto them, The kings of the Gentiles reigne  
ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them  
are called bountifull. 26 But ye shall not be so: for  
but let the greatest among you be as the least and  
the chiefest as he that serueth 27 For who is  
greater, he that sitteth at table, or he that serueth  
Is not he that sitteth at table? And I am among  
you as hee that serueth 28 And yee are they  
which haue continued with me in my temptation

*Mat.* 19.28. 29 Therefore I appoint vnto you a kingdom  
1. Pet. as my father hath appointed to me. 30 \* That ye  
5.8. may eate, and drinke at my table in my king-  
*Mat.* dome, and sit on seates, and iudge the twelve  
24.24. tribes of Irael. 3 And the Lord said, Simon S  
*marke* mon, behold, \* Satan hath desired you, to winne  
14.39. you as wileate 32 But I haue prayed for thee  
*john* that thy faith faile not: therefore when thou  
13.38. conuerted, strengthen thy brethren. 33 \* And

## CHAP. XXII.

said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee  
 into prison, and to death. 34 But he said, I tell  
 thee Peter, the cocke shal not crow this day, be-  
 fore thou hast thrise denied that thou knewest  
 me. 35 And he said vnto them, \* Whē I sent you *Mat.*  
 without bagge and scrip, and shoes, lacked yee *10.9.*  
 any thing? And they said. Nothing. 35 Then  
 he said to them, But now hee that hath a bagge,  
 let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and he that  
 hath none, let him sel his coate, and buy a sword.  
 37 For I say vnto you, that yet the same which is  
 written, must be performed in me, \* Euen with *Jsa.*  
 the wicked was hee numbred: for doubtlesse *53.12.*  
 those things which ~~are written~~ of mee, haue an  
 end. 38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two  
 swordes. And he said vnto them, It is ynough.  
 39 \* And he came out, & went (as he was wont) *Mat.*  
 to the mount of Olives: and his disciples also *26.36.*  
 folloved him. 40 \* And when he came to the *Mat.*  
 place, he said to them, Pray, lest ye enter into ten- *26.41.*  
 tion. 41 And he was drawen aside from them *marke*  
 about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and *14.38.*  
 prayed, 42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take a-  
 way this cup from me neuertheless, not my wil,  
 but thine be done. 43 And there appeared an  
 angel vnto him from heauen, comforting him.  
 44 But being in an agonie, he prayed more ear-  
 nestly: and his sweate was like drops of blood,  
 trickling downe to the ground. 45 And he a-  
 rose up from prayer, and came to his disciples,  
 and found them sleeping for heauines. 46 And

# L. L V K E.

he said vnto them, Why sleepe ye? rise & pray,  
*Mat.* lest ye enter into tentation 47 \* And while he  
26.47. yet spake, behold, a company, & he that was cal-  
*marke* led Iudas one of the twelue, went before them,  
14.43. and came neere vnto Iesus to kisse him. 48 And  
*iohn* Iesus sayde vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the  
18.3. Sonne of man with a kisse? 49 Now when they  
which were about him, saw what would follow,  
they said vnto him, Lord, shal we smite w<sup>th</sup> sword?  
50 And one of them smote a seruant of the hie  
Priest, and stroke off his right eare. 51 Then Ie-  
sus answered, and said, Suffer *them* thus far. and  
he touched his eare, and healed him. 52 Then Ie-  
sus saide vnto the hie Priestes, and captaines of  
the temple, and the Elders which were come to  
him, Be ye come out as vnto a thiefe w<sup>th</sup> swords  
and stauces? 53 When I was dayly with you in  
the Temple, ye stretched not forth the handes a-  
gainst mee: but this is your very houre, and the  
*Mat.* power of darknes. 54 \* Then tooke they him,  
26.58. and led him, and brought him to the hie Priestes  
*Mat.* house. And Peter followed as farre off. 55 \* And  
26.58. when they had kindled a fire in the mids of the  
69. hall, and were set downe together, Peter also  
*marke* sate downe among them. 56 And a certaine  
24.66. mayde beheld him as he sate by the fire, and ha-  
uuing well looked on him, said, This man was al-  
so with him. 57 But he denied him, saying, Wo-  
man, I know him not. 58 And after a litle while,  
another man saw him, and said, Thou art also of  
them. But Peter said, Man, I am not. 59 And a  
bo

## C H A P. XXIII.

about the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely euen this man was with him: for hee is also a Galilean. 60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while hee yet spake, the cocke crewe. 61 Then the Lord turned backe, and looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembred the worde of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, \* Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise. 62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly. 63 \* And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, and strooke him. 64 And when they had blindfolded him, they smote him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecie who it is that smote thee. 65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him. 66 \* And as it was day the Elders of the people, and the hie Priests and the Scribes came together, and ledde him into their council, 67 Saying, Art thou that Christ? tell vs. And he sayd vnto them, If I tell you, ye will not belecue it. 68 And if also I aske you, ye will not answere me, nor let me goe. 69 Hereafter shal the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power of God. 70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he said to them, Ye say, that I am. 71 Then sayd they, What neede we any further witnesse? for we our selues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

C H A P. 23. 33 (Christ crucified).

**T**hen the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate. 2 And they began to accuse

S. L V K E.

accuse him, saying, We have found this man per-

**Mat.** uerting the nation,\* & forbidding to pay tribute

22.21 to Caesar, saying, That hee is Christ a king,

Mat. 3 \* And Pilate asked him saying, Art thou the

27. II. King of the Iewes? And he answered him, & said,

mark. Thou sayest it. 4 Then saide Pilate to the hie

**15.2. Priests, and to the people, I finde no fault in this**

man. 5 But they were the more fierce, saying,

18.33. He moveth the people teaching throughout all

Judea, beginning at Galile, even to this place,

6 Now when Pilate heard of Galile, hee asked

whether the man were a Galilean. 7 And when

he knew that he was of Herods jurisdiction, he

sent him to Herod, which was also at Hierusa-

lem in those dayes. 8 And when Herod sawe

hus, he was exceedingly glad : for he was desirous

rous to see him of a long season, because he had

heard many things of him, and trusted to him.

seeke some signe done by him 9 Then questio

ned he w<sup>t</sup> him of many things: but he answered

him nothing? 10 The big Priests also & Scribes

stood forth, and accused him vehemently.

11 And Herod with his men of war despised

him, & mocked him, & arayed him in white, and

sent him againe to Pilate. 12 And the same day Pilate

late & Herod were made friends together: Carbo

fore they were enemies one to another. 13 The

Pilate called together the high priests and the

**Mat.** Pilate called together the chief priests and the teachers and the people. 11 \* And I said unto them

27:33 Yee have brought this man unto me as one that

27.23. Iee haue brought this man vnto me, as one that  
peruerued the people: and behold I haue en

perverted the people: and behold, I have ex-

# C H A P. XXIII.

mined him before you, and haue found no fault  
 in this man, of those things whereof yce accuse  
 him: 15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to  
 him: and lo, nothing worthy of death is done of  
 him. 16 I wil therefore chastise him, and let  
 him loose. 17 (For of necessitie he must haue  
 let one loose vnto them at the feast.) 18 Then  
 althe multitude cried at once, saying, Away with  
 him, and deliuer to vs Barabbas: 19 Which for a  
 certaine insurrection made in the citie, and mur-  
 ther, was cast in prison: 20 Then Pilate spake a-  
 gaine to them, willing to let Iesus loose. 21 But  
 they cryed, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him. 22 And  
 he said vnto them the third time, But what euill  
 hath he done? I finde no cause of death in him: I  
 wil therefore chastise him, & let him loose. 23 But  
 they were instant with loud voyces, & required  
 that he might be crucified: and y voyces of them  
 & of the hie Priests preuailed. 24 So Pilate gaue  
 sentence, y it should be as they required. 25 And  
 he let loose vnto them him, that for insurrection  
 and murder was cast into prison, whō they de-  
 fired, and deliuered Iesus to doe with him what  
 they would. 26 \* And as they led him away, they  
 caught one Simon of Cyrene, coming out of the  
 field, and on him they layd the crosse, to beare it  
 after Iesus. 27 And there followed him a great  
 multitude of people, & of womē, which women  
 bewailed and lamented him. 28 But Iesus turned  
 back vnto them, & said, Daughters of Hierusalē,  
 weepe not for me, but weepe for your selues. &

*Mat.*  
 27. 32  
*mark.*  
 15. 21



S. L V K E.

for your children. 29 For behold, the dayes will  
come, when men shal say, Blessed are the barren,  
and the wombs, that neuer bare, and the pappes  
which neuer gaue sucke. 30 Then shal they be-  
gin to say to the mountaines, \* I fall on vs: and to  
the hils, Couer vs. 31 \* For if they doe these  
things to a greene tree, what shal be done to the  
dry? 32 \* And there were two others, which  
were euil doers, led with him to be flaine 33 And  
when they were come to the place, which is cal-  
led Caluary, there they crucified him, & the euil  
doers, one at the right hand, and the other at the  
left. 34 Then said Iesus, Father, forgive them for  
they know not what they do. And they parted  
his raiment, & cast lots. 35 And y<sup>e</sup> people stood  
and behelde: and the rulers mocked him with  
them, saying He saued others: let him saue him-  
selfe, if hee bee that Christ, the Chosen of God.  
36 The souldiers also mocked him, & came and  
offred him vinegar, 37 And said if thou be the  
King of y<sup>e</sup> Iewes saue thy selfe. 38 And a super-  
scription was also written ouer him, in Greeke  
letters, and in latine, & in Hebrew, THIS IS  
THAT KING OF THE IEWES  
39 And one of the euil doers, which were hang-  
ed, railed on him, saying, If thou be that Christ  
saue thy selfe & vs. 40 But the other answered  
and rebuked him saying, Fearest thou not God  
seeing thou art in the same condemnation  
41 We are in deed righteously here: for we haue  
receiue things worthy of that we haue done: but

## C H A P. XXII.

this man hath done nothing amisse. 42 And he  
 said vnto Iesus, Lord remember mee, when thou  
 comest into thy kingdom 43 Then Iesus said  
 vnto him. Verily I say vnto thee, to day shalt  
 thou be with me in Paradise. 44 And it was a-  
 bout the sixth houre: and there was a darkenes  
 ouer all the land, vntil the ninth houre. 45 And  
 the Sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the  
 Temple was rent through the mids. 46 And Ie-  
 sus cried with a loud voice & said, \* Father, in- *Psal.*  
 to thine hands I commend my spirit. And when *31. 6*  
 he thus had said, he gaue vp the ghost. 47 Now  
 when the Centurion saw what was done, he glo-  
 rified God, saying, Of a suretie this man was iust.  
 48 And al the people that came together to that  
 sight, beholding the things which were done,  
 smote their breastes, and returned. 49 And all  
 his acquaintance stode asarte off, and the wo-  
 men that followed him from Galile, beholding  
 these things. 50 \* And behold, there was a man *Mat.*  
 named Ioseph which was a counsellor, a good mā *27. 57*  
 and a iust. 51 (He did not cōsent to the counsel, *mark.*  
 and dede of them) *which was* of Arimathea, a *15. 43*  
 citie of the Iewes: who also himselfe waited for *iohn*  
 the kingdome of God. 52 He went vnto Pilate, *19. 38*  
 and asked the body of Iesus, 53 And tooke it  
 downe, and wrapped it in a linnen cloth, & laid it  
 in a tombe hewen out of a rocke, wherein was  
 neuer man yet laid 54 And that day was the pre-  
 paration, and the Sabbath drew on 55 And the  
 women also y followed after, which came with

# S. I V K E.

him from Galile, beheld the sepulchre, & how his body was laid. 6 And they returned, & prepared odours, and oynments, and rested the Sabbath day according to the commandement.

## CHAP. 24. 6. Christes resurrection.

Mar.  
16. 1.  
John  
20. 1.

**N**OW the first day of the weeke early in the morning they came vnto the sepulchre, & brought the odours, which they had prepared, & certaine women w<sup>th</sup> them. 2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. 3 And went in but found not the body of the Lord Iesus. 4 And it came to passe, that as they were amazed thereat, behold, two men suddenly stood by them in shining vestures. 5 And as they were afraid, & bowed downe their faces to the earth, they said to them, Why seeke ye him that liueth, among the dead? 6 He is not here, but is risen:

**Chap.** remember \* how he spake vnto you, when hee  
9. 22. was yet in Galile, 7 Saying, that the Sonne of  
Matt. man must be deliuered into the hands of sinfull  
17. 23. men, & be crucified, & the third day rise againe.  
Mark. 8 And they remembred his words, 9 And returned  
9. 31. from the sepulchre, and told al these things vnto the elenen, & to all the remnant. 10 Now it was Mary Magdalene & Ioanna, and Mary the mother of Iames, and the other women w<sup>th</sup> them, which told these things vnto the Apostles. 11 But their words seemed vnto them as a faine thing neither beleueed they them. 12 \* Then arose Peter, and ranne vnto the sepulchre, and  
John 20. 6. looked in, and sawe the linnen clothes layd by

# C H A P. XXIIII.

themselves, and departed wounding in himselfe  
 at that which was come to passe. 13 \* And be- *Mat.*  
 hold two of them went that same day to a town *16.12*  
 which was from Hierusalem about threescore  
 furlongs, called Emmaus. 14 And they talked to-  
 gether of al these things that were done. 15 And  
 it came to passe, as they communed together, and  
 reasoned, that Iesus himself drew neere, & went  
 with them. 16 But their eyes were holden that  
 they could not know him. 17 And he said vn-  
 to them, What maner of communications are  
 these that yee haue one to another as ye walke  
 and are sad? 18 And the one (named Cleopas)  
 answered and said vnto him, Art thou onely a  
 stranger in Hierusalem, & hast not knowen the  
 things which are come to passe therein in these  
 dayes? 19 And he said vnto them, What things?  
 And they said vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth,  
 which was a Prophet, mighty in deede and in  
 word before God, & al the people, 20 And how  
 the hie Priests, & our rulers deliuered him to be  
 cōdemned to death, & haue crucified him. 21 But  
 we trusted y it had bin he that should haue de-  
 liuered Israel, and as touching al these things to  
 day is the third day, that they were done. 22 Yea,  
 and certaine women amōg vs made vs astonied,  
 which came early vnto the sepulchre. 23 And  
 when they found not his body, they came, say-  
 ing, that they had also scene a vision of Angels,  
 which said that he was aliue. 24 Therefore cer-  
 taine of them which were with vs, went to the  
 sepulchre,

S. L V K E.

Sepulchre, & found it euen so as the women had said, but him they saw not 25 The he said vnto them O fooles, & slow of heart to beleue all that the Prophets haue spoken. 26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? 27 And he began at Moses, and at al the Prophets, and interpreted vnto them in all the Scriptures the things which were written of him. 28 And they drew neere vnto the towne, which they went to, but he made as though hee would haue gone further 29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs : for it is towards night, and the day is far spent. So he went in to tary with them 30 And it came to passe as he sat at table with them he tooke the bread, and blessed, & brake it, and gaue it to them. 31 Then their eyes were opened, & they knew him: and he was no more seene of them. 32 And they said betwene themselues, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, & when he opened to vs the Scriptures? 33 And they rose vp the same houre, & returned to Hierusalem, and found the Eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them, 34 Which said, The Lord is risen in deed, & hath appeared to Simon. 35 Then they told what things were done in y way, & how he was knowen of them in breaking of bread. 36 \* And as they spake these things, Iesus himselfe stode in the mids of them, & said vnto them, Peace be to you 37 But they were abashed and afraid, supposing that they

Mar.  
16.14.  
Iohn  
20.19.

# C H A P. XXIIII.

they had scene a spirit 38 Then said he vnto them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore do doubts arise in your hearts? 39 Beholde mine hands and my feete: for it is I my selfe. handle me, and see: for a spirit hath no flesh and bones, as ye see me haue 40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands & feete. 41 And while they yet beleued not for ioy, and wondered, he said vnto them Haue ye here any meate? 42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fish, and of an hony combe, 43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them. 44 And he said vnto them, These are the wordes, which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all must be fulfilled which are written of me in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, & in the Psalmes. 45 Then opened hee their vnderstanding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures. 46 And said vnto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoued Christ to suffer, and to rise againe from the dead the third day, 47 And that repentance and remission of finnes should be preached in his Name among all nations, beginning at Hierusalem. 48 Now ye are witnesses of these things 49 And behold, I do send the \*promise of my Fa ther vpon you: *Iohn* but tary ye in the city of Hierusalem, vntil ye be *15.26.* endued with power from on hie. 50 Afterward *act. 1.9* he led them out into Bethania, & list vp his hands *Mark.* and blessed them 51 And it came to passe, that as *16.19.* he blessed them, \* hee departed from them, and *act.* was caried vp into heauen. 52 And they wor- *1.9.*

S. I O H N.

shipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy, 53 And were continually in the Temple, praising, and lauding God, A M E N.

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS  
Christ, according to Iohn.

CHAP. I. 1 (*Christ's eternitie and diuinitie.*)



In the beginning was that Word, and that Word was with God, and that Word was God. 2 This same was in the beginning with God.

Colos.

1. 16. 3 \* All things were made by it, and without it was made nothing that was made.

4 In it was life, & that life was that light of men.

5 And that light shineth in the darknesse, & the

Mat. 6 \* There was

1. 1. a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn.

mark. 7 This same came for a witness, to beare wit-

1. 4. nes of that light, that all men through him might

luke beleeue. 8 He was not that light, but was sent

1. 2. to beare witness of that light. 9 This was that

true light, which lighteth euery man that com-

meth into the world. 10 Hee was in the world,

Iebr. and the world was \* made by him: and the world

1. 3. knew him not. 11 He came vnto his owne, and

his owne receiued him not. 12 But as many as

receiued him, to them he gaue prerogative to be

the sonnes of God, *euon* to them that beleeue in

his Name, 13 Which are borne not of blood,

Mat. nor of the wil of the flesh, nor of the wil of man,

6. but of God, 14 \* And that Word was made

flesh

# CHAP. I.

flesh, & dwelt among vs, (and we saw\* the glory *Matt.*  
 thereof, as the glory of the only begotten Sonne *17.2.*  
 of the Father) full of grace and trueth. *15* Iohn *2 per.*  
 bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This *1.17.*  
 was he of whom I said, He that cometh after  
 me, was before mee: for hee is better then I.  
*16* \* And of his fulnesse haue al we receiued, and *Col. 1.*  
 grace for grace. *17* For the Law was giuen by *19.*  
 Moses: but grace & trueth came by Iesus Christ.  
*18* \* No man hath seene God at any time: that *1. Tim.*  
 only begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of *6.16.*  
 the Father, he hath declared him. *19* Then this *1. iohn*  
 is the record of Iohn, when the Iewes sent Priests *4.12.*  
 and Leuites from Hierusalem, to aske him, Who  
 art thou? *20* And he confessed and denied not,  
 and said plainly, \* I am not that Christ. *21* And *Act*  
 they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And *13.25.*  
 he said, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And  
 he answered, No. *22* Then said they vnto him,  
 Who art thou, that we may giue an answer to  
 them that sent vs? what sayest thou of thy selfe?  
*23* He said, \* I am the voice of him that crieth *7 say.*  
 in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the *4.3.*  
 Lord, as said the Prophet Esaias. *24* Now they *Matt.*  
 which were sent, were of the Pharises. *25* And *3.3.*  
 they asked him and sayd to him, Why baptizest *luke*  
 thou then, if thou be not that Christ, neither E. *3.4.*  
 as, not that Prophet? *26* Iohn answered them, *Matt.*  
 saying, I baptize with water: but there is one *3.11.*  
 among you, whom ye know not: *27* \* He it is *mark*  
 that cometh after mee, which was before me, *1.7.*  
 whose



# S. I O H N.

whose shooe latchet I am not worthie to vn-  
 loose 28 These things were done in Bethaba-  
 ra beyond Iordan, where Iohn did baptize.  
 29 The next day Iohn seeth Iesus coming in-  
 to him, and sayeth, Beholdie that lambe of God,  
 which taketh away the sinne of the world.  
 30 This is hee of whom I sayd, After me com-  
 meth a man, which was before me: for he was  
 better then I. 31 And I knew him not: but be-  
 cause he should be declared to Israel, therefore  
 am I come, baptizing with water. 32 So Iohn  
 bare record, saying, \* I beheld that Spirit come  
 downe from heauen, like a dove, and it abode  
 vpon him, 33 And I knew him not: but he that  
 sent mee to baptize with water, hee sayd vnto  
 me, Vpon whom thou shalt see that Spirit come  
 downe, and tary still on him, that is hee which  
 baptizeth with the holy Ghost. 34 And I saie,  
 and bare record that this is that Sonne of God.  
 35 The next day, Iohn stood againe, and two of  
 his disciples: 36 And he beheld Iesus walking  
 by, and said Behold that Lambe of God: 37 And  
 the two disciples heard him speake and follow-  
 ed Iesus. 38 Then Iesus turned about, and saw  
 them follow, and said vnto them, What seeke  
 ye? And they said vnto him, Rabbi (which is to  
 say by interpretation, Master) where dwellest  
 thou? 39 He sayd vnto them, Come and see.  
 They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode  
 with him that day: for it was about the tenth  
 houre. 40 Andrew, Simon Peters brother, was

Mat.  
 3. 16.

# CHAP. I.

one of <sup>y</sup> two which had heard it of Iohn, and <sup>y</sup> followed him. 41 The same found his brother Simon first, and sayd vnto him, We haue found that Messias, which is by interpretation, that Christ. 42 And he brought him to Iesus. And Iesus beheld him, and sayd, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone. 43 The day following Iesus would go into Galile, and found Philip, and said vnto him, Follow me. 44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. 45 Philip found Nathanael, and sayd vnto him, Wee haue found him, of whom \* Moses did write in the Law, and the *Gene.* \* Prophets. Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, that was 19 10. of Nazareth. 46 Then Nathanael sayde vnto *deut.* him, Can there any good thing come out of Na- 18. 18. zareth? Philip saide to him, Come, and see. *Iai.* 47 Iesus saw Nathanael comming to him, and 4. 2. said of him Behold, in deed an Israelite, in whom *isrl.* is no guile. 48 Nathanael sayde vnto him, 23. 5. Whence knewest thou mee? Iesus answered, *Ex 37.* and sayd vnto him, Before that Philip call d 14. 22. thee, when thou wast vnder the figge tree, I saw 34 23. thee. 49 Nathanael answered, and sayde vnto *Ex 37.* him, Rabbi, thou art that Soune of God: thou 24. art that King of Israel. 50 Iesus answered, and *dan.* sayd vnto him, Because I sayd vnto thee, I saw 9. 24. thee vnder the figge tree, beleeuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these. 51 And hee sayd vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto you, hereafter

# S. I O H N.

hereafter shall ye see heauen open, and the Angels of God \* ascending, and descending vpon that Sonne of man.

Gene.  
28.12.

## CHAP. 2. *1 Christes first miracle at the marriage in Cana of Galile.*

**A**ND y third day was there a marriage in Cana, *a towne* in Galile, & the mother of Iesus was there. 2 And Iesus was called also, and his disciples vnto the marriage. 3 Now when the wine failed, the mother of Iesus sayd vnto him, They haue no wine. 4 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, what haue I to do with thee? mine houre is not yet come. 5 His mother sayd vnto the seruants, Whatsoeuer hee saith vnto you, doe it. 6 And there were set there, sixe waterpots of stone, after the maner of the purifying of the Jewes, conteining two or three firkins a peece. 7 And Iesus said vnto them, Fill the waterpots with water. Then they filled the vp to the brim. 8 Then he said vnto the, Draw out now & beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. So they bare it. 9 Now when the gouernour of the feast had tasted y water that was made wine, (for he knew not whence it was: but the seruants, which drew the water, knew) the gouernour of the feast called the bridegrome, 10 And said vnto him, All men at the beginning set soorth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept back the good wine vntil now. 11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana *a towne* of Galile, & shewed forth his

his  
12  
he  
ples  
13 F  
fore  
foun  
shee  
ther  
cord  
shee  
mon  
vnto  
henc  
marc  
that  
hath  
& said  
vs, the  
red &  
in thr  
said el  
Ten p  
three  
his bo  
sen fr  
he thu  
Scr p  
23 No  
ouer i  
when

## C H A P. II.

his glory: and his disciples beleued on him.  
 12 After that, he went downe into Capernaum,  
 he & his mother, and his brethren, and his disci-  
 ples: but they continued not many dayes there.  
 13 For the Iewes Pasleouer was at hand. There-  
 fore Iesus went vp to Hierusalem. 14 And he  
 found in the Temple those that solde oxen and  
 sheepe, and doves, & changers of money, sitting  
 there. 15 Then hee made a scourge of small  
 cords, & draue them al out of the Temple w<sup>th</sup> the  
 sheepe and oxen, and powred out the changers  
 money, and ouerthrew the tables, 16 And said  
 vnto them that solde doves, Take these things  
 hence: make not my fathers house, an house of  
 merchandise. 17 And his disciples remembred,  
 that it was written, \* The zeale of thine house *Psa<sup>7</sup>.*  
 hath eaten me vp. 18 Then answered the Iewes, *69. 9.*  
 & said vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto  
 vs, that thou doest these things? 19 Iesus answer-  
 ed & said vnto them, \* Destroy this Temple, and *Mat.*  
 in three dayes I wil raise it vp againe 20 Then *26. 61.*  
 said the Iewes, Fortie and sixe yeeres was this *& 27.*  
 Temple in building, and wilt thou reare it vp in 40.  
 three dayes? 21 But he spake of the Temple of *marke*  
 his body. 22 Alsoone therefore as he was ri- *14. 38.*  
 sen from the dead, his disciples remembred that *& 15.*  
 he thus sayd vnto them: and they beleued the 29.  
 Ser pture, and the worde which Iesus had sayd.  
 23 Now when he was at Hierusalem at y<sup>e</sup> Pasle-  
 ouer in the feast, many beleued in his Name,  
 when they sawe his miracles which hee did.

## S. I O H N.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because he knew them all, 25 And had no need that any should testifie of man: for hee knewe what was in man.

CHAP. 3. *Of regeneration. 14 The  
serpent in the wilderness.*

**T**Here was now a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus a ruler of the Iewes. 1 This man came to Iesus by night and sayd vnto him, Rabbi, wee knowe that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man could doe these miracles that thou doest, except God were with him. 3 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except a man be borne againe, hee cannot see the kingdome of God. 4 Nicodemus said vnto him, How can a man be borne which is olde? can he enter into his mothers wombe againe, and bee borne? 5 Iesus answered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except that a man be borne of water and of the Spirit, hee can not enter into the kingdome of God. 6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and that that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit. 7 Marueile not that I sayde to thee. Yee must be borne againe. 8 The winde bloweth where it lusteth, & thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, 8. whether it goeth: so is euery man that is borne of the Spirit. 9 Nicodemus answered, and sayde vnto him, How can these things be? 10 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou a teacher

# C H A P. III.

of Israel, and knowest not these things? 11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, wee speake that wee know, and testifie that we haue seene: but ye receiue not our witnes. 12 If whē I tely you earthly things, ye beleue not how should ye beleue, if I shall tell you of heavenly things? 13 For no man ascēdeth vp to heauen, but he that hath descended from heauen, that Sonne of man which is in heauen. 14 \* And as Moses lift vp the serpent in the wilderness, so must that Sonne of man be lifted vp, 15 That whosoever beleueth in him, should not perish, but haue eternall life. 16 \* For God so loued y world, that he hath giuen his onely begotten Sonne, that whosoever beleueth in him, should not perish, but haue euertlasting life. 17 \* For God sent not his Sōne into the world, that hee should condemne the world, but that the world through him might be saued. 18 He that beleueth in him, is not condemned: but he that beleueneth not, is condemned already, because he hath not beleued in the Name of that onely begotten Sonue of God. 19 \* And this is the condemnation, that that light came into the world and men loued darkness rather then y light, because their deedes were euil. 20 For euery man that euil doth, hateth the light, neither commeth to light, lest his deedes should be reprobued. 21 But he that doth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deedes might be made manifest, that they are wrought according to God. 22 After these things came Iesus & his disciples

*Num.*

*21.9.*

*chap.*

*12.32.*

*1. Iohn*

*4.9.*

*chap.*

*9.39.*

*& 12.*

*47.*

*chap.*

*1.9.*

# S. I O H N.

- disciples into the land of Iudea, and th<sup>e</sup> re taried  
*Chap.* with them,\* and baptized. 23 And Iohn also bap-  
 4. 1. tized in Enon beside Salim, because there was  
 much water there: and they came, & were bap-  
 tized. 24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.  
 25 Then there arose a question betweene Iohns  
 disciples, & the Iewes about purifying. 26 And  
 they came vnto Iohn, and said vnto him Rabbi,  
 he that was with thee beyond Iordau, to whom  
*Chap.* thou \* barest witness, beholde, hee baptizeth,  
 2. 34. and all men come to him. 27 Iohn answered,  
 and said, A man can receiue nothing, except it be  
 giuen him from heauen. 28 Ye your selues are  
*Chap.* my witnesses, that \* I said, I am not that Christ,  
 1. 20. but that I am sent before him. 29 He that hath  
 the bride is the bridegrome: but the friend of  
 the bridegrome which standeth & heareth him,  
 reioyceth greatly, because of the bridegromes  
 voyce. This my ioy therefore is fulfilled. 30 He  
 must increase, but I *must* decrease. 31 He that is  
 come from on hie, is aboue all: he that is of the  
 earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth:  
 he that is from heauen, is aboue all. 32 And  
 what he hath seene and heard, that hee testifieth:  
 but no man receiveth his testimonie. 33 He that  
*Rom.* hath receiued his testimonie, hath sealed that  
 3. 4. \* God is true. 34 For he, whom God hath sent,  
*Mat.* speaketh the wordes of God: for God giueth  
 11. 27. him not the spirit by measure. 35 The Father  
*Ab.* loueth the Sonne, and hath \* giuen all things  
 3. 4. into his hand. 36 \* Hee that beleeueth in the  
 Sonne

# C H A P. IIII.

Sonne, hath euerlasting life, and he that obeyeth not the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

CHAP. 4. *Christ & the Samaritan woman.*

**N**OW when the Lord knew, how the Pharisees had heard, that Iesus made \* & baptized *Chap.* moe disciples then Iohn, 2 (Though Iesus him *3.22.* selfe baptized not: but his disciples) 3 He left Iudea, & departed againe into Galile. 4 And he must needes go through Samaria. 5 Then came he to a city of Samaria called Sychar, neere vnto the possession, that \* Iacob gaue to his sonne *Gen.* Ioseph. 6 And there was Iacobs well. Iesus then *33.19.* wearied in the iourney, sate thus on the well: it *& 48.* was about the sixt houre. 7 There came a wo. *22.* man of Samaria to draw water. Iesus said vnto *10th.* her, Giue me drinke. 8 For his disciples were *24.32.* gone away into the citie to buy meate. 9 Then saide the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it that thou being a Iewe, askest drinke of mee, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not with the Samaritanes. 10 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, If thou knewest that gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Giue me drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, and he would haue giuen thee water of life. 11 The woman said vnto him, Syr, thou hast nothing to drawe with, and the well is deepe: from whence then hast thou that water of life? 12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the well, and hee himselfe dranke thereof, and



# S, I O H N.

his sonnes, and his cattell: 13 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water, shall thirst againe: 14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall giue him, shall neuer be more a thirst: but the water that I shall giue him, shall be in him a well of water springing vp into euerlasting life. 15 The woman said vnto him, Sir, giue me of that water, that I may not thirst, neither come hither to draw. 16 Iesus said vnto her, Goe, call thine husband, and come hither. 17 The woman answered, and said, I haue no husband. Iesus said vnto her, Thou hast well said, I haue no husband. 18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast, is not thine husband: that saydest thou truly. 19 The woman said vnto him, Sir, I see that thou art a Prophet. 20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, & ye say, that in \* Hierusalem is the place where men ought to worship. 21 Iesus said vnto her, Woman beleue me, the houre commeth, when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor at Hierusalem worship the Father. 22 Yee worship that which \* ye knowe not: we worship that which we know: for saluation is of the Jewes. 23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and trueth: for the Father requireth euen such to worship him. 24 \* God is spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and trueth. 25 The woman said vnto him, I knowe well that Messiah shall come.

Deu.  
82.6.

S. Kin.  
17.22.

2. Cor.  
2.17.

# C H A P. IIII.

which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell vs ail things. 26 Iesus said vnto her, I am he, that speake vnto thee. 27 And vpon that came his disciples, and marueiled that he talked with a woman, yet no man sayd vnto him, What askest thou? or why talkest thou with her? 28 The woman then left her waterpot, & went her way into the citie, and said to the men, 29 Come, see a man which hath told mee all things that euer I did: is not he that Christ? 30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto him. 31 In the meane while the disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eate. 32 But he said vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye know not of. 33 Then said the disciples betweene themselves, Hath any man brought him meate? 34 Iesus sayde vnto them, My meate is that I may doe the wil of him that sent me, & finish his worke. 35 Say not yee, there are yet foure moneths, and *then* commeth haruest? Beholde, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eyes, and looke on the regions, \* for they are white already vnto haruest. 36 And he that reapeth receiveth reward, & gathereth fruite vnto life eternall, that both he that soweth, & hee that reapeth might reioyce together. 37 For herein is the saying true, that one soweth, and another reapeth. 38 I sent you to reape that, whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and yee are entred into their labours. 39 Now many of the Samaritanes of that citie beleued in him, for the saying of the woman which te-

*Matth.  
9. 37.  
luke  
10. 2,*

S. I O H N.

ified, He hath told me all things that euer I did.

40 Then when the Samaritans were come vnto him, they besought him, that hee would carrie with them: & he abode there two dayes. 41 And many moe beleened because of his owne word.

42 And they said vnto the woman, Now we beleene, not because of thy saying: for wee haue heard him our selues, and knowe that this is in deede that Christ the Sauour of the worlde.

43 So two dayes after he departed thence, and

*Matt.* went into Galile. 44 For Iesus himselfe had testified, that a Prophet hath none honour in his *owne countrey.* 45 Then when hee was come

into Galile, the Galileans receiued him, which had seene all the things that hee did at Hierusalem at the feast: for they went also vnto the feast.

46 And Iesus came againe vnto Cana a towne

of Galile, where hee had made of water wine. And there was a certaine ruler whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum. 47 When hee heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galile, he went vnto him, and besought him that he would go downe and heale his sonne: for he was euen ready to die. 48 Then said Iesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleene. 49 The ruler said vnto him, Sir, go down before my sonne die. 50 Iesus said vnto him, Go thy way, thy sonne liueth: and the man beleened the word y Iesus had spoken vnto him, and went his way. 51 And as he was now going downe his seruants met him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

# C H A P. V.

52 Then enquired he of them the houre when he began to amend. And they said vnto him, Yester-day the seueneth houre y<sup>e</sup> seuer left him. 53 Then the father knewe, that it was the same houre in the which Iesus had said vnto him, Thy sonne li-ueth. And hee beleueed, and all his houshoide. 54 This second miracle did Iesus againe, after he was come out of Iudea into Galile.

CHAP. 5. 1 The Sabbath dayes worke. 19.

20 Christ prometh his diuine power.

**A**fter\* that, there was a feast of the Iewes, and *Zenis.*  
Iesus went vp to Hierusalē. 2 And there is *23.30*  
at Hierusalem by the place of the sheepe, a poole *deus.*  
called in Ebrew Bethesda, hauing fise porches *16.19*  
3 In the which lay a great multitude of sicke  
folke, of blinde, halte, and withered, wayting  
for the moouing of the water. 4 For an Angel  
went downe at a certaine season into the poole,  
and troubled the watet: whosoever then first,  
after the stirring of the water, stepped in, was  
made whole of whatloeuere disease hee had.  
5 And a certaine man was there, which had bin  
diseased eight and thirtie yeeres. 6 When Iesus  
saw him lie, & knew that he now long time had  
bene diseased, he sayde vnto him, Wilt thou be  
made whole? 7 The sicke man answered him,  
Syr, I haue no man, when the water is troubled,  
to put me into the poole: but while I am com-  
ming, another steppeth downe before me. 8 Ie-  
sus sayde vnto him, Rise: take vp thy bed and  
walke. 9 And immediatly the man was made

R 3

whole,

# S. I O H N.

whole, and tooke vp his bed, & walked, and the same day was the Sabbath. 10 The Iewes therefore said to him that was made whole, It is the *Iere.* Sabbath *day.* \* It is not lawfull for thee to carie  
 17.22. thy bed. 11 He answered them, He that made me whole, he said vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke. 12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke? 13 And he that was healed, knewe not who it was: for Iesus had conueyed himselfe away from the multitude that was in that place. 14 And after that, Iesus found him in the temple, & said vnto him, Beholde, thou art made whole: sinne no more, least a worse thing come vnto thee. 15 The man departed & told y<sup>e</sup> Iewes that it was Iesus, which had made him whole. 16 And therefore the Iewes did persecute Iesus, & sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath *day.* 17 But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I worke.  
 Chap. 7.19. 18 \* Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him: not onely because he had broken the Sabbath: but said also that God was his Father, and made himselfe equall with God. 19 Then answered Iesus, and said vnto them, Verily, verily I say vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, saue that hee seeth the Father doe: for whatsoeuer things he doth, the same things doth the Sonne in like maner. 20 For the Father loveth the Sonne, & sheweth him all things whatsoever he himselfe doeth, and he will shewe him greater

# CHAP. V.

greater workes then these, that yee should mar-  
 uelle. 21 For likewise as y<sup>e</sup> Father raiseth vp the  
 dead and quickeneth them, so the Sonne quickeneth  
 whom he will. 22 For the Father iudgeth  
 no man, but hath committed all iudgement vnto  
 the Sonne, 23 Because y<sup>e</sup> all men should honour  
 the Sonne, as they honour the Father: hee that  
 honoureth not the Sonne, the same honoureth  
 not the Father, which hath sent him 24 Verely,  
 verely I say vnto you, he that heareth my worde  
 and beleueth in him y<sup>e</sup> sent me, hath euerslasting  
 life, and shall not come into condemnation, but  
 hath passed from death vnto life. 25 Verely ve-  
 rely I say vnto you, the houre shall come, & now  
 is, when the dead shall heare the voyce of the  
 Sonne of God: and they that heare it, shall liue.  
 26 For as y<sup>e</sup> Father hath life in himselfe, so like-  
 wise hath hee giuen to the Sonne to haue life in  
 himselfe, 27 And hath giuen him power also to  
 execute iudgement, in that hee is the Sonne of  
 man. 28 Marueile not at this: for the houre shall  
 come, in the which all that are in the graues shall  
 heare his voyce. 29 And they shal come forth,  
 \* that haue done good, vnto the resurrection of *Mat*  
 life: but they that haue done euill, vnto the re- *25.46*  
 surrection of condemnation. 30 I can doe no-  
 thing of mine owne selle: as I heare, I iudge: and  
 my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine *Chap*  
 owne will, but the wil of the Father, who hath *8. 14*  
 sent mee. 31 If I \* should beare witnesse of my *Mat*  
 selfe, my witnesse were not true. 32 \* There is *3. 17*

# S. I O H N.

another that beareth witnesse of me, and I know  
 that the witnesse which he beareth of me, is true,  
*Chap.* 33 \* Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnesse vnto  
 2.27. to the trueth. 34 But I receiue not the record of  
 man: neuerthelesse these things I say, that yee  
 might be saued. 35 He was a burning and a shi-  
 ning candle: and yee would for a season haue  
 reioyced in his light. 36 But I haue greater wi-  
 nesse then the witnesse of Iohn: for the workes,  
 which the Father hath giuen mee to finish, the  
*Mat.* same workes that I doe, beare witnesse of me,  
 3.17. that the Father sent me. 37 And the Father him-  
 selfe which hath sent me, beareth witnesse of me.  
*and* Ye haue not heard his voyce at any time, \* nei-  
 27.5. ther haue ye seene his shape. 38 And his worde  
*Deut.* haue ye not abiding in you: for whom he hath  
 4.12. sent, him ye beleene not. 39 \* Search the Scrip-  
*Altes* tures: for in them ye thinke to haue eternall life,  
 27.11. and they are they which testifie of me. 40 But  
 you will not come to me, that yee might haue  
 life. 41 I receiue not praise of men. 42 But I  
 knowe you, that ye haue not the loue of God in  
 you. 43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye  
 receiue mee not: if another shall come in his  
 owne name, him will yee receiue. 44 How  
*Chap.* can yee beleene, which receiue \* honour one  
 2.43. of another, and seeke not the honour that  
 cometh of God alone? 45 Doe not thinke that  
 I will accuse you to my Father: there is one  
 that accuseth you, *even* Moses, in whom ye trust.  
 46 For had ye beleeued Moses, ye would haue  
 beleeued

# CHAP. VI.

beleened me: \* For he wrote of mee. 47 But if Gent.  
ye beleene not his writings, how shall yee be- 3. 15.  
leeue my words?

C A A P. 6. 5 *The five loaves and two fishes.*

**A**fter these things, Iesus went his way ouer  
the sea of Galile, which is Tiberias. 2 And  
a great multitude followed him, because they  
saw his miracles, which he did on them which  
were diseased. 3 Then Iesus went vp into a  
mountaine, and there he sate with his disciples.  
4 Now the Passeouer, \* a feast of the Iewes was *Lent.*  
neere. 5 \* Then Iesus lift vp his eyes, and seeing 23. 5.  
that a great multitude came vnto him, hee sayde *dent.*  
vnto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that 16. 1.  
these might eate? 6 (And this he said to prooue *Matta*  
him: for he himselfe knew what he would doe.) 14. 16.  
7 Philip answered him, Two hundreth peni- *mark.*  
worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that 6. 37.  
euery one of them may take a litle. 8 Then said *Iuke*  
vnto him one of his disciples, Andrewe, Simon 9. 13.  
Peters brother, 9 There is a litle boy here,  
which hath five barley loaves, and two fishes: but  
what are they among so many? 10 And Iesus  
saide, Make the people sit downe. (Now there  
was much grasse in that place.) Then the men  
sate downe, in number about five thousand.  
11 And Iesus tooke the bread, & gaue thanks, and  
gaue to y<sup>e</sup> disciples, & the disciples to them that  
were set downe: & likewise of the fishes as much  
as they would. 12 And whē they were satisfied,  
he said vnto his disciples, Gather vp the broken  
morsels



S. I O H N.

meate which remaineth, that nothing bee lost.  
 13 Then they gathered it together, and filled  
 twelue baskets w<sup>th</sup> the broken meate of the fine  
 barley loaves, which remained vnto them y<sup>e</sup> had  
 eaten. 14 Then the men, when they had seene  
 the miracle, that Iesus did, sayd, This is of a truth  
 that Prophet that should come into the world.  
 15 Whē Iesus therfore perceiued y<sup>e</sup> they would  
 come, and take him to make him a King, hee de-  
 parted againe into a mountaine himsele alone.

16 When euen was now come, his disciples  
*Matt.* went downe vnto the sea, 17 \* And entred into  
 24. 25. a ship, & went ouer the sea towards Capernaum.  
*mark.* and now it was darke, & Iesus was not come to  
 6. 47. them. 18 And the sea arose w<sup>th</sup> a great wind that  
 blew. 19 And when they had rowed about fūe  
 and twentie or thirtie furlongs, they sawe Iesus  
 walking on the sea, and drawing neere vnto the  
 ship: so they were afraid. 20 But he said vnto  
 them, It is I: be not afraide. 21 Then willingly  
 they receiued him into the ship, and the ship was  
 by & by at the land, whither they went. 22 The  
 day following, the people which stood on the  
 other side of the sea, sawe that there was none  
 other ship there, saue that one, whereinto his dis-  
 ciples were entred, and that Iesus went not with  
 his disciples in the shippe, but that his disciples  
 were gone alone, 23 And that there came other  
 shippes from Tiberias, neere vnto the place  
 where they ate the bread, after the Lord had  
 giuen thanks, 24 Now when the people sawe  
 that

# CHAP. VI.

that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples,  
they also tooke shipping, & came to Caperna-  
um, seeking for Iesus. 25 And when they had  
found him on the other side of the sea, they said  
vnto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?  
26 Iesus answered them, & said, Verily, verily, I  
say vnto you, ye seeke me, not because yee sawe  
the miracles but because yee ate of the loaves, &  
were filled. 27 Labour not for the meat which  
periltheth, but for the meat that endureth vnto e-  
uerlasting life, which the Sonne of man shal giue  
vnto you: for him hath \* God the Father sea-  
led. 28 Then said they vnto him, What shal we  
doe that wee might worke the works of God?  
29 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, \* This  
is the worke of God, yf ye beleue in him, whom  
he hath sent. 30 They sayd therefore vnto him,  
What signe shewest thou then, that we may see  
it, and beleue thee? what doest thou worke?  
31 Our fathers did eate Manna in the desert, as  
it \* is written, He gaue them bread from heauen  
to eate. 32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verily,  
verily I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not that  
bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you  
that true bread from heauen. 33 For the bread  
of God is he which commeth downe from hea-  
uen, and giueth life vnto the world. 34 Then  
they sayd vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this  
bread. 35 And Iesus sayd vnto them, I am that  
bread of life: he that commeth to me, shall not  
hunger, and he that beleueth in me, shall ne-  
uer

*Chap.*  
*1. 32.*  
*matth.*  
*3. 17.*  
*1. 10h.*  
*3. 23.*

*Exod.*  
*16. 14.*  
*num.*  
*11. 7.*  
*psalm.*  
*78. 25.*

S. I O H N.

uer thirst. 36 But I sayd vnto you, that ye also  
 haue scene me, and beleue not. 37 All that the  
 Father giueth mee, shall come to mee: and him  
 that cometh to me, I cast not away. 38 For I  
 came downe from heauen, not to do mine owne  
 will, but his will which hath sent me. 39 And  
 this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that  
 of all which hee hath giuen mee. I should lose  
 nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the  
 last day. 40 And this is the will of him that  
 sent me, that every man which seeth the Sonne,  
 and beleueth in him, should haue enerlasting  
 life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.  
 41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because  
 he sayde, I am that bread, which is come downe  
 from heauen. 42 And they sayde, \* Is not this  
*Mat.* 13.55. Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, whose father & mo-  
 ther we know? how then saith he, I came downe  
 from heauen? 43 Iesus then answered, and sayd  
 vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.  
 44 No man can come to me, except the Father  
 which hath sent mee, draw him: and I will raise  
 him vp at the last day. 45 It is written in \* the  
*Isai.* 54.13. Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God.  
*iere.* Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath  
 31.33. learned of the Father, cometh vnto me, 46 \* Not  
*Mat.* that any man hath scene the Father, saue hee  
 21.27. which is of God: hee hath scene the Father,  
 47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that beleu-  
*Exod.* eth in me, hath enerlasting life. 48 I am that  
 16.15. bread of life, 49 \* Your Fathers did eate Manna

# C H A P. VI.

In the wilderness, and are dead. 50 This is that bread which commeth downe from heauen, that hee which eateth of it, should not die. 51 I am that liuing bread, which came downe from heauen: If any man eate of this bread, hee shall liue for ener: and the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the world. 52 Then the Iewes stroue among themselues, saying, How can this man giue vs his flesh to eate? 53 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except yee eate the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, yee haue no life in you. 54 Whosoener \* eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I wil raise him vp at the last day. 55 For my flesh is meate in deede, and my blood is drinke in deede. 56 Hee that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. 57 As that liuing Father hath sent mee, so lue I by the Father, and he that eateth me, euen he shall lue by me. 58 This is the bread which came downe from heauen: not as your Fathers haue eaten Manna, and are dead. Hee that eateth of this bread, shall lue for ener. 59 These things spake he in the Synagoge, as hee taught in Capernaum. 60 Many therefore of his disciples (when they heard this) sayd, This is an hard saying, who can heare it? 61 But Iesus knowing in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at this, said vnto them, Doth this offend you? 62 What then if yee should see that Sonne of man ascend vp

1. Cor.

11. 27.

## S. I O H N.

**Chap.** vj \* where he was before? 63 It is the Spirit  
**3.13.** that quickeneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the  
 words that I speake vnto you, are spirit and life.  
 64 But there are some of you that beleeue not:  
 for Iesus knew from the beginning, which they  
 were that beleeued not, and who should betray  
 him. 65 And he said, Therefore said I vnto you,  
 that no man can come vnto me, except it bee gi-  
 uen vnto him of my Father. 66 From that  
 tyme many of his disciples went backe and wal-  
 ked no more with him. 67 Then saide Iesus to  
 the twelue, Will ye also goe away? 68 Then  
 Simon Peter answered him, Master to whome  
 shall wee goe? thou hast the wordes of eternall  
 life: 69 And we beleeue and knowe that thou  
 art that Christ that Sonne of the liuing God.  
**Matth.** 70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I \* chosen  
**30.16.** you twelue, and one of you is a deuill? 71 Now  
 he spake it of Iudas Iscariot the *sonne* of Simons  
 for he it was that would betray him, though hee  
 was one of the twelue.

C H A P. 7. *2. Christ goeth vp to the feast.*

**A**fter these things, Iesus walked in Galilee, and  
 would not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes  
**Zenit.** sought to kil him. 2 Now y Iewes \* feast of the  
**33.34.** Tabernacles was at hand. 3 His brethren there-  
 fore saide vnto him. Depart hence, and goe into  
 Iudea, that thy disciples may see the workes that  
 thou doest. 4 For there is no man that doth any  
 thing secretly, and he himselfe seeketh to be fa-  
 mous. If thou doest these things, shewe thy selfe

## C H A P. VII

to the worlde. 5 For as yet his brethren beleeu-  
 ed not in him. 6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My  
 time is not yet come: but your time is alway rea-  
 dy. 7 The worlde cannot hate you, but mee it  
 hateth, because I testifie of it, that the workes  
 thereof are euill. 8 Goe ye vp vnto this feast: I  
 will not go vp yet vnto this feast: for my time *(chap.*  
 is not yet fulfilled. 9 These things he said vnto *8.20.*  
 them, and abode stil in Galile. 10 But alioone as  
 his brethren were gone vp, then went he also vp  
 vnto the feast, not openly, but as it were priuily.  
 11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and  
 said, Where is hee? 12 And much mutinuring  
 was there of him among the people. Some sayd,  
 He is a good man: other sayd, Nay, but he decei-  
 ueth the people. 13 Howbeit no man spake o-  
 penly of him, for feare of the Iewes. 14 Nowe  
 when halfe the feast was done, Iesus went vp in-  
 to the Temple, and taught. 15 And the Iewes  
 marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man the  
 Scriptures, seeing that he neuer learned? 16 Ie-  
 sus answered them and said, My doctrine is not  
 mine, but his that sent me. 17 If any man wil do  
 his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether  
 it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe,  
 18 Hee that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his  
 owne glory: but he that seeketh his glory that  
 sent him, the same is true, and no vnrighteous. *Exod.*  
 19 \*Did not Moses giue you a *24.3.*  
 Lawe, and yet none of you keepeth the Law? *(chap.*  
 \*Why goe ye about to kill me? 20 The people *5.18.*  
 answered,

# S I O H N.

answered, and said, Thou hast a deuill: who goeth about to kill thee? 21 Iesus answered, and sayd to them, I haue done one worke, and ye all mar-

*Leuit.* uelle. 22 \*Moses therefore gaue vnto you cir-

*12.3.* cumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the

*Gene.* \*fathers,) and ye on the Sabbath day circuncise

*27.10.* a man. 23 If a man on the Sabbath receiue cir-

cumcision, that the Law of Moses should not be

broken, be yee angry with mee, because I haue

made a man euery whit whole on the Sabbath

*Deut.* day? 24 \*Iudge not according to the appea-

*3.16.* rance, but iudge righteous iudgement. 25 Then

sayd some of them of Ierusalem, Is not this hee,

whom they goe about to kill? 26 And behold,

hee speaketh openly, and they say nothing to

him: doe the rulers knowe in deede that this is

in deede that Christ? 27 Howbeit wee knowe

this man whence hee is: but when that Christ

cometh, no man shall knowe whence hee is.

28 Then cried Iesus in the Temple as he taught,

saying, Ye both know mee, and know whence I

am: yet am I not come of my selfe, but hee that

sent me is true, whom yee know not. 29 But I

knowe him: for I am of him, and hee hath sent

mee. 30 Then they sought to take him, but no

man layde hands on him, because his houre was

not yet come. 31 Now many of the people be-

lieued in him, and sayd, When that Christ com-

meth, will hee doe moe miracles then this man

hath done? 32 The Pharises heard that the peo-

ple murmured these things of him: and the Pha-

rises,

# CHAP. VII.

rises, and his Priestes sent officers to take him.

33 Then saide Iesus vnto them, Yet am I a litle while with you, and then go I vnto him that sent me. 34 \*Ye shall seeke me, and shall not find

me, and where I am, can ye not come. 35 Then said the Iewes among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not finde him? Will he goe vnto them that are dispersed among the Grecians, and teach the Grecians? 36 What saying is this that he said, Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde mee? and where I am, can yee not come?

37 Now in the last \* and great day of the feast, Iesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come vnto me and drinke. 38 He that beleeueth in me, \* as saith the Scripture, out of

his bellie shall flowe riuers of water of life. 39 \* (This spake he of the spirit which they that beleeued in him, should receiue: for the holy Ghost was not yet giuen, because that Iesus was not yet glorified) 40 So many of the people,

when they heard this saying, said, \* Of a trueth this is that Prophet. 41 Other said, This is that Christ: and some said, But shall that Christ come out of Galile?

42 \* Sayeth not the Scripture, that that Christ shal come of the seede of Dauid, and out of the towne of Bethlehem where Dauid was? 43 So was there dissention among the people for him. 44 And some of them would haue taken him, but no man laide hands on him.

45 Then came the officers to the his Priestes and Pharisees, and they saide vnto them, Why haue ye not taken him?

46 They answered and said vnto them, No man hath taken him. 47 They answered againe and said vnto them, Why then say ye, We haue not taken him?

48 They answered and said vnto them, We haue not taken him. 49 They answered againe and said vnto them, Why then say ye, We haue not taken him?

50 They answered and said vnto them, We haue not taken him. 51 They answered againe and said vnto them, Why then say ye, We haue not taken him?



## S. IOHN.

haue ye not brought him? 46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man. 47 Then answered them the Pharises, Are yee also deceived? 48 Doeth any of the rulers, or of the Pharises beleue in him? 49 But this people which know not the Lawe, are cursed. 50 Nicodemus *Chap.* said vnto them, (\* he that came to Iesus by night, 3.2. and was one of them ) 51 Doth our Law iudge *Dent.* a man before it heare him, \* and knowe what he 27. 8. hath done? 52 They answered, and said vnto *and* him, Art thou also of Galile? Search and looke: 29.15. for out of Galile ariseth no Prophet. 53 And euery man went vnto his owne house.

CHAP. 8. 3 *The woman taken in adultery.*

**A**ND Iesus went vnto the mount of Oliues, 3 And early in the morning came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and he sate downe, and taught them. 3 Then the Scribes and the Pharises brought vnto him a woman taken in adulterie, and set her in the middes, 4 And said vnto him, Master, we found this woman committing adukerie, euen in the *Leui.* very acte. 5 \* Nowe Moses in our Lawe com- 30.10. manded, that such should be stoned: what sayest thou therefore? 6 And this they said to tempt him, that they might haue whereof to accuse him. But Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground. 7 And while they continued asking him, hee lift himselfe vp, and *Dent.* said vnto them, \* Let him that is among you with- 37. 7. out sinne, cast the first stone at her. 8 And a-  
gaue

# C H A P. VIII.

gaine hee stouped downe, and wrote on the  
ground. 9 And when they heard it being accou-  
nted by their owne consciēce, they went out one  
by one, beginning at the eldest euen to the last;  
so Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing  
in the mids. 10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe  
again, and saw no man, but the woman, he sayde  
vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accu-  
sers? hath no man condemned thee? 11 She said,  
No man, Lord. And Iesus said, Neither doe I con-  
demne thee: goe and sinne no more. 12 Then  
spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I \* am that Chap.  
light of the worlde: he that followeth me, shall 1.5.  
not walke in darkenesse, but shal haue that light and  
of life. 13 The Pharises therefore said vnto him, 9.5.  
Thou bearest record of thy selfe: thy record is  
not true. 14 \* Iesus answered and sayde vnto Chap.  
them, Though I beare record of my selfe, yet my 5.3 to  
record is true: for I know whence I came, and  
whither I go: but ye cannot tel whence I come,  
and whither I goe. 15 Ye iudge after the flesh: I  
iudge no man. 16 And if I also iudge, my iudge- Dint.  
ment is true: for I am not alone, but I, & the Fa- 17.6.  
ther, that sent mee. 17 And it is also written in 19.  
your Lawe, \* that the testimonie of two men is 15.  
true. 18 I am one that beare witnes of my selfe, matt.  
and the Father y<sup>e</sup> sent me, beareth witnes of me. 18.16.  
19 Then said they vnto him, Where is that Fa- 2.cor.  
ther of thine? Iesus answered, Ye neither knowe 13.1. a  
me, nor that Father of mine. If ye had knowe me, hebr.  
ye should haue knowne that Father of mine al- 10.38

## S. IOHN.

**So. 20** These wordes spake Iesus in the treasure, as he taught in the Temple and no man layd hands on him: for his houre was not yet come.  
**21** Then said Iesus againe vnto them, I goe my way, and ye shall seeke me, and shall die in your sinnes. Whither I go, can ye not come? **22** Then sayd the Iewes, Wil he kil himselfe, because hee saith, Whither I go can ye not come? **23** And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I am from above: ye are of this worlde: I am not of this world. **24** I said therefore vnto you, That yee shall die in your sinnes: for except ye beleue that I am he, ye shall die in your sinnes. **25** Then said they vnto him. Who art thou? And Iesus saide vnto them, Euen the same thing, that I sayd vnto you from the beginning. **26** I haue many things to say, & to iudge of you: but he that sent mee, is true, and the things that I haue heard of him, those speake I to the world. **27** They vnderstood not that he spake to them of the Father. **28** Then said Iesus vnto them. When ye haue liſt vp the Soane of man, then shall ye knowe that I am he, and that I doe nothing of my selfe, but as my Father hath taught mee, for I speake these things. **29** For he that sent me, is with mee: the Father hath not left me alone because I do alwaies those things that please him. **30** As hee spake these things many beleued in him. **31** Then said Iesus to the Iewes which beleued in him. If yee continue in my word, ye are verely my disciples. **32** And shall know the truth, and the truth shall

## C H A P. VIII.

shall make you free. 33 They answered him, We  
 be Abrahams seede, and were neuer bond to any  
 man: why sayest thou then, Ye shall be made free?  
 34 Iesus answered them, Verely, verely I say vnto  
 you, that whosoever comitteth sinne, is the \* ser- Rom.  
 uant of sinne. 35 And the seruant abideth not in 6. 20.  
 the house for euer but the Sonne abideth for 2. pet.  
 euer. 36 If that Sonne therefore shall make you 2. 19.  
 free, ye shall be free in deede. 37 I know that ye  
 are Abrahams seed, but ye seeke to kill me, because  
 my word hath no place in you. 38 I speake that  
 which I haue seene w<sup>th</sup> my Father, and ye doe that  
 which ye haue seene with your Father. 39 They  
 answered, & said vnto him. Abraham is our Fa-  
 ther Iesus said vnto them, If ye were Abrahams  
 childrens, ye would doe the works of Abraham.  
 40 But now ye goe about to kill me, a man that  
 hath tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of  
 God: this did not Abraham. 41 Ye do the works  
 of your father. Then said they to him, We are  
 not borne of fornication: wee haue one father,  
 which is God. 42 Therefore Iesus sayde vnto  
 them, If God were your Father, then would yee  
 loue me: for I proceeded forth, and came from  
 God, neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.  
 43 Why do ye not vnderstand my talke? because  
 ye cannot heare my word. 44 \* Ye are of your 1. 106.  
 father the deuil, & the lusts of your father ye wil 3. 8.  
 do: he hath bin a murderer from the beginning,  
 and abode not in the trueth, because there is no  
 trueth in him; When he speaketh a lie, then spea-

# S. IOHN.

2. Joh.  
9.6.

heth he of his owne: for hee is a liar, and the fa-  
ther thereof. 45 And because I tell you the  
truth, ye beleue me not. 46 Which of you  
can rebuke me of sinne? and if I say the trueth,  
why do you not beleue me? 47 \* He that is of  
God, heareth Gods words: yet therefore beare  
them not, because ye are not of God. 48 Then an-  
swered the Iewes, and said vnto him, Say we not  
well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a deuill?  
49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill, but I ho-  
nour my father, & ye haue dishonoured me. 50 And  
I seeke not mine owne praise: but there is one  
that seeketh it, and iudgeth. 51 Verely, verely I  
say vnto you, If a man keepe my word, he shall  
neuer see death. 52 Then said the Iewes to him,  
Nowe know we that thou hast a deuill. Abra-  
ham is dead, and the Prophets, and thou sayest,  
If a man keepe my word, he shall neuer taste of  
death. 53 Art thou greater then our father A-  
braham, which is dead? and the Prophets are  
dead: whom makest thou thy selfe? 54 Iesus  
answered, If I honour my selfe, mine honour is  
nothing worth: it is my father that honoureth  
me, whom ye say that he is your God. 55 Yet ye  
haue not knowen him: but I know him, and if I  
should say I knowe him not, I should bee a liar  
like vnto you: but I knowe him, and keepe his  
word. 56 Your father Abraham reioyced to see  
my day, and he saw it, & was glad. 57 Then said  
the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fifty yeere  
old, and hast thou seene Abraham? 58 Iesus said

## C H A P. IX.

vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto you, before Abraham was, I am. 59 Then tooke they vp stones, to cast at him, but Iesus hid himselfe, and went out of the Temple: And hee passed thorow the mids of them, and so went his way.

C H A P. 9. 1. *The man borne blind, healed.*

**A**Nd as Iesus passed by, he sawe a man which was blind frō his birth. 2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this man or his parents, that he was borne blind? 3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the workes of God should be shewed on him. 4 I must worke the workes of him y<sup>e</sup> sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. 5 As long as I am in y<sup>e</sup> world, I am the light of the world. 6 Alsloone Cha. 7. as he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, & 9. 28 made clay of the spittle, & anointed the eyes of 12. 6 the blinde with the clay, 7 And saide vnto him, 12. 35 Go wash in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent) He went his way therefore, & washed, & came again seeing. 8 Now y<sup>e</sup> neighbors & they that had seen him before, & when he was blind, said, Is not this he that sate & begged? 9 Some said, This is he: and other saide, Hee is like him: but he himselfe saide, I am he. 10 Therefore they said vnto him, Howe were thine eyes opened? 11 He answered, & said, The man that is called Iesus, made clay, & anoynted mine eyes, & said vnto me, Go to the poole of Siloam, and wash. So I went, & washed, and receiued sight.

## S. I O H N.

12 Then they said vnto him, Where is he? He said, I can not tell. 13 They brought to the Pharisees him that was once blinde. 14 And it was the Sabbath *day*, when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. 15 Then againe the Pharisees also asked him, how he had receiued sight. And he said vnto them, He laid clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed, & do see. 16 Then said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath *day*. Others sayd, How can a man y<sup>e</sup> is a sinner, do such miracles? & there was a diuision among them. 17 Then spake they vnto the blinde againe, What sayst thou of him, because he hath opened thine eyes? And he said, He is a Prophet. 18 Then the Iewes did not beleene him (that he had bin blinde, & receiued his sight) vntill they had called the parents of him that had receiued sight. 19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your sonne, whom ye say was borne blinde? How doth he now see them? 20 His parents answered the, & said, We know that this is our sonne, & that he was borne blinde: 21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we know not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tell: he is olde enough, aske him: he shall answer for himselfe. 22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordained already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ. he should be excommunicate out of the Synagogue. 23 Therefore said his parents, He is olde enough, aske him.

## C H A P. IX.

24 Then againe called they the man that had bin  
 blind: and said vnto him, Give glory vnto God:  
 we know that this man is a sinner. 25 Then he  
 answered, and said, Whether he be a sinner, or  
 no, I cannot tell: one thing I know, that I was  
 blinde, & now I see. 26 Then said they to him  
 againe, What did he to thee? how opened he  
 thine eyes? 27 He answered them, I haue tolde  
 you already, and ye haue not heard it: wherefore  
 would ye heare it againe? will ye also be his di-  
 sciples? 28 Then reuiled they him, & said, Thou  
 art his disciple, we be Moses disciples. 29 We  
 know that God spake with Moses: but this man  
 we know not from whence he is. 30 The man  
 answered, & said vnto them, Doubtlesse, this is a  
 maruelous thing, that ye know not whence he  
 is, & yet he hath opened mine eyes. 31 Now we  
 know, that God heareth not sinners: but if any  
 man be a worshipper of God, and doth his will,  
 him heareth he. 32 Since the world began was  
 it not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one  
 that was borne blinde. 33 If this man were not  
 of God, he could haue done nothing. 34 They  
 answered, & said vnto him, Thou art altogether  
 borne in sinnes, and dost thou teach vs? so they  
 cast him out. 35 Iesus heard that they had cast  
 him out, & when he had found him, he said vnto  
 him, Dost thou beleue in the Sonne of God? 36  
 He answered, and said, Who is he Lord, that  
 I might beleue in him? 37 And Iesus sayd vnto  
 him, Both thou hast seene him, and he it is that  
 talketh



# S. I O H N.

talketh with thee. 38 Then he sayd, Lord, I be-  
leeue, and worshipped him. 39 And Iesus said,  
I am come vnto iudgement into this world, that  
*Chap.* they \* which see not, might see: and that they  
3.17. which see, might be made blinde. 40 And some  
of the Pharises which were with him, heard  
47. these things, & said vnto him, Are we blind also?  
41 Iesus said vnto them, If ye were blinde, ye  
should not haue sinne: but now ye say, We seee  
therefore your sinne remaineth.

## CHAP. 10. *Christ the good shepheard.*

**V**erely, verely I say vnto you, He y<sup>e</sup> entred  
not in by the doore into the sheepsolde, but  
climeth vp another way, he is a thiefe & a rob-  
ber. 2 But he that goeth in by the doore, is the  
shepheard of the sheepe. 3 To him the porter  
openeth, & the sheepe heare his voyce, & he cal-  
leth his owne sheepe by name, & leadeth them  
out. 4 And when he hath sent forth his owne  
sheepe, he goeth before them, & the sheepe fol-  
low him: for they know his voice. 5 And they  
will not follow a stranger, 'but they flee from  
him: for they know not the voice of strangers.  
6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them but they  
vnderstood not what things they were, which  
he spake vnto them. 7 Then said Iesus vnto them  
again, Verely, verely I say vnto you, I am the  
doore of the sheepe. 8 All that euer came before  
me, are theeues and robbers: but the sheepe doe  
not heare them. 9 I am that doore: by me if any  
man enter in, he shalbe saued, & shall go in, &  
out.

## C H A P. X.

out, and finde pasture. 10 The thiefe commeth  
 not, but for to steale, & to kill, and to destroy: I  
 am come that they might haue life, and haue it in  
 abundance. 11 *I* am that good shepheard: that *Jsay*  
 good shepheard giueth his life for his sheepe. 40.11.  
 12 But an hireling, & he which is not the shep- *Ezek.*  
 heard, neither the sheepe are his owne, seeth the 34.23.  
 wolfe comming, & he leaueth the sheep, & fleeth,  
 and the wolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the  
 sheepe. 13 So the hireling fleeth, because he is  
 an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe. 14 I  
 am that good shepheard, & knowe mine, and am  
 knowne of mine. 15 As the Father knoweth  
 me, so know I the Father, & I lay downe my life  
 for my sheepe. 16 Other sheepe I haue also,  
 which are not of this folde: them also must I  
 bring, & they shal heare my voice, \* & there shall *Ezek.*  
 be one sheepfold, & one shepheard. 17 There- 37.23.  
 fore doeth my Father loue mee, because I \* lay *Jsay*  
 downe my life, y I might take it againe. 18 No 53.7.  
 man taketh it from me: but I lay it downe of my  
 selfe: I haue power to lay it down, & haue pow-  
 er to take it againe: this \* commandement haue *Acts*  
 I receiued of my Father. 19 Then there was a 2.24.  
 dissension among the Iewes for these sayings.  
 20 And many of them said, He hath a deuill, and  
 is mad: why heare ye him? 21 Others said, These  
 are not the words of him that hath a deuill: can  
 the deuill open the eyes of the blinde? 22 And  
 it was at Hierusalem the feast of the Dedication,  
 and it was winter. 23 And Iesus walked in the  
 Temple

## S. IOHN.

Temple, in Salomons porch. 24 Then came the  
 Iewes round about him, & said vnto him, How  
 long doest thou make vs doubt? If thou be that  
 Christ, tell vs plainly. 25 Iesus answered them,  
 I tolde you and ye belecue not: the works that I  
 doe in my Fathers Name, they beare witnesse of  
 me. 26 But yee belecue not: for ye are not of  
 my sheepe, as I said vnto you. 27 My sheepe  
 heare my voice, & I know them, & they followe  
 me, 28 And I giue vnto them eternal life, & they  
 shall neuer perishe, neither shall any plucke them  
 out of mine hand. 29 My Father which gaue  
 them me, is greater then all, & none is able to take  
 them out of my Fathers hand. 30 I & my Father  
 are one. 31 \* Then the Iewes againe tooke up  
 stones, to stone him. 32 Iesus answered them,  
 Many good works haue I shewed you from my  
 Father: for which of these works doe ye stone  
 me? 33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For the  
 good worke we stone thee not, but for blasphemy,  
 and that thou being a man, makest thy selfe  
 God. 34 Iesus answered them, Is it not written  
 in your Law, I \* said, ye are Gods? 35 If he called  
 the gods, vnto whom y word of God was giuen,  
 and the Scripture cannot be broken, 36 Say ye  
 of him, who the Father hath sanctified, & sent into  
 the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said I  
 am the Sonne of God? 37 If I do not the works  
 of my Father, belecue me not. 38 But if I do them,  
 though ye belecue not me, yet belecue the works,  
 that ye may know and belecue, that the Father

*Chap.*

*8. 59.*

*Psal.*

*82. 6.*

## C H A P. XI.

in me, and I in him. 39 Again they went about to take him: but he escaped out of their hands. 40 And went againe beyond Iordan, into the place where Iohn first baptized, & there abode. 41 And many resorted vnto him, & said, Iohn did no myracle: but all things y<sup>e</sup> Iohn spake of this man, were true. 42 And many belceued in him there

## C H A P. II. 11. *Christ raiseth Lazarus.*

**A**ND a certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethania, the towne of Mary, and her sister Martha. 2 (And it was that \*Mary which *Chap. 12.30.* anointed the Lord with ointment, & wiped his feet with her haire, whose brother Lazarus was *matth. 26.7.* sicke.) 3 Therefore *his* sisters sent vnto him, say- ing, Lord, behold he whom thou louest is sicke. 4 When Iesus heard it, he said, This sicknesse is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified therby. 5 Now Iesus loued Martha and her sister, and Lazarus. 6 And after he had heard that he was sicke, yet abode he two dayes still in y<sup>e</sup> same place where he was. 7 Then after that, sayd he to his disci- ples Let vs goe into Iudea againe. 8 The disci- ples sayd vnto him, Master, y<sup>e</sup> Iewes lately sought to \*stone thee, and doest thou go thither againe? *Chap. 7.30. and 8. 59. & 10.33.* 9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If a man walke in the day, he stumb- leth not, because he seeth the light of this world. 10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him. 11 These things spake he, and after he said vnto them, Our friend Lazarus

# S. I O H N.

Lazarus sleepeþ: but I goe to wake him vp.  
 12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe, he  
 shall be safe. 13 Howbeit, Iesus spake of his  
 death; but they thought that hee had spoken of  
 the naturall sleepe. 14 Then said Iesus vnto the  
 plainely, Lazarus is dead. 15 And I am glad for  
 your sakes, that I was not there, that ye may be-  
 leeue; but let vs goe vnto him. 16 The said Tho-  
 mas ( which is called Didymus ) vnto his fellow  
 disciples, Let vs also go, that we may die w<sup>th</sup> him.  
 17 Then came Iesus, & found that he had lien in  
 the graue foure dayes already. 18 (Now Betha-  
 nia was nere vnto Hierusalem, about fifteen fur-  
 longs off.) 19 And many of the Iewes were  
 come to Martha & Mary to cōfort them for their  
 brother. 20 Then Martha, when she heard that  
 Iesus was comming, went to meet him: but Ma-  
 rie sate stil in the house. 21 Then said Martha vn-  
 to Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst bene here, my bro-  
 ther had not bin dead. 22 But now I know also,  
 y<sup>e</sup> whatsoeuer thou askest of God, God wil giue  
 it thee. 23 Iesus said vnto her, Thy brother shal  
 rise againe. 24 Martha said vnto him, I know y<sup>e</sup>  
 he shall rise againe \*in the resurrection at the last  
 day. 25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the resurrection  
 and the life: \* he that beleeueth in me, though he  
 were dead, yet shal he liue. 26 And whosoever  
 lineth, & beleueth in me, shall neuer die: bele-  
 uest thou this? 27 She said vnto him, Yea, Lord,  
 I beleue that thou art that Christ that Sonne of  
 God, which should come into the world. 28 And

Chap.

5.29.

luke

14.14.

cha.

8.35.

## C H A P. XI.

when she had so said, she went her way, & called  
 Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is  
 come, and calleth for thee. 29 And when she  
 heard it she arose quickly, and came vnto him.  
 30 For Iesus was not yet come into the towne,  
 but was in the place where Martha mette him.  
 31 The Iewes then which were with her in the  
 house, & comforted her, when they sawe Mary, that  
 she arose vp hastily and went out, followed her,  
 saying, She goeth vnto y<sup>e</sup> graue to weepe there.  
 32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was,  
 & saw him, she fel downe at his feet, saying vnto  
 him, Lorde, if thou hadst bene heere, my brother  
 had not bene dead. 33 When Iesus therfore saw  
 her weepe, & the Iewes also weepe which came  
 with her, he groned in the spirit, & was troubled  
 in himselfe, 34 And said, Where haue yee laide  
 him? They said vnto him, Lorde, come and see.  
 35 And Iesus wept. 36 Then saide the Iewes,  
 behold, how he loued him. 37 And some of them  
 said, Could not he, which opened y<sup>e</sup> eyes of the  
 blinde haue made also, that this man should not  
 be dead? 38 Iesus therfore againe groned in  
 himselfe, and came to the graue. And it was a  
 tomb, & a stone was laid vpon it. 39 Iesus saide,  
 Take ye away the stone Martha the sister of him  
 was dead, said vnto him, Lord, he stinketh al-  
 ready: for he hath bin dead foure dayes. 40 Ie-  
 sus sayde vnto her, Saide I not vnto thee, that if  
 thou didst beleue, thou shouldest see the glorie  
 of God? 41 Then they tooke away the stone  
 from

Chap.  
 9.6.

from the place where the dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eys, and said, Father, I thanke thee, because thou hast heard me. 42 I know y thou hearest me alwayes, but because of the people y stand by, I said it, that they may beleue; hat thou hast sent me. 43 As he had spoken these things, he cried with a loud voyce, Lazarus, come forth. 44 Then he that was dead, came forth, bound hand & foot with bands, and his face was bound with a napkin. Iesus saide vnto them, Loose him, & let him go. 45 Then many of y Iewes which came to Mary, & had scene the things which Iesus did, beleued in him. 46 But some of them went their way to the Pharises, & told the what things Iesus had done. 47 Then gathered y his Priests & the Pharises a councill, & said, What shall we doe? for this man doth many miracles. 48 If we let him thus alone, all men wil beleue in him, and the Romanes wil come & take away both our place, and the nation. 49 The one of the named Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest the same yere, said vnto the, Ye perceiue nothing at al, so Nor yet do you consider y it is expedient for vs, that one man die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. 51 This spake he not of himselfe: but being hie Priest that same yere, he prophesied that Iesus should die for the nation: 52 And not for that nation onely, but that he should gather together in one, the children of God, which were scattered. 53 Then from that day forth they consulted together, to

[chap.

28.14.

## C H A P. XII.

put him to death. 54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among y<sup>e</sup> Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey nere to the wilderness into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples. 55 And the Iewes Paskeouer was at hand, and many went out of the countrey vp to Hierusalem before the Paskeouer, to purifie themselves. 56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the Temple, What thinke ye, that he cometh not to the feast? 57 Now both the hie Priests and the Pharisees had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where he were, he should shewe it that they might take him.

C H A P. 12. 3. *Mary anoynteth Christs feete.*

**T**hen \* Iesus sixe dayes before the Paskeouer, *Mat.*  
 came to Bethania, where Lazarus was, who *26. 7.*  
 died, whom he had raised frō the dead. 2 There *mark.*  
 they made him a supper, and Martha serued: but *14. 3.*  
 Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him. 3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment of Spikenard very costely, & anoynted Iesus feete, and wiped his feete with her haire, and the house was filled with the sauour of the ointment. 4 Then said one of his disciples, *euē* Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne, which should betray him. 5 Why was not this oyntment solde for three hundred pence, and giuen to the poore? 6 Nowe he said this, not that he cared for the poore, but because he was a thiefe \* and had the *Chap.*  
 bagge, and bare that which was giuen. 7 Then *13. 29.*  
 said



# S. IOHN.

said Iesus, let her alone: against the day of my burying she kept it. 8 For the poore alwayes ye haue w<sup>th</sup> you, but me yee shall not haue alwayes. 9 Then much people of the Iewes knew that he was there: and they came not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. 10 The hie Priests therefore consulted that they might put Lazarus to death also, 11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went away, & beleued in Iesus. 12 \* On the morow a great multitude that were come to the feast. when they heard that Iesus should come to Hierusalē, 13 Tooke branches of palme trees, & went forth to meete him, & cryed, Hosanna, Blessed u<sup>e</sup> the King of Israel that cometh in the Name of the Lorde. 14 And Iesus found a yong asse, & sate thereon, as it is written, 15 \* Feare not, daughter of Sion: behold thy King cometh sitting on an asses colt. 16 But his disciples vnderstood not those things at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they, that these things were written of him and that they had done these things vnto him. 17 The people therefore that was w<sup>th</sup> him, bare witness that hee called Lazarus out of the graue and raised him from the dead. 18 Therefore met him y<sup>e</sup> people also, because they heard that he had done this miracle. 19 And the Pharises said among themselues Perceiue ye how ye preuaile nothing? Beholde the world goe after him. 20 Now there were certaine Greeke

Mat.

21.8.

mark.

11.8.

Luke

19.35

Zech.

9.9.

# C H A P. XII.

among them that came vp to worship at the  
 feast. 21 And they came to Philip, which was of  
 Bethsaida in Galile, and desired him, saying, Sir,  
 we would see that Iesus. 22 Philip came & told  
 Andrew: and againe Andrew & Philip told Ie-  
 sus. 23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The  
 houre is come, that the Sonne of man must be  
 glorified. 24 Verily, verily I say vnto you, Ex-  
 cept the wheate corne fall into the ground and  
 dye it bideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth  
 forth much fruit. 25 \* He that loueth his life, *Mat.*  
 shall lose it, and he that hateth his life in this *10. 39*  
 world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall. 26 \* If *Chap.*  
 any man serue me let him followe me: for where *17 24.*  
 I am, there shall also my seruant bee: and if any  
 man serue mee, him will my Father honour.  
 27 Now is my soule troubled: and what shall I  
 say? Father saue me from this houre: but there-  
 fore came I vnto this houre. 28 Father, glorifie  
 thy Name. Then came there a voyce from hea-  
 uen *saying*, I haue both glorified it, and wil glo-  
 rific it againe. 29 Then said the people y<sup>e</sup> stood  
 by and heard, that it was a thunder: other sayd,  
 An Angel spake to him. 30 Iesus answered, and  
 said, This voyce came not because of me, but for  
 your sakes. 31 Now is the iudgement of this  
 world: nowe shall the prince of this world be  
 cast out 32 \* And I, if I were lift vp from y<sup>e</sup> earth, *Chap.*  
 will draw all men vnto me. 33 Now this said *3. 14.*  
 he, signifying what death he should die. 34 The  
 people answered him, We haue heard out of  
 the

# S. I O H N.

*Pfal.* the \* Law, that that Christ bideth for euer and  
89.36 how saueſt thou, that that Sonne of man must be

life vnto What is that Sonne of man? 35 Then Ie-

*Chap.* sus said vnto the n, Yet a litle while \* is the light  
19. with you: waile while ye haue that light, leaſt

the darke nesse come vpon you: for he that walketh

in the darke, knoweth not whither he goeth. 36 While ye haue that light, beleene in that

light, that ye may bee the children of the light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and hid

himselfe from them. 37 And though he had done so many miracles before them, yet beleued they

not on him, 38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, that he said, \* Lord,

*Iſai.*

53.1.

who beleued our report? and to whom is the arme of the Lord reuiled? 39 Therefore could

they not beleene, because that Esaias sayeth a- gaine. 40 \* He hath blinded their eyes, & har-

*Iſai.*

6.9.

dened their heart that they should not see with  
their eyes, nor vnderstand with their heart, and

should be conuerted, and I should heale them. 41 These things said Esaias when he saue his

glory, and spake of him. 42 Neuerthelesse, euen among the chiefe rulers, many beleued in him

but because of the Pharisees they did not con- fesse him, leaſt they should be cast out of the Sy-

*Chap.*

5.44.

nagogue. 43 \* For they loued the praise of men,

*Chap.*

3.19.

more then the prayse of God. 44 And Iesus cri- ed, and said, He that beleueth in me, beleueth

*Chap.*

9.

not in me, but in him that sent me. 45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. 46 \* I am

39.

come

## C H A P. XIII.

come a light into the world, that whosoever beleeueth in me, should not abide in darknesse.

47 \* And if any man heare my words, & beleue *Chap.*  
not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge *3. 17*  
the world, but to saue the world. 48 Hee that  
refuseth me, and receiveth not my wordes, hath  
one that iudgeth him: \* the word *Mat.*  
which I haue spoken, I shall iudge him in the last day *10. 39*  
49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father,  
which sent me, hee gaue me a commaundement  
what I should say, and what I should speake.  
50 And I know that his commaundement is life  
euerslasting: the things therefore that I speake,  
I speake them so as the Father said vnto me.

CHAP. 13. 4. *Christ washeth his disci-  
ples feete.*

**N**OWE \* before the feast of the Pascheouer, *Mat.*  
whē Iesus knew that his houre was come, *16. 2,*  
that hee should depart out of this world vnto  
the Father, forasmuch as hee loued his owne  
which were in the world vnto the end he loued  
them. 2 And when supper was done (and that  
the deuill had now put in the heart of Iudas Is-  
cariot, Simons sonne, to betray him) 3 Iesus  
knowing that the Father had giuen all things  
into his hands, and that hee was come forth  
from God and went to God, 4 He riseth from  
supper, & layeth aside his upper garments, and  
tooke a towel & girded himselfe. 5 After that,  
he powred water into a basin & began to wash  
the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the

## S. I O H N.

towel, wherewith he was girded. 6 Then came he to Simon Peter, who said to him, Lord, dost thou wash my feete? 7 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, What I doe thou knowest not now, but thou shalt know it hereafter. 8 Peter said vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not thou shalt haue no part with me. 9 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, not my feete onely, but also the hands and the head. 10 Iesus said to him, Hee that is washed, needeth not, saue to wash his feete, but

*Chap.* is cleane euery whit: \* and yee are cleane, but  
*25.3.* not all: 11 For he knew who should betray him: therefore said he, Ye are not all cleane. 12 So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he said vnto them, Knowe ye what I haue done to you? 13 Ye call me Master, and Lord, and ye say well: for so am I. 14 If I then your Lord, and Master, haue washed your feete, yee also ought to wash one anothers feete. 15 For I haue giuen you an example, that ye should doe, euen as I haue done

*Chap.* to you. 16 Verely, verely I say vnto you, \* The  
*13.20.* seruant is not greater then his master, neither  
*mass.* the ambassadour greater then he that sent him.  
*10.24.* 17 If ye know these things, blessed are ye, if ye  
*luke* doe them. 18 I speake not of you all: I know  
*6.40.* whom I haue chosen: but it is that the Scrip-  
*Psal.* ture might be fulfilled, \* He that eateth bread  
*41.9.* with me hath lift vp his heele against me. 19 Fro hencefoorth tell I you before it come, that when

## CHAP. XIII.

it is come to passe, yee might beleue that I am  
 he. 20 \* Verely, verely I say vnto you, If I send *Mat.*  
 any, he that receiueth him, receiueth me, and he 10.40,  
 that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent mee. *luke*  
 21 When Iesus had said these things, hee was 10.16,  
 troubled in the Spirit, & testified & said, Verely,  
 verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall be-  
 tray me. 22 Then \* the disciples looked one on *Mat.*  
 another, doubting of whom he spake. 23 Nowe 16.21.  
 there was one of his disciples, which leaned on *mark.*  
 Iesus bosome, whom Iesus loued. 24 To him 14.18.  
 therefore beckened Simon Peter, that he should *luke*  
 aske who it was of whom he spake. 25 Hee then 22.27,  
 as he leaned on Iesus brest, said vnto him, Lord,  
 who is it? 26 Iesus answered, He it is, to whom  
 I shall giue a sop, when I haue dipt it: and hee  
 wet a sop, and gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, Simons  
*sonne.* 27 And after the sop, Satan entred into  
 him. Then said Iesus vnto him, That thou doest,  
 doe quickly. 28 But none of them that were at  
 table, knew for what cause he spake it vnto him.  
 29 For some of them thought because Iudas  
 had the bagge, that Iesus had said vnto him, Buy  
 those things that wee haue neede of against the  
 feast: or that he should giue some thing to the  
 poore. 30 As soone then as he had receiued the  
 sop, he went immediatly out, and it was night.  
 31 When he was gone out, Iesus said, Now is the  
 Sonne of man glorified, and God is glorified in  
 him. 32 If God be glorified in him, God shall  
 also glorifie him in himselfe, & shall straightway  
 glorifie

## S. I O H N.

glorifie him. 33 I little children, yet a little while am I with you: ye shall seeke me, but as I said

*Chap.* vnto \* the Iewes, Whither I go, can ye not come:

734. also to you say I now, 34 \* A new commande.

*Chap.* ment giue I vnto you, that ye loue one another:

15 12. as I haue loued you, that ye also loue one ano-

*leuit.* ther. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are

29. 18. my disciples, if yee haue loue one to another.

*mat.* 26 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, whither

22 39. goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe,

*1 iohn* thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt

4. 11. follow mee afterward. 37 Peter said vnto him,

*Mat.* Lord, why can I not follow thee now? \* I will

25. 33. lay downe my life for thy sake. 38 Iesus answered

him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my

sake? Verely, verely I say vnto thee, The cocke

shall not crowe, till thou haue denied me thrise.

CHAP. 14. 16 *The comforter promised.*

**L**et not your heart be troubled: ye beleue in

God, beleue also in me. 2 In my Fathers

house are many dwelling places: if it were not

so, I would haue tolde you: I goe to prepare a

place for you. 3 And if I goe to prepare a place

for you, I will come againe, & receiue you vnto

my selfe, that where I am, there may ye be also.

4 And whither I goe, ye know, and the way ye

know. 5 Thomas said vnto him, Lord, we knowe

not whither thou goest: how can we then know

the way? 6 Iesus said vnto him, I am that Way,

and that Trueth, and that Life. No man cometh

vnto the Father, but by me. 7 If yee had knowen

# CHAP. XIII.

me, ye should haue knowen my Father also: and from henceforth ye knowe him, and haue seene him. 8 Philip said vnto him, Lord, shew vs thy Father, and it sufficeth vs. 9 Iesus said vnto him, I haue bene so long time with you, and hast thou not knowen me, Philip? he that hath seene me, hath seene my Father: howe then sayest thou, Shew vs thy Father? 10 Beleeuest thou not, that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The wordes that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in mee, he doeth the works. 11 Beleeue me, that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me: at the least beleeue me for the very works sake. 12 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that beleeueth in me, the works that I doe, he shall doe also, and greater then these shall he doe: for I go vnto my Father. 13 And whatsoeuer ye aske in my Name, *chap.* that will I doe, that the Father may bee glorified *16 23.* in the Sonne. 14 If yee shall aske any thing in *mat.* my Name I will doe it. 15 If ye loue me, keepe *7 7.* my commandements, 16 And I will pray the *mark.* Father, and he shall giue you another Comforter, *11. 24.* that he may abide with you for euer, 17 I uen *iames* the Spirit of trueth, whom the world cannot re- *1. 5.* ceiue, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye knowe him: for he dwelleth with you, and shall bee in you. 18 I will not leaue you fatherlesse: but I will come to you. 19 Yet a litte while, and the world shall see me no more, but ye shall see me: because I liue, ye shall *liue*



# S. I O H N.

live also. 20 At that day shall ye knowe that I  
am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.  
21 He that hath my commandements, & keepeth  
them, is he that loueth me: & he that loueth me,  
shall be loued of my Father: and I will loue him,  
and will shewe mine owne selfe to him. 22 Iu-  
das said vnto him (not Iscariot) Lord, what is the  
cause that thou wilt shew thy selfe vnto vs, and  
not vnto the world? 23 Iesus answered and said  
vnto him, If any man loue me, he will keepe my  
word, and my Father will loue him, and we will  
come vnto him, and will dwell with him. 24 He  
that loueth me not, keepeth not my words: and  
the word which ye heare, is not mine, but the  
Fathers which sent me. 25 These things haue I

*Chap.* spoken vnto you, being present with you. 26 But  
19. 26. the Comforter which is the holy Ghost, whom  
the Father will send in my Name, hee shall teach  
you all things, and bring all things to your re-  
membrance which I haue tolde you. 27 Peace  
I leaue with you: my peace I giue vnto you:  
not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you. Let  
not your heart bee troubled, nor feare. 28 Ye  
haue heard howe I said vnto you, I goe away  
and will come vnto you. If yee loued mee, ye  
would verely reioyce, because I said I goe vnto  
the Father: for the Father is greater then I.  
29 And now haue I spoken vnto you, before  
it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might  
believe. 30 Hereafter will I not speake many  
things vnto you: for the prince of this worlde

## C H A P. XV.

cometh, and hath nought in me. 31 But it is that the world may knowe that I loue my Father: and as the Father hath commanded me, so I doe. Arise, let vs goe hence.

C H A P. 15. 1 *The parable of the vine.*

**I** Am that true vine, and my Father is that husbandman. 2 \* Euery branch that beareth not fruit in me, he taketh away: and euery one that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. 3 \* Now are ye cleane thorough the worde, which I haue spoken vnto you. 4 Abide in me, and I in you: as the branch can not beare fruit of it selfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am that vine: ye are the branches: he that abideth in me and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me can ye doe nothing. 6 \* If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, & withereth: and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, & they burne. 7 \* If ye abide in me, & my words abide in you, aske what ye will, & it shall be done vnto you. 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare much fruit, and be made my disciples. 9 As the Father hath loved me, so haue I loved you: continue in that my love. 10 If ye shall keepe my commandments, ye shall abide in my love, as I haue kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love. 11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full. 12 \* This is my commandment, that

*Mat.*

15 13.

*Chap.*

13. 10.

*Colos.*

1. 23.

1. 10. 13.

3. 22.

*Chap.*

13. 34.

1. 14.

4. 9.

1. 10. 13.

3. 11.

and

4. 21.

that

## S. I O H N.

that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue then this hath no man, when any man bestoweth his life for his friends:

14 Yee are my friends, if ye doe whatsoeuer I commaund you. 15 Hencefoorth call I not you seruants: for the seruant knoweth not what his

master doeth: but I haue called you friends for all things that I haue heard of my Father, haue I

made knownen to you. 16 Ye haue not chosen mee, but I haue chosen you, and ordeined you

*Matt.*

28.19.

\*that ye goe and bring forth fruit, and that your fruite remaine, that whatsoeuer ye shall aske of

the Father in my Name, hee may giue it you. 17 These things commaund I you, that ye loue

one another. 18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before you. 19 If ye were of

the world, the world would loue his owne: but because ye are not of the world, but I haue cho-

sen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20 Remember the worde that I

*Chap.*

13.16.

sayd vnto you, \*The seruant is not greater then his master \* If they haue persecuted mee, they

*Matt.*

24.9.

will persecute you also: if they haue kept my worde, they will also keepe yours 21 \* But all

*Chap.*

16.4.

these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they haue not knownen him

that sent me. 22 If I had not come and spoken vnto them, they should not haue had sinne: but

now haue they no cloke for their sinne. 23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also. 24 If I

had not done workes among them which none other

## C H A P. XVI.

ether man did, they had not had sinne: but now  
 haue they both seene & haue hated both me, and  
 my Father. 25 But it is that the word might be  
 fulfilled that is written in their Law, \* They ha- *Psal.*  
 ted me without a cause. 25 But when the Com- 33.19.  
 forter shall come, \* whom I will send vnto you *Chap.*  
 from the Father, ~~and~~ the Spirit of trueth, which 14.26.  
 proceedeth of the Father, he shall testifie of me. *luke*  
 17 And ye shall witness: also, because ye haue 24.49  
 bene with me from the beginning.

### C H A P. 16. 1 Of persecutions.

**T**Hese things haue I sayd vnto you, that yee  
 should not be offended. 2 They shal excom-  
 munate you: yea, the time shall come, that  
 whosoever killeth you, will thinke that he doth  
 Gods service. 3 And these things will they doe  
 vnto you, because they haue not knowen the Fa-  
 ther, nor me. 4 \* But these things haue I tolde *Chap.*  
 you, that when the houre shal come, ye might re- 15.21.  
 member, that I tolde you them And these things  
 said I not vnto you from the beginning, because  
 I was with you. 5 But now I goe my way, to  
 him that sent me, & none of you asketh me, Whi-  
 ther goest thou? 6 But because I haue sayde  
 these things vnto you, your hearts are full of so-  
 row. 7 Yet I tell you the trueth, It is expedient  
 for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away,  
 that Comforter will not come vnto you: but if  
 I depart, I will send him vnto you. 8 And when  
 he is come, he will reprove the world of sinne,  
 and of righteousnesse, and of iudgement: 9 Of  
 sinne,

# S I O H N.

sinne, because they beleue not in mee: 10 Of  
 righteousness, because I goe to my Father, and  
 ye shall see me no more: 11 Of iudgement, be-  
 cause the prince of this world is iudged. 12 I  
 haue yet many things to say vnto you, but yee  
 cannot beare them now. 13 Howbeit, when he  
 is come which is the Spirit of truth, he will leade  
 you into all truth: for hee shall not speake of  
 himselfe, but whatsoever he shall heare, shall he  
 speake, and he wil shew you the things to come.  
 14 He shall glorifie me: for he shall receiue of  
 mine, and shall shew it vnto you. 15 All things  
 that the Father hath, are mine: therefore sayd I,  
 that he shall take of mine, and shew it vnto you.  
 16 A litle *while*, and ye shall not see me: and a-  
 gaine a litle *while*, & ye shall see me: for I goe to  
 the Father. 17 Then said *some* of his disciples a-  
 mong themselves, What is this that he saith vnto  
 vs, A litle *while*, & ye shall not see me, & againe,  
 A litle *while*, and ye shall see me, and. For I goe to  
 the Father? 18 They said therefore, What is this  
 that he saith, A litle *while*? we know not what he  
 saith. 19 Now Iesus knew that they would aske  
 him, and said vnto them, Doe ye enquire among  
 your selues, of that I sayd, A litle *while* and yee  
 shall not see me: and againe, A litle *while*, and ye  
 shall see me? 20 Verely, verely I say vnto you  
 that ye shall weepe and lament, and the world  
 shall reioyce: and ye shall sorow, but your sorow  
 shall be turned to ioy. 21 A woman when she  
 travaileth, hath sorow, because her houre is  
 come

## C H A P. XVI.

come. but as soone as she is deliuered of  $\bar{y}$  child,  
 she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that  
 a man is borne into the world. 22 And ye now  
 therefore are in sorow: but I wil see you againe,  
 and your hearts shall reioyce, and your ioy shal  
 no man take from you. 23 And in that day shall  
 ye aske me nothing. Verely, \* verely I say vnto *Chap.*  
 you, Whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my *14. 13.*  
 Name he wil geue it you. 24 Hitherto haue ye *Matt.*  
 asked nothing in my Name: aske and ye shal re- *7. 7.*  
 ceue,  $\bar{y}$  your ioy may be full. 25 These things *& 21.*  
 haue I spoken vnto you in parables: but the *22.*  
 time will come, when I shall no more speake to *make*  
 you in parables: but I shall shew you plainly of *11. 24.*  
 the Father. 26 At that day shall ye aske in my *luke*  
 Name, & I say not vnto you that I will pray vn- *11. 9.*  
 to the Father for you: 27 For the Father him-  
 selfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, \* and *Chap.*  
 haue beleened that I came out from God. 28 I *17. 8.*  
 am come out from the Father and came into the  
 world: againe I leaue the world, and goe to the  
 Father. 29 His disciples said vnto him, Lo, now  
 speakest thou plainly, & thou speakest no para-  
 ble. 30 Now knowe we that thou knowest all  
 things, & needest not that any man should aske  
 thee. By this we beleuee, that thou art come out  
 from God. 31 Iesus answered them, Do you be-  
 leue now? 32 \* Behold, the houre cometh, and *Matt.*  
 is already come, that ye shall be scattered euery *26. 31.*  
 man into his owne, & shal leaue me alone: but I *marke*  
 am not alone: for the Father is w<sup>th</sup> me. 33 These *14. 27.*  
 things

# S. IOHN.

things haue I spoken vnto you, that in me yee might haue peace: in the world ye shall haue affliction, but be of good comfort: I haue overcome the world.

CHAP 17. 9. *Christ's prayer for all beleevers.*

**T**Hese things spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and said, Father, y<sup>e</sup> houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee. 2 \* As thou hast giuen him power: *Mat.* 28. 18 *uer* all flesh, that he should giue eternall life to all them that thou hast giuen him. 3 And this is life eternall that they know thee to be the onely very God, and whom thou hast sent Iesus Christ. 4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest mee to doe. 5 And now glorifie me, thou Father, with thine owne selfe, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. 6 I haue declared thy Name vnto the men which thou gauest mee out of the world: thine they were, and thou gauest them me, and they haue kept thy word. 7 \* Now *Chap.* 16. 27. they know that all things what so euer thou hast giuen me, are of thee. 8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes, which thou gauest mee, and they haue receiued *hem*, & haue knowen surely that I came out from thee, and haue beleeued that thou hast sent me. 9 I pray for them: I pray not for the worlde, but for them which thou hast giuen me: for they are thine. 10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them. 11 And now am I no more

## C H A P. XVII.

in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee: Holy Father, keepe them in thy Name, <sup>even</sup> them whome thou hast given mee, that they may be one, as we are. 12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gavest mee, haue I kept, and none of them is lost, but the child of perdition that the \*Scripture might be fulfilled. 13 And *Psalm* now come I to thee, and these things speake I *159.7* in the world that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselves. 14 I haue given them thy worde, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the worlde, as I am not of the world. 15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of <sup>the</sup> world. but that thou keepe them from euil. 16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world. 17 Sanctifie them with thy trueth: thy word is trueth. 18 As thou diddest send me into the world, so haue I sent them into the world. 19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my self, that they also may be sanctified through the trueth. 20 I pray not for these alone, but for them also which shall beleue in mee through their word, 21 That they al may be one, as thou, O Father, art in me, and I in thee: <sup>even</sup> that they may be also one in vs, <sup>that</sup> the world may beleue that thou hast sent mee. 22 And the glory that thou gavest me, I haue given them, that they may bee one, as we are one, 23 I in them and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, & that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and



# S. I O H N.

*Cap.* hast loued them, as thou hast loued me. 24 \* *Pa.*  
 12. 26. then, I wil that they which thou hast giue me be  
 with me, even where I am, that they may beheld  
 that my glory, which thou hast giuen mee: for  
 thou louedst mee before the foundation of the  
 worlde. 25 O righteous Father, the world also  
 hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee,  
 and these haue knowen that thou hast sent mee.  
 26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name,  
 and wil declare it, that the loue wherewith thou  
 hast loued me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. 18. 4. *I haue apprehended an iudged.*

**W**Hen Iesus had spokē these things, he went  
 forth with his disciples ouer the brooke  
*Mat.* \* Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he  
 16. 36. entred, and his disciples. 2 And Iudas which be-  
*mark.* trayed him, knewe also the place: for Iesus oft-  
 14. 32 times resorted thither with his disciples. 3 \* *Lu.*  
*Mat.* das then after he had receiued a band of men, &  
 26. 47 officers of the hie Priestes, and of the Pharisees,  
*mark.* came thither with lanternes, and torches, and  
 14. 43 weapons. 4 Then Iesus, knowing all things that  
*luke* should come vnto him, went forth and said vnto  
 22. 47 them, Whom seeke ye? 5 They answered him,  
 Iesus of Nazareth, Iesus said vnto them, I am he.  
 Now Iudas also which betraied him, stood with  
 them. 6 As soone then as he had said vnto them,  
 I am he, they went away backward, & fell to the  
 ground. 7 Then he called them againe, whom  
 seeke ye? And they said, Iesus of Nazareth. 8 Ie-  
 sus answered, I said vnto you, that I am he: there-  
 fore

# C H A P. XVIII.

fore if ye seeke me, let these go their way. 9 *Thi*  
 that the word might be fulfilled which hee  
 spake, \* Of them which thou gauest me, haue *Chap.*  
 I lost none. 10 Then Simon Peter hauing a *17. 12.*  
 sword, drew it. & smote the hie Priests seruant, &  
 cut off his right eare. Now the seruants name was  
 Malchus. 11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp  
 thy sword into thy sheath: shal I not drinke of  
 the cup which my Father hath giue me? 12 Then  
 the band, and the captaine and the officers of the  
 Iewes tooke Iesus & bound him, 13 And led him  
 away to \* Annas first (for he was father in law to *Luke*  
 Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest y<sup>e</sup> same yere) *3. 2.*  
 14 \* And Caiaphas was he that gaue counsell to *Chap.*  
 the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man *11. 50.*  
 should die for the people. 15 \* Now Simon Pe- *Mat.*  
 ter followed Iesus, & another disciple & that dis- *26. 58.*  
 ciple was knownen of the hie Priest, therefore he *mark.*  
 went in with Iesus into the hal of the hie Priest. *14. 54.*  
 16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then *luke*  
 went out the other disciple which was knownen *23. 54*  
 vnto the hie Priest, & spake to her that kept the  
 doore, & brought in Peter 17 Then said the maid  
 that kept the doore, vnto Peter, Art not thou al-  
 so one of this mans disciples? He said I am not.  
 18 And the seruants & officers stood there, which  
 had made a fire of coles: for it was cold, & they  
 warmed themselves And Peter also stood amōg  
 them, & warmed himselfe. 19 The hie Priest then  
 ask. I Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.  
 20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the

## S. IOHN.

world: I euer taught in the Synagogue & in the Temple, whither the Iewes resort continually, & in secret haue I said nothing. 21 Why askest thou me? aske them which heard me what I said vnto them: be hold, they know what I said. 22 When hee had spoken these things, one of the officers which stood by, smote Iesus with his rod, saying, Answerest thou the hie Priest so? 23 Iesus answered him, If I haue euill spokē, beare witnes of the euill: but if I haue well spoken, why smitest thou

*Mat.* me? 24 (Now Annas had sent him bound to Caiaphas the hie Priest) 25 \* And Simon Peter stood & warmed himselfe, & they said vnto him, 26. 29 Art not thou also of his disciples? He denied it, & *mark.* said, I am not. 26 One of the seruants of the hie 14. 59 priest his cousin, whose eare Peter smote off, said, *luke* Did not I see thee in the garden w<sup>th</sup> him? 27 Peter then denied againe, & immediatly the cocke *Mat.* crew. 28 \* Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas 27. 2. into the common hall. Now it was morning, and they themselues went not into the common hall, *Act.* least they should be \* defiled, but that they might 10. 28. eat the Passeouer. 29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and said, What accusation bring yee against this man? 30 They answered and said vnto him, If he were not an euill doer, wee would not haue deliuered him vnto thee. 31 Then said Pilate vnto them, Take yee him and iudge him after your owne Law. Then the Iewes said vnto *Mat.* him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to 20. 19 death. 32 It was that the word of Iesus might

## CHAPTER XIX.

be fulfilled which hee spake, signifying what death he should die. 33 \* So Pilate entred into *Mat.* the common hall againe, and called Iesus, and said 27. 12 vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? 34 Ie- *ma k* sus answered him, Sayest thou that of thy self, or 13. 2. did other tell it thee of me? 35 Pilate answered, *Iake* Ain I a Iewe? I hine own nation, & the hie Priests 13. 3. haue deliuered thee vnto mee. What hast thou done? 36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not of this worlde: if my kingdome were of this worlde, my seruants would surely fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence 37 Pilate then said vnto him, Art thou a King then? Iesus answered, I thou sayest t: at I am a King: for this cause am I borne, and for this cause came I into the worlde, that I shoulde beare witness vnto the truth: euery one that is of the truth, heareth my voyce 38 Pilate sayde vnto him, What is truth? And when he had said that, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and said vnto them, I find in him no cause at all. 39 \* But you haue a cu- *Mat.* stone, that I should deliuer you one loose at 27. 13. the Pascheouer: will ye then that I let loose vnto you the King of the Iewes? 40 \* Then cried they *Acts.* all againe, saying Not him, but Barabbas: nowe 3. 14. this Barabbas was a murderier.

CHAP. 19. 1. Christ scourged, condemn- Mas.  
ned, and crucified. 27.27

Then Pilate tooke Iesus, and scourged him. *mark.*  
 2 And the souldiers platted a crowne of 15. 16.  
 V 3 thornes.

# S. I O H N.

thornes, & put it on his head, & they put on him  
 a purple garment, 3 And said, Haile King of  
 the Iewes. And they smote him with their rods.  
 4 Then Pilate went forth againe, and said vnto  
 them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye  
 may knowe, that I finde no fault in him at all.  
 5 Then came Iesus forth, wearing a crowne of  
 thornes, & a purple garment And Pilate said vnto  
 them, Behold the man. 6 Then when the Ie  
 Priests and officers saw him, they cried, saying,  
 Crucifie, crucifie him. Pilate said vnto them, Take  
 ye him, and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in  
 him. 7 The Iewes answered him, We haue a  
 Law, and by our Law he ought to die, because he  
 made himselfe the Sonne of God. 8 When Pi  
 late then heard y word, he was the more afraid,  
 9 And went againe into the common hall, and  
 said vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus  
 gaue him none answer. 10 Then said Pilate  
 vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto me? Knowest  
 thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and  
 haue power to loose thee? 11 Iesus answered,  
 Thou couldest haue no power at all against me,  
 except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore  
 he y deliuered me vnto thee, hath the greater sin.  
 12 From thenceforth Pilate sought to loose him,  
 but the Iewes cried, saying, If thou deliuer him,  
 thou art not Celsars friend: for whosoever mak  
 keth himselfe a King, speaketh against Cesar.  
 13 When Pilate heard this word he brought Ie  
 sus forth, & saue downe in the iudgement seate in  
 a place

# C H A P. XIX.

a place called the panement, & in Hebrew, Gabbatha. 14 And it was the preparatiō of the Pasſe-  
ouer, and about the ſixt houre : and he ſaid vnto  
the Iewes, Behold your King. 15 But they cried,  
Away with him, away with him, crucifie him Pi-  
late ſaid vnto the, Shall I crucifie your King? The  
bie Priests answered, We haue no king but Ce-  
ſar. 16 Then deliuer'd he him vnto them, to be  
crucified. \* And they tooke Jeſus, and led him a- *Mat.*  
way. 17 And he bare his owne croſſe, and came *27.31.*  
into a place named of *aramiens* ſkilles, which *mark*  
is called in Hebrew, Golgotha: 18 Where they *15.25.*  
crucified him, and two other with him, on either  
ſide one, and Jeſus in the middes. 19 And Pilate  
wrote alſo a title, and put it on the croſſe, and it  
was written, I E S V S O F N A Z A R E T H  
T H E K I N G O F T H E I E W E S.  
20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for  
the place where Jeſus was crucified, was neere to  
the city: and it was written in Hebrew, Greeke,  
and Latine. 21 Then ſaid the bie Priests of the  
Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the  
Iewes. but hee ſaide, I am King of the Iewes.  
22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue  
written. 23 Then \* the ſouldiers, when they *Mat.*  
had crucified Jeſus, tooke his garment (and made *27.35.*  
four parts, to euery ſouldier a part) and *his* *mark*  
coate: and the coate was without ſeame wouen *15.24.*  
from the top thorowout. 24 Therefore they  
ſaid one to another, Let vs not diuide it, but caſt  
lots for it, whoſe it ſhall be. *This was* that the

# S. I O H N.

**Psal.** Scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, \* They parted my garments among them, & on my coat did cast lots. So the souldiers did these things in deed. 24 Then stood by the crosse of Iesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary *the wife* of Cleopas, and Mary Magdalene 25 And when Iesus saw his mother, & the disciple standing by, whom he loued, he said vnto his mother Woman, beholde thy sonne. 27 Then said he to the disciple, Behold thy mother: and from that houre the disciple tooke her home vnto him 28 After, when Iesus knew that all things were performed, that the

**Psal.** \* Scripture might be fulfilled, he said, I thirst. 29 And there was set a vessell full of viager, & they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it about an hyssope *Herb* & put it to his mouth. 30 Now when Iesus had receiued of the vinegar, he said, It is finished & bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost. 31 The Iewes then (because it was y Preparation, & the bodies should not remaine vpon y crosse on the Sabbath *for that Sabbath was an hie day*) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, & that they might be taken downe. 32 Then came the souldiers & brake the legs of the first, & of the other, which was crucified with Iesus 33 But when they came to Iesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs. 34 But one of the souldiers with a speare pearced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. 35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is

## C H A P. XX.

is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that  
 yee might beleene it: 3 For these things were  
 done y<sup>e</sup> the Scripture should be fulfilled, \* Not a *Exod.*  
 bone of him shalbe broken. 37 And againe ano. 12. 46.  
 the Scripture saith, \* They shall see him whom *Z ch.*  
 the haue thrust thorow. 38 \* And after these 12. 10.  
 things Ioseph of Arimathea (who was a disci- *Mat.*  
 ple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes) 27. 57.  
 besought Pilate that hee might take downe the *mark.*  
 body of Iesus And Pilate gaue him licence He 15. 42.  
 came then and tooke Iesus body. 39 And there  
 came \* also Nicodemus ( which first came to Ie- *Chap.*  
 sus by night) and brought of myrre and aloes, 3. 2.  
 mingled together about an hundred pound.  
 40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, & wrap-  
 ped it in linnen clothes with the odours as the  
 manner of the Iewes is to bury. 41 And in that  
 place where Iesus was crucified, was a garden,  
 and in the garden a new sepulchre wherein was  
 neuer man yet layed. 42 There then layd they  
 Iesus, because of the Iewes Preparation day, for  
 the sepulchre was neere.

### C H A P. 20. 1 *Christe resurrection.*

**N**OW the first \* day of the weeke came *Mov.*  
 Mary Magdalene, early when it was yet darke, 16. 1.  
 into the sepulchre, & saw the stone taken away *lake*  
 from the tombe. 2 Then she ran, and came to 24. 1.  
 Simon Peter and to the other disciple whom Ie-  
 sus loued, & said vnto them, They haue taken a-  
 way the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know  
 not where they haue laid him, 3 Peter therefore  
 went



# S. I O H N.

went forth, and the other disciple, and they came vnto the sepulchre. 4 So they ran both together, but the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. 5 And he stooped downe, & saw the linnen clothes lying: yet went he not in. 6 Then came Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and sawe the linnen clothes lie, 7 And the kercheife that was vpon his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe. 8 Then went in also the other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, & he saw it, & beleeu-  
**Mat.** 28. 1. *mark.* 16. 5. ed. 9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, That he must rise againe from the dead. 10 And the disciples went away againe vnto their own home. 11 But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, shee bowed her selfe into the sepulchre, 12 And sawe two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, & the other at the feete, where the body of Iesus had lien. 13 And they said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She said vnto them, They haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue layed him. 14 When shee had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, & saw Iesus standing, and knew not that it was Iesus. 15 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou? She supposing that he had bene the gardiner, said vnto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. 16 Iesus saith vnto her,

Mary

## C H A P. XX.

Mary She turned her selfe, & said vnto him, Rab-  
 boni, which is to say, Master. 17 Iesus saith vnto  
 her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended  
 to my Father: but go to my brethien, & say vn-  
 to them I ascend vnto my Father, & to your Fa-  
 ther, and to my God, and your God. 18 Mary  
 Magdalene came and tolde the disciples that she  
 had seene the Lord, and that he had spoken these  
 things vnto her. 19 \* The same day then at *Mar.*  
 night, which was the first *day* of the weeke, and *16.14.*  
 when the doores were shut where the disciples *luke*  
 were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Ie- *24.36.*  
 sus & stood in the mids, and said to them, Peace *1.cor.*  
 be vnto you. 20 And when he had so sayd, hee *15.5.*  
 shewed vnto them *his* hands, and his side. Then  
 were *8* disciples glad when they had seene the  
 Lord. 21 \* Then said Iesus vnto them againe, *Matt.*  
 Peace be vnto you: as my Father sent mee, so *17*  
 send I you. 22 And when hee had said that he  
 breathed on them, and said vnto them, Receiue  
 the holy Ghost. 23 Whofe uers finnes ye remit,  
 they are remitted vnto them: and whoso uers  
 finnes ye reteine, they are reteined. 24 But Tho-  
 mas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not  
 with them when Iesus came 25 The other disci-  
 ples therefore said vnto him, We haue seene the  
 Lord: but he said vnto them, Except I see in his  
 hands the print of the nailes, & put my finger in-  
 to the print of the nailes, and put my hand into  
 his side, I wil not beleene it. 26 And eight dayes  
 after againe his disciples were within, and Tho-  
 mas

## S. I O H N.

was w<sup>th</sup> them. *Then* came Iesus, when the doores were shut, and stood in the mids, and said Peace be vnto you. 27 After, said he to Thomas, Put thy finger here, and see mine hands, & put forth thine hand, and put it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but faithful. 28 Then Thomas answered, and said vnto him. *Thou art* my Lord, & my God. 29 Iesus said vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene me, thou beleuest: blessed are they that haue not seene, and haue beleued.

*Chap.* 30 And many other signes also did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke. 31 But these things are written that yee might beleue, that Iesus is that Christ that Sonne of God, and that in bekening yee might haue life through his Name.

### CHAP. 21. 15 *The charge of Ministers.*

**A**fter these things, Iesus shewed himselfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and thus shewed he *himselfe*. 2 There were together Simon Peter, & Thomas, which is called Didymus, & Nathanael of Cana in Galile, & the sonnes of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples. 3 Simon Peter sayd vnto them, I go a fishing. They said vnto him, We also will goe with thee. They went their way & entred into a ship straightway, & that night caught they nothing. 4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stood on the shoare: neuerthelesse the disciples knew not that it was Iesus. 5 Iesus then sayde vnto them, Sirs, haue ye any meate? They answered

# CHAP. XXI.

swered him, No. 6 Then he said vnto the, Cast  
out the net on the right side of the ship, and yee  
shall finde. So they cast out, and they were not  
able at all to draw it, for the multitude of fishes.  
7 Therefore said the disciple whom Iesus loued,  
vnto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter  
heard that it was the Lord, he girded his coat to  
him (for he was naked) & cast himselfe into the  
sea. 8 But the other disciples came by ship (for  
they were not farre from land, but about two  
hundred cubits) and they drew the net with fi-  
shes. 9 A lloone then as they were come to  
land, they sawe hot coales, and fish laid there-  
on, and bread. 10 Iesus said vnto them Bring of  
the fishes, which ye haue now caught. 11 Simon  
Peter stepped forth and drew the net to land,  
full of great fishes, an hundred fittie and three:  
and albeit there were so many, yet was not the  
net broken. 12 Iesus said vnto them, Come and  
dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him,  
Who art thou? seeing they knewe that he was  
the Lord. 13 Iesus then came and tooke bread,  
and gaue them, and fish likewise. 14 This is now  
the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his  
disciples, after that he was risen againe from the  
dead. 15 So when they had dined, Iesus sayde  
to Simon Peter, Simon *the sonne of Iona*, louest  
thou me more then these? He said vnto him, Yea  
Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He sayd vn-  
to him, Feede my lambs. 16 He said to him a-  
gaine the second time, Simon *the sonne of Iona*,  
louest

# S. I O H N.

Louest thou me? He said vnto him, Yea Lord,  
 thou knowest that I loue thee He said vnto him,  
 Feede my sheepe. 17 He said vnto him the third  
 time, Simon *the sonne of Iona*, louest thou mee?  
 Peter was sory because hee sayde to him the  
 third time, Louest thou mee? and sayd vnto him,  
 Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest  
 that I loue thee. Iesus said vnto him, Feede my  
 sheepe. 18 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, Whe  
 thou wast yong, thou girdedst thy selfe and wal  
 kedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou  
 shalt bee olde, thou shalt stretch forth thine  
 hands, and another shall gird thee, & leade thee  
 whither thou wouldest not. 19 And this spake  
 he, signifying by what death he should glorifie  
 God. And when he had said this, he said to him,  
 Follow me. 20 Then Peter turned about, and  
 saw the disciple whom Iesus loued, following,  
 Chap. which had also \* leaned on his breast at supper,  
 13.23. and had said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth  
 thee? 21 When Peter therefore saw him, hee  
 said to Iesus, Lord, what shal this man doe? 22 Ie  
 sus sayd vnto him, If I wil that hee tarie till I  
 come, what is it to thee? follow thou mee.  
 23 Then went this word abroad among the bre  
 thren, that this disciple should not die. Yet Iesus  
 said not vnto him, he shall not die: but if I will  
 that he tary til I come, what is it to thee? 24 This  
 is that disciple which testifieth of these things,  
 Chap. and wrote these things, and we know that his te  
 10.30. stimonie is true. 25 \* Now there are also many

# CHAP. I.

other things which Iesus did, the which if they should be writtē euery one, I suppose the world could non containe the bookes that should be written. AMEN.

## THE ACTS OF THE HOLY Apostles, written by Luke the Euangelist.

CHAP. I. 9 *Christs ascension. 15 Mat.  
thin chosen.*

**H**Aue made the former treatise, O Theophilus, of all y Iesus began to doe and teach, 2 Vntil the day, that he was taken vp, after that he through the holy Ghost, had giuen commandements vnto the Apostles whom he had chosen: 3 To whom also he presented himselfe aliuē after that he had suffered, by many infallible tokens, being seene of them by the space of forty dayes, & speaking of those things which apperteyne to the kingdome of God. *Luke*  
4 \* And when he had gathered them together, 24.49. he commanded them, that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but to waite for the promise of the Father, \* whch, *sayde he,* ye haue *John*  
heard of mee. 5 \* For Iohn in deede baptized 14.15. with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the ho- *Chap.*  
ly Ghost within these few dayes. 6 When they 2.2. therefore were come together, they asked of *11.*  
him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore *16.*  
the kingdome to Israel? 7 And he sayde vnto *19 4.*  
them, *maie*

# THE ACTES.

them It is not for you to know the times, or  
 the seasons, which the Father hath put in his  
 Chap. owne power. 8 \* But ye sha'l receiue power  
 2.2. of the holy Ghost, when he shall come on you:  
 and ye shalbe witnesses vnto me both in Ieru-  
 salem and in all Iudea and in Samaria, and vnto  
 Luke the vttermost part of the earth 9 \* And when  
 24.51. he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he  
 was taken vp: for a cloud tooke him vp out of  
 their sight 10 And while they looked stedfastly  
 toward heauen, as hee went, beholde, two men  
 stood by them in white apparell, 11 Which  
 also said, Ye men of Galile, why stand ye gazing  
 into heauen? This Iesus which is taken vp from  
 you into heauen, shall so come as ye haue seene  
 him go into heauen. 12 Then returned they vnto  
 Hierusalem, from the mount that is called *the*  
*mount* of Oliues, which is neere to Hierusalem,  
 being from it a Sabbath *dayes* journey. 13 And  
 when they were come in, they went vp into an  
 vpper chamber, where abode both Peter, and  
 Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Tho-  
 mas, Bartlemew, & Matthew, Iames *the sonne* of  
 Alphens, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas Iames  
*brother*. 14 These all continued with one ac-  
 cord in prayer & supplication with the women,  
 and Mary y<sup>e</sup> mother of Iesus, and w<sup>th</sup> his brethren.  
 15 And in those dayes Peter stood vp in y<sup>e</sup> mids  
 of the disciples, and said, (now the number of  
 names that were in one place were about an  
 hundred & twentie,) 16 Ye men and brethren,

## C H A P. I.

this Scripture must needs haue bene fulfilled,  
 which the holy \* Ghost by the mouth of Dauid *Psal.*  
 spake before of Iudas, which was \* guide to *31.1.*  
 them that tooke Iesus. 17 For he was numbred *Iohn*  
 with vs, & had obtained felowship in this mi- *13.27*  
 nistration. 18 He therefore hath purchased a field  
 with the reward of iniquitie: and when he \* had *Mat.*  
 throwne downe himself headlong he brast asun- *27.5.*  
 der in the middes, & all his bowels gashed out.  
 19 And it is known vnto all the inhabitants of  
 Hierusalem in so much that that felde is called  
 in their owne language, Aceldama, that is, The  
 felde of blood. 20 For it is written in booke  
 of Psalmes, \* Let his habitation be voyde and let *Psal.*  
 no man dwell therein: \* also, Let another take *69.26.*  
 his charge. 21 Wherefore of these men which *Psal.*  
 haue companied with vs, all the time y<sup>e</sup> the Lord *109.7*  
 Iesus was conuersant among vs, 22 Beginning  
 from the baptisme of Iohn vnto the day that he  
 was taken vp frō vs, must one of them be made  
 a witness w<sup>th</sup> vs of his resurrection. 23 And they  
 presented two, Ioseph, called Barsabas, whose  
 surname was Iustus, and Matthias. 24 And they  
 prayed, saying, Thou Lord, which knowest the  
 hearts of all men, shewe whether of these two  
 thou hast chosen, 25 That he may take y<sup>e</sup> roome  
 of this ministration & Apostleship, from which  
 Iudas hath gone astray, to go to his owne place.  
 26 Then they gaue forth their lots: and the lot  
 fell on Matthias and he was by a common con-  
 sent counted with the eleuen Apostles.



## THE ACTES.

CHAP. 2. *2 The clouen tongues like fire.*

**A**Nd when the day of Pentecost was come, they were all with one accord in one place. 2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing and mightie winde & it filled all the house where they sat. 3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it sat vpon eche of them. 4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as y<sup>e</sup> Spirit gaue them vnderstanding. 5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, men that feared God, of euery nation vnder heauen. 6 Now when this was noised, the multitude came together and were astonied, because that euery man heard them speake his owne language. 7 And they wondred all and marvelled, saying among themselves, Beholde, are not all these which speake of Galilee? 8 How doe they heare we euery man our owne language wherein we were borne? 9 Parthians, & Medes, & Elamites, and the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, and of Iudea, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus, & Asia. 10 And of Phrygia, & Pamphylia, of Egypt, and of the partes of Libya, which is beside Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, & Iewes, and Proselytes, 11 Cretes, and Arabians: we heard them speake in our owne tongues the wonderfull works of God. 12 They were all then amazed, and doubted, saying one to another, What may this be? 13 And others mocked, & sayd, They are full of new wine. 14 But Peter standing with y<sup>e</sup> eleven

## C H A P. II.

lift vp his voyce, and sayd vnto them, Ye men of  
 Iudea, & ye all that inhabite Hierusalem, be this  
 known vnto you & hearken vnto my wordes.  
 15 For these are not drunken as ye suppose since  
 it is but the third houre of the day. 16 But this  
 is that, which was spoken by the prophet *Joel*  
 17 And it shalbe in the last daies, saith God, I wil **2.28.**  
 powre out of my Spirit vpon all flesh. and your *1/ai.*  
 sonnes, & your daughters shall prophesie, and **24.30**  
 your yong men shall see visions, & your old men  
 shall dreame dreames. 18 And on my seruants, &  
 on mine handmaides I wil powre out of my Spirit  
 in those dayes, & they shall prophesie. 19 And I  
 will shew wonders in heauen aboue, & tokens  
 in the earth beneath blood, & fire, & the vapour  
 of smoke. 20 The Sunne shall be turned into  
 darkenes, & the Moone into blood. before that  
 great & notable day of the Lord come. 21 And  
 it shall be, that whosoever shall call on the  
 Name of the Lord, shall be saved. 22 Ye men of  
 Israel, heare these words, I E S V S of Nazareth,  
 a man approoued of God among you w<sup>th</sup> great  
 wonders & wonders, and signes, which God did  
 by him in the mids of you, as ye your selues al-  
 so knowe: 23 Him, *I say* being deliuered by the  
 determinate counsel & foreknowledge of God,  
 after you had taken, with wicked handes you  
 had crucified and slaine. 24 Whom God hath  
 raised vp, and loosed the sorowes of death, be-  
 cause it was vnpossible that he should be holden *Psalm*  
 of it. 25 For Dauid saith concerning him, \* I be- **16.9.**  
helde

## THE ACTES.

helde the Lord alwayes before me : for he is at  
my right hand, that I should not bee shaken,  
26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce, and my  
tongue was glad, & moreouer also my flesh had  
rest in hope. 27 Because thou wilt not leaue my  
soule in graue, neither wilt suffer thine Holy  
one to see corruption. 28 Thou hast shewed  
me the wayes of life, and shalt make me full of  
ioy with thy countenance. 29 Men & brethren,  
I may boldly speake vnto you of the patriarch

*Chap.* Dauid \*that he is both dead and buried, and his  
13.36 sepulchre remaineth with vs vnto this day.  
2 *kin.* 30 Therefore seeing he was a Prophet, & knew  
2.10. that God had \*sworne with an oth to him, that  
*Psal.* of the fruite of his loynes hee would raise vp  
132.11 Christ concerning the flesh, to set him vpon his  
throne, 31 He knowing this before, spake of the  
*Chap.* resurrection of Christ, that his \*soule should  
13.35. not be left in graue, neither his flesh should see  
*Psal.* corruption. 32 This Iesus hath God raised up,  
26.10 we are all witnesses. 33 Since then that  
he by the right hand of God hath bene exalted,  
and hath receiued of his Father the promise of  
the holy Ghost, hee hath shewed forth this, which  
ye now see and heare. 34 For Dauid is not as-  
*Psal.* cended into heauen, but he saith, \* The Lord said  
110. 1. to my Lord, Sit at my right hand. 35 Vntill I  
make thine enemies thy foote tooles. 36 There-  
fore, let all y<sup>e</sup> house of Israel know for a suretie,  
y<sup>e</sup> God hath made him both Lord, & Christ, this  
Iesus, // 37, whom ye haue crucified. 37 Now  
when

## C H A P. II.

when they heard it, they were pricked in their hearts, and said vnto Peter and the other Apostles. Men, and brethren, what shall wee doe? 38 Then Peter sayd vnto them, Amend your liues, and be baptized euery one of you in the Name of Iesus Christ for the remission of sinnes; and ye shall receiue the gift of the holy Ghost, 39 For the promise is made vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, *euen* as many as the Lord our God shall call. 40 And with many other wordes he besought and exhorted *them*, saying, Saue your selues from this froward generation. 41 Then they that gladly receiued his word, were baptized: and the same day were there added to the church about three thousand soules. 42 And they continued in the Apostles doctrine, and felowship, and breaking of bread, and prayers. 43 And feare came vpon euery soule: and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles. 44 And all that beleeued were in one place, and had all things common. 45 And they solde their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery one had neede. 46 And they continued dayly with one accord in the Temple, and breaking bread at home, did eate their meate together with gladnesse and singlenesse of heart, 47 Praying God, and had fauour with all the people: and the Lorde added to the Church from day to day such as should be saued.

## THE ACTES.

CHAP 3. *2 Peter and Iohn heale the creeple.*

**N**OW Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple, at the ninth houre of prayer,  
**2** And a certaine man which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, was caried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the Temple called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple. **3** Who seeing Peter and Iohn, that they would enter into the Temple, desired to receiue an almes. **4** And Peter earnestly beholding him with Iohn, said, Looke on vs. **5** And he gaue heede vnto them, trusting to receiue some thing of them. **6** Then said Peter, Siluer & gold haue I none, but such as I haue, that giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp and walke. **7** And hee tooke him by the right hand, and lift him vp, & immediatly his feete and ankle bones receiued strength. **8** And he leaped vp, stood, and walked, & entred with them into the Temple, walking and leaping, and praising God. **9** And all the people saw him walke, and praising God. **10** And they knewe him, that it was he which sate for the almes at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were amased, and sore astonied at that, which was come vnto him. **11** And as the creeple which was healed, held Peter and Iohn, all the people ran amased vnto them in the porch which is called Solomons. **12** So when Peter saue it, he answered vnto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marueile ye at this? or why looke yee so stedfastly on vs, as though

### C H A P III.

though by our owne power or godlinesse we  
 had made this man goe? 13 The God of Abra- *Chap*  
 ham, and Isaac, and Iacob, the \* God of our fa- 5.30  
 thers hath glorified his Sonne Iesus, whom ye be-  
 trayed, & denied in the presence of Pilate, when  
 hee had iudged him to be deliuered. 14 But ye  
 denied the Holy one and the Iust, and desired a  
 murderer to be giuen you 15 And killed the  
 Lord of life, whom God hath raised from the  
 dead, whereof wee are witnesses. 16 And his  
 Name hath made this man sound, whom ye see,  
 and knowe, through faith in his Name: and the  
 sickness, which is by him, hath giuen to him this per-  
 fect health of his whole body in the presence of  
 you all. 17 And nowe brethren, I know that  
 through ignorance ye did it, as *did* also your go-  
 uernours. 18 But those things which God be-  
 fore had shewed by the mouth of all his Pro-  
 phets, that Christ should suffer, he hath thus ful-  
 filled. 19 Amend your liues therefore, and turne,  
 that your sinnes may bee put away, when the  
 time of refreshing shall come from the presence  
 of the Lord. 20 And he shall send Iesus Christ,  
 which before was preached vnto you. 21 *W*hich  
 the heauen must containe, vntill the time that all  
 things bee restored which God hath spoken by  
 the mouth of all his holy Prophets since the  
 world began. 22 \*For Moses said vnto the Fa- *Chap*  
 thers, The Lord your God shall raise vp vnto 7.37  
 you a Prophet, *even* of your brethren like vnto *mo*  
 zee: ye shall heare him in all things whatsoever he *8.1*

## THE ACTES.

shall say vnto you. 23 For it shall be, that euery  
 person which shall not heare that Prophet, shall  
 be destroyed out of the people. 24 Also al the  
 Prophets from Samuall, and thenceforth as ma-  
 ny as haue spoken haue likewise foretolde of  
 these dayes. 25 Ye are the children of the Pro-  
 phets, and of the couenant which God hath made  
*Gene.* vnto our fathers, saying to Abraham, \* Euen in  
 12.3. thy seede shall all the kinreds of the earth bee  
 24.14. blessed 26 Iust vnto you hath God raised vp  
 3.8. his Sonne Iesus, & him he hath sent to blesse you,  
 in turning euery one of you fro your iniquities.

### CHAP. 4 *Peter and Iohn brought before the Court.*

**A**Nd as they spake vnto y<sup>e</sup> people, the Priests  
 and the captaine of the Temple, & the Sad-  
 duces came vnto them, 2 Taking it grienously  
 that they taught the people, and preached in Ie-  
 sus Name the resurrection from the dead. 3 And  
 they laid hands on them, and put them in holde,  
 untill the next day: for it was now euentide.  
 4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the  
 word, beleued, and the number of the men was  
 about fise thousand. 5 And it came to passe on  
 the morowe, that their rulers, and Elders, and  
 Scribes, were gathered together at Hierusalem,  
 6 And Annas the chiefe Priest, & Caiaphas, and  
 Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the  
 kindred of the high Priests. 7 And when they had  
 set them before them, they asked, by what pow-  
 er, or in what Name haue ye done this. 8 Then  
 Peter

## C H A P. I I I I.

Peter full of the holy Ghost, said vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, & Elders of Israel, 9 I or as much as we this day are examined of v good dedde *done* to the impotent man, 10 not by what meanes he is made whole, 10 Be it knowen vnto you ail, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of I E S V S C H R I S T of Nazareth whom ye haue crucified, whom God raised againe from the dead, *now* by him doeth this man stand here before you whole. 11 \* This is *T. 11.* the stone cast aside of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. 12 Neither is there falsacion in any other: for among men there is giuen none other Name vnder heauen, whereby we must be saued. 13 Now when they sawe the boldnesse of Peter and Iohn, and vnderstood that they were vnlearned men and without knowledge, they marueiled and knew them, that they had bene with Iesus: 14 And beholding also the man which was healed standing with them, they had nothing to say against it. 15 Then they commanded them to go aside out of the Councill, & conferred among themselves, 16 Saying, What shall we doe to these men? for surely a manifest signe is done by them, and it is openly knowen to all them that dwel in Hierusalem: and we can not denie it. 17 But that it be noysed no farther among the people, let vs threaten and charge them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name. 18 So they called them, and commanded them, that in no wise they should speake or teach



## T H E   A C T E S.

teach in the Name of Iesus. 19 But Peter and  
 Iohn answered vnto them, and said, Whether it  
 be right in the sight of God, to obey you ra-  
 ther then God, iudge ye. 20 For we cannot but  
 speake <sup>vnto</sup> things which we haue seene & heard.  
 21 So they threatned them, and let them goe,  
 and found nothing howe to punish them, be-  
 cause of the people: for all men praised God for  
 that which was done. 22 For the man was about  
 fourtie yeeres old, on whom this miracle of hea-  
 ling was shewed. 23 Then as soon as they were  
 let goe, they came to their fellowes, and shewed  
 all that the hie Priestes and Elders had said vnto  
 them. 24 And when they heard it, they lift vp  
 their voyces to God with one accord, and said,  
 O Lord, thou art the God which hast made the  
 heauen and the earth, the sea, and all things that  
 are in them, 25 Which by the mouth of thy ser-  
 uant Dauid hast said, <sup>Why</sup> did <sup>thou</sup> Gentiles rage,  
 and the people imagine vaine things? 26 The  
 kings of the earth assembled, and the rulers came  
 together against the Lord, and against his Christ.  
 27 For doubtlesse, against thine holy Sonne Ie-  
 sus, whom thou haddest anoynted, both Herod  
 and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the  
 people of Israel gathered themselues together  
 28 To doe whatsoeuer thine hand, and thy coun-  
 sell had determined before to be doue. 29 And  
 now, O Lord, behold their threatnings, and gra-  
 vnto thy seruants with all boldnesse to speake  
 thy word, 30 So that thou stretch forth thine

*Psal.*  
 2.1.

## C H A P. V.

hand, that healing, and signes and wonders may be done by the name of thine holy Sonne Iesus.

31 And when as they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the worde of God boldly. 32 And the multitude of them that beleened, were of one heart, and of one soule: neither any of them said, that any thing of that which he possessed, was his owne, but they had all things *com-* Chap. mon. 33 And w<sup>th</sup> great power gaue the Apostles 2.44. w<sup>th</sup>nes of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus: and great grace was vpon them all. 34 Neither was there any among them, that lacked: for as many as were possessours of landes or houses, solde them, and brought the price of the things that were solde, 35 And laide it downe at the Apostles feete, and it was distributed vnto euery man according as he had neede. 36 Also Ioses, which was called of the Apostles Parnabas, (that is by interpretation, the sonne of consolation) being a Leuite, and of the countrey of Cyprus. 37 Whereas he had land, solde it, and brought the money, and laide it downe at the Apostles feete.

### C H A P. 5.    1 Ananias and Sapphira.

**B**Ut a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, solde a possession, 2 And kept away part of the price, his wife also being of counsel, & brought a certaine part, and laide it downe at the Apostles feete. 3 Then said Peter, Ananias,

## THE ACTES.

Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, that thou shouldst lie vnto the holy Ghost, & keepe away part of the price of this possession? 4 Whiles it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power? how is it that thou hast conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God. 5 Now when Ananias heard these words, he fell downe, & gaue vp the ghost. Then great feare came on all them that heard these things. 6 And the yong men rose vp, and tooke him vp, & caried him out, and buried him. 7 And it came to passe about the space of thre houres after, y his wife came in ignorant of that which was done. 8 And Peter said vnto her, Tell me, tolde ye the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much. 9 Then Peter said vnto her, Why haue ye agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold the feete of them which haue buried thine husband are at the doore, and shal cary thee out. 10 Then she fel downe straightway at his feete, & yeelded vp the ghost: and the yong men came in and found her dead, & caried her out, and buried her by her husband. 11 And great feare came on all the Church, & on as many as heard these things. 12 Thus by the hands of the Apostles were many signes & wonders shewed among the people (and they were all w one accord in Solomons porch. 13 And of the other dur't no man ioyne himselfe to the: neuertheless the people magnied them. 14 Also the number

## C H A P. V.

of them that beleueed in the Lord, both of men and women, grew more & more. 15 In so much that they brought the sicke into the streetes, and layd them on beds and couches, that at the least way the shadow of Peter, whē he came by, might shadow some of them. 16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, & them which were vexed with vncleane spirits, who were all healed. 17 Then the chiefe Priest rose vp, & all they that were with him, which was the sect of the Sadducees, and were full of indignation, 18 And layd hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison. 19 But the Angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, & said, 20 Go your way, & stand in the Temple, & speake to the people all the words of this life. 21 So whē they heard it, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, & taught. And the chiefe Priest came, and they that were with him, & called the Council together, and all the Elders of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison, to cause them to be brought. 22 But when the officers came, & found them not in the prison they returned and tolde it, 23 Saying, Certainly we found the prison shut as sure as was possible, and the keepers standing without, before the doores: but when we had opened, we found no man within. 24 Then when the chiefe Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the chiefe Priests heard these things, they doubted of them,

## THE ACTES.

them, whercunto this would growe. 25 Then came one and shewed them, saying, Behold, the men that yee put in prison are standing in the Temple, and teach the people. 26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violēce (for they feared the people, lest they should haue bin stoned) 27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Council, & the chiefe Priest asked them, 28 Saying, Did not we straitly commaund you, that ye should not teach in this Name? and beholde ye haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and yee would bring this mans blood vpon vs. 29 Then Peter & the Apostles answered, & said, We ought rather to obey God thē men. 30 The \* God of our fathers hath raised vp Iesus, whom ye slew, and hanged on a tree. 31 Him hath God lift vp with his right hand, to be a Prince and a Sauour, to giue repentance to Israel, & forgiveness of sinnes. 32 And we are his witnesses concerning these things which we say: yea, and the holy Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him. 33 Now when they heard it, they brast for anger, and consulted to slay them. 34 Then stood there vp in the Council a certaine Pharise named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Law, honoured of all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a litle space. 35 And saide vnto them, Men of Israel, take heede to your selues, what ye intend to do touching these mē. 36 For before these times rose vp Theudas boasting himselfe,

*Chap.*  
*3. 13.*

## C H A P. VI.

himselfe, to whom resorted a number of men, about a foure hundreth, who was slaine: and they all which obeyed him, were scattered, & brought to nought. 37 After this man, rose vp Iudas of Galilee, in the dayes of the tribute, & drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all that obeyed him were scattered abroad. 38 And now I say vnto you, Refraine your selues from these men, & let them alone: for if this counsell, or this worke be of men, it wil come to nought: 39 But if it be of God, ye cannot destroy it, lest ye be found euen fighters against God. 40 And to him they agreed, and called the Apostles: and when they had beaten them, they commaunded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them go. 41 So they departed from the Council, reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer rebuke for his Name. 42 And daily in the Temple, and from house to house they ceased not to teach, and preach Iesus Christ.

### C H A P. 6. 3 Deacons appointed in the Church.

**A**ND in those dayes as the number of the disciples grew, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians towards the Hebrewes because their widows were neglected in the daily ministring. 2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, and said, It is not meete that we should leaue the word of God to serue the tables: Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you seven men of honest report, and full of

Gf

## THE ACTES.

*Chap.*  
*21.8.*

of the holy Ghost, and of wisdom, which wee may appoint to this businesse. 4 And wee will giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministratiō of the word. 5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude, and they chose Steuen a man full of faith, & of the holy Ghost, & Philip & Prochorus, & Nicanor, & Timon, and Parmenas and Nicholas a Proselyte of Antiochia, 6 Which they set before the Apostles: and they prayed, & layd their handes on them. 7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples was multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great company of the Priests were obedient to the faith. 8 Now Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people. 9 Then there arose certaine of the Synagogae, which are called Libertines & Cyrenians and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, and disputed with Steuen. 10 But they were not able to resist the wisdom and the Spirit by the which he spake. 11 Then they suborned men, which sayd, Wee haue heard him speake blasphemous wordes against Moses, and God. 12 Thus they moued the people and the Elders, and the Scribes: and running vpon him, caught him, and brought him to the Councill, 13 And set forth false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous wordes against this holy place, and the Law. 14 For we haue heard him say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ordi-  
nances

## C H A P. VII.

distances which Moses gaue vs. 15 And as all that sate in the Councill, looked stedfastly on him, they sawe his face as it had bene the face of an Angel.

### C H A P. 7. 1 Steuens martyrdome.

**T**hen said the chief Priest, Are these things so? 2 And he said, Ye men Brethren and fathers, hearken \* That God of glory appeared vnto *Gene.*  
our father Abraham, while he was in Mesopota *13. 40*  
mia, before he dwelt in Charran, 3 And sayde  
vnto him, Come out of thy countrey and from  
thy kindred, and come into the land which I shal  
shew thee. 4 Then came he out of the land of  
the Caldeans and dwelt in Charran. And after  
that his father was dead, Coa brought him from  
thence into this land, wherein yee now dwell,  
5 And hee gaue him none inheritance in it. no  
not the breadth of a foote: yet he promised that  
he would giue it to him for a possession, and to  
his seede after him, when as yet he had no child.  
6 But God spake thus, that his \* seed should be *Gen.*  
a sojourner in a strange land, & that they should *15. 13*  
keepe it in bondage, and intreate it euill foure  
hundredth yeeres. 7 But the nation to whom *Gen.*  
they shall be in bondage, will I iudge saith God: *17. 9.*  
and after that, they shall come forth, and serue *Gene.*  
me in this place. 8 \* He gaue him also the co- *21. 30*  
nant of circumcision and so *Gene.*  
\* Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: and *25. 24*  
Isaac begat \* Jacob, and Jacob the twelue \* Patri- *Gene.*  
arches, 9 And the Patriarches moued with more *29. 33*



# THE ACTES.

**Gene.** sold \* Ioseph into Egypt, but God was w<sup>th</sup> him,  
**37.28** 10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions,  
**Gene.** and \* gaue him fauour and wisdom in the sight  
**41.37.** of Pharaos king of Egypt, who made him gouer-  
 nour ouer Egypt, and ouer his whole house.  
 11 Then came there a famine ouer al the land of  
 Egypt and Canaan, & great affliction, that our  
**Gene.** fathers found no sustenance. 12 But when \*  
**42. 1.** Iacob heard that there was coine in Egypt, he sent  
**Gene.** our fathers first: 13 \* And at the second time, Ioseph  
**45.4.** was knowen of his brethren, & Iosephs kin-  
 red was made known vnto Pharaos. 14 Then  
 sent Ioseph & caused his father to be brought,  
 and all his kinred, euen threescore and fiftene  
**Gene.** soules. 15 \* So Iacob went downe into Egypt,  
**46. 5** and he \* died, & our fathers. 16 And were remo-  
**Gene.** ued into Sichem, and were put in the sepulchre,  
**49.33** that Abraham had bought \* for money of the  
**Gene.** sonnes of Emor, king of Sichem. 17 But when  
**23.16.** the time of the promise drew neere, which God  
**Exod.** had sworne to Abraham, the people \* grew and  
**2.7.** multiplied in Egypt, 18 Till another king arose,  
 which knew not Ioseph, 19 The same delt sub-  
 tilly with our kinred, and enl intreated our fa-  
 thers, and mad them to cast out their yong chil-  
**Exod.** dren, that they should not remaine alieue. 20 \* The  
**2.2.** same time was Moses borne, and was acceptable  
 vnto God, which was nourished y<sup>e</sup> in his fathers  
 house three moneths. 21 And when he was cast  
 out Pharaos daughter took him vp, and nour-  
 shed him for her owne sonne. 22 And Moses was

## C H A P. VII.

learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians and was mighty in words & in deeds 23 Now when hee was full fourtie yeere olde it came into his heart to visit his brethren the childrē of Israel.

24 \* And when he saw one of *them* suffer wrong, *Exod.*  
he defended him, & auenged his quarrel that had 2.11.  
the harme done to him, and smote the Egyptian.

25 For he supposed his brethrē would haue vnderstood that God by his hand should giue the deliuerance. but they vnderstood it not. 26 \* And *Exod.*

the next day, he shewed himselfe vnto them as 2.15.  
they stroue, and would haue set them at one a-

gaine, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren: why doe ye wrong one to another? 27 But he that did his

neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a prince, & a iudge ouer vs? 28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didst the Egyptian yester-

day? 29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sonnes 30 And when fourtie yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the \* wilder-

nes of mount Sion, an Angel of <sup>e</sup> Lord in a flame *Exod.*  
of fire, in a bush. 31 And when Moses saw it, he 3.2.  
wondred at the sight: and as he drew neere to

consider it, the voice of the Lord came vnto him,

32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, & durst not be-

hold it 33 Then the Lord said to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground. 34 I haue scene, I haue

## THE ACTES.

scene the affliction of my people, which is in E-  
 gypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am  
 come down to deliuer them: and now come, and  
 I wil send thee into Egypt. 35 This Moyses wh<sup>o</sup>  
 they forsooke, saying, Who made thee a prince  
 and a iudge? the same God sent for a ptince and  
 a deliuerer by the hand of the Angel, which ap-  
 xod. peared to him in the bush. 36 \* He brought them  
 8, 9, out, doing wonders, and miracles in the land of  
 11, Egypt, and in the red sea, and in the wildernesse  
 12, \* fourtie yeres. 37 This is that Moyses, which said  
 14, vnto the children of Israel, A \* Prophet shal the  
 xod. Lord God raise vp vnto you, *euen* of your bre-  
 16, thren, like vnto me: him shal ye heare. 38 \* This  
 hap. is he that was in the Congregation, in the wil-  
 . 22 dernesse with the Angel, which spake to him in  
 xod. mount S na, and with our fathers, who receiued  
 23, the liuely oracles to giue vnto vs. 39 To whom  
 our Fathers would not obey, but refused, and  
 in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt:  
 xod. 4. Saying vnto Aaron, \* Make vs gods that  
 2. 1. may go before vs: for we know not what is be-  
 come of this Moyses: he brought vs out of the land  
 of Egypt. 40 And they made a calfe in those  
 dayes, & offered sacrifice vnto the idole, & reioy-  
 ced in the works of their owne hands. 42 Then  
 God turned himselfe away, and gaue them vp to  
 serue the hoste of heauen, as it is written in the  
 4. booke of the Prophets \* O house of Israel, haue  
 nos 5. ye offered to mee flaine beastes and sacrifices by  
 5. the space of fourtie yeres in the wildernes-  
43 And

# C H A P. VII:

43 And ye tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch,  
and the starre of your God Remphan, figures  
which ye made to worship them: therefore I will  
cary you away beyond Babylon. 44 Our fathers  
had the tabernacle of witnesse in the wilernes,  
as he had appointed, speaking vnto \* Moses, that *Exo*  
he should make it according to *25.4* fashion that  
he had seene. 45 \* Which tabernacle also our *Iosh*  
fathers receiued, and brought in with Iesus into *3.14*  
the possession of the Gentiles which God draue  
out before our fathers, vnto the dayes of David:  
46 \* Who found fauour before God, & desired *2.Sa*  
that he might finde a tabernacle for the God of *7.2.*  
Iacob 47 \* But Solomon built him an house *1.Ch*  
48 Howbeit the most High \* dwelleth not in *17.1*  
Temples made with hands, as saith the Prophet, (*Isa*)  
49 \* Heauen is my throne, and earth is my foot *17.2*  
stool: what house wil ye build for me, saith the *Isay*  
Lorde? or what place is it that I should rest in? *66.*  
50 Hath not mine hand made all these things? *Iere.*  
51 \* Ye stifnecked and of vncircumcised hearts *9.26*  
& eares, ye haue alwayes resisted the holy ghost: *12ek*  
as your fathers did, so do you. 52 Which of the *44.1*  
Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted: and  
they haue slaine them, which shewed before of  
the comming of that Iust, of whom ye are nowe  
the betrayers and murderers, 53 \* Which haue *Exo*  
receiued the Law by the ordinance of Angels & *15.1*  
haue not kept it 54 But when they heard these *gala*  
things, their heartes braist for anger, and they *3.14*  
gnashed at him with their teeth. 55 But hee be-

## T H E A C T E S.

ing full of the holy Ghost, looked stedfastly into heauen, and sawe the glory of God, and Iesus standing at the right hand of God, 56 And sayde, beholde, I see the heauens open, and the Sonne of man standing at the right hand of God. 57 Then they gaue a shoute with a loud voyce, and stopped their eares, and ranne vpon him violently all at once, 58 And caft him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses laide downe their clothes at a yong mans feete, named Saul. 59 And they stoned Steuen, who called on God, and sayde, Lord Iesus, receiue my spirit. 60 And he kneeled downe, and cryed with a loud voyce, Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And when he had thus spoken, he slept.

CHAP. 8. 3 *Saul a persecutour. 9 Si-*  
*mon Magus.*

**A**ND Saul consented to his death: and at that time, there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Hierusalem, and they were all scattered abroad through the regions of Iudea & Samaria except the Apostles. 2 Then certaine men fearing God, caried Steuen among them, to bee buried, and made great lamentation for him. 3 But Saul made hauecke of the Church, and entred into euery house, and drew out both men & women, and put them into prison. 4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went to and fro preaching the word. 5 Then came Philip into the citie of Samaria, & preached

## C H A P. VIII.

preached Christ vnto them. 6 And the people  
gave heede vnto those things which Philip  
spake, with one accord, hearing and seeing the  
miracles which he did. 7 For vncleane spirits  
crying with a loud voyce came out of many that  
were possessed of them: and many taken with  
palsies, and that halted, were healed. 8 And there  
was great ioy in that citie. 9 And there was be-  
fore in the citie a certaine man called Simon,  
which vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the peo-  
ple of Samaria, saying that he himselfe was some  
great man. 10 To whom they gave heede from  
the least to the greatest, saying. This man is that  
great power of God. 11 And they gave heede  
vnto him, because that of long time he had be-  
witched them with sorceries. 12 But as soone as  
they beleued Philip, which preached the things  
that concerned the kingdome of God, and the  
Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized both  
men and women. 13 Then Simon himselfe bele-  
ued also, and was baptized, and continued with  
Philip, and wondred, when he saw the signes and  
great miracles which were done. 14 Now when  
the Apostles, which were at Hierusalem, heard  
say, that Samaria had receiued the word of God,  
they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn. 15 Which  
when they were come downe, prayed for them,  
that they might receiue the holy Ghost. 16 (For  
as yet, he was fallen downe on none of them,  
but they were baptized onely in the Name of  
the Lord Iesus.) 17 Then laid they their hands

## THE ACTES.

on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.  
 18 And when Simon sawe, that through laying  
 on of the Apostles hands the holy Ghost was gi-  
 uen, he offered them money, 19 Saying. Giue  
 me also this power, that on whomsoeuer I lay  
 the handes, hee may receiue the holy Ghost.  
 20 Then said Peter vnto him, Thy money perish  
 with thee, because thou thinkest that the gift of  
 God may be obtained with money. 21 Thou  
 hast neither part nor fellowship in this businesse:  
 for thine heart is not right in the sight of God.  
 22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse,  
 and pray God, that if it be possible, the thought  
 of thine heart may be forgiven thee. 23 For I  
 see that thou art in the gall of bitternesse and in  
 the bond of iniquitie. 24 Then answered Si-  
 mon and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that  
 none of these things which yee haue spoken,  
 come vpon me. 25 So they, when they had tes-  
 tified, & preached the word of the Lord, return-  
 ed to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospel in  
 many townes of the Samaritanes. 26 Then the  
 Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying. Ar-  
 ise, and go toward the South vnto the way that  
 goeth downe frō Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which  
 is waste. 27 And he arose and went on, and he  
 holde a certaine Eunuch of Ethiopia, Candace  
 the Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe gouernour,  
 who had the rule of all her treasure, and came to  
 Hierusalem to worship: 28 And as he returned  
 sitting in his charret, he read Esaias the Prophet.  
 29 Then

## C H A P VIII.

29 Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Go nere & ioyne thy selfe to yonder charet. 30 And Philip ran thither, and heard him reade the Prophet Eneas, and said, But vnderstandest thou what thou readest? 31 And he said, How can I, except I had a guide? And hee desired Philip, that hee would come vp and sit with him. 32 Now the place of the Scripture which he read was this, \* He was led as a sheepe to the slaughter: & like a lambe dumbe before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth. 33 In his humility his iudgement hath bene exalted: but who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth. 34 Then the Eunuch answered Philip and said, I pray thee of whom speaketh the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man? 35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture and preached vnto him Iesus. 36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water, & the Eunuch said, See here is water: what doth let me to be baptized? 37 And Philip said vnto him, If thou beleuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. Then he answered and said, I beleene that Iesus Christ is that Sonne of God. 38 Then he commanded the charet to stand still: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and hee baptized him. 39 And as soone as they were come vp out of the water, the spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more: so hee went on his way reioycing. 40 But Philip was found

*I sai.*

53. 7.



# THE ACTES.

at Azotus, and he walked to and fro preaching in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

## CHAP. 9. 4 Saul converted.

*Rom.* **A**ND \*Saul yet breathing out threatenings and  
*9.3.* slaughter against the disciples of the Lord,  
*galat.* went vnto the hie Priest, 2 And desired of him  
*1.13.* letters to Damascus to the Synagogues. that if  
 he found any that were of that way (either men  
 or women) hee might bring them bound vnto  
 Hierusalem. 3 Nowe as he journeyed, it came  
 to passe that as he was come neere to Damascus,  
*Chap.* \*suddenly there shined round about him a light  
*22.6.* from heauen. 4 And he fell to the earth, and  
*1. cor.* heard a voice, saying to him. Saul, Saul, why per-  
*25.8.* secutest thou me? 5 And he said, Who art thou,  
 Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou  
 persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against  
 pricks. 6 He then both trembling and astonished,  
 said, Lord, what wilt thou that I doe? And the  
 Lord said vnto him, Arise. and goe into the citie  
 and it shall bee tolde thee what thou shalt doe.  
 7 The men also which journeyed with him  
 stood amazed, hearing his voyce, but seeing no  
 man. 8 And Saul arose from the ground, and  
 opened his eyes, but saw no man. Then led they  
 him by the hand, & brought him into Damascus.  
 9 Where he was three dayes without sight, and  
 neither ate nor dranke. 10 And there was a cer-  
 taine disciple at Damascus named Ananias. And  
 to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And  
 he said, Behold, I am here, Lord. 11 Then the Lo-

## C H A P. IX.

said vnto him, Arise, & goe into the streete which  
is called Straight, & seeke in the house of Iudas  
after one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he  
prayeth. 12 ( And he saw in a vision a man na-  
me: Ananias comming in to him, & putting his  
hands on him, that he might receiue his sight) 13  
Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard  
by many of this man, how much euill he hath  
done to thy Saints at Hierusalem. 14 Moreouer,  
here he hath authority of the hie Priests, to bind  
all that call on thy Name. 15 Then the Lorde  
said vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is a chosen  
vessell vnto mee, to beare my Name before the  
Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel.  
16 For I will shew him, how many things hee  
must suffer for my Names sake. 17 Then Ana-  
nias went his way, & entred into that house, and  
put his hands on him, and said, Brother Saul, the  
Lord hath sent me (as I am Iesus that appeared vnto  
thee in the way as thou camest, that thou might-  
est receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy  
Ghoſt. 18 And immediatly there fell from his  
eyes, as it had ten scales, & suddenly he receiued  
sight, & arose, and was baptized, 19 And recei-  
ued meate, and was strengthened. So was Saul  
certaine dayes with the disciples which were at  
Damascus. 20 And straightway he preached  
Christ in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne  
of God, 21 So all that heard him, were amazed,  
& said, Is not this he, that made hauocke of them  
(which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and  
came

## THE ACTES.

came hither for that intent, that he should bring them bound vnto the hie Priests? 22 But Saul encreased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes wh ch dwelt at Damascus, confirming, that this was that Christ. 23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled the Iewes tooke coucell together, to kill him. 24 But their laying awaite  
 11. for. was knowne of Saul: now they \* watched the  
 11.32. gates day and night, that they might kill him. 25 Then the disciples tooke him by night and put him thorow the wall, and let him downe by a rope in a basket. 26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, he assayed to ioyne himselfe with the disciples but they were al afraid of him and beleueed not that hee was a disciple. 27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, & declared to them how he had seene the Lord in the way, & that he had spoken vnto him, and how he had spoken boldly at Damascus in the Name of Iesus. 28 And he was conuersant with them at Hierusalem, 29 And spake boldly in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and spake and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him. 30 But when the brethren knew it, they brought him to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus. 31 Then had the Churches rest through all Iudea, and Galile, and Samaria, and were edified and walked in the feare of the Lord, & were multiplied by the comfort of the holy Ghost. 32 And it came to passe, as Peter walked thorowout all quarters, he came also to

## C H A P. IX.

the Saints which dwelt at Lydda. 33 And there he found a certaine man, named Aeneas, which had kept his couch eight yeeres, and was sicke of the palseie. 24 Then said Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Chriit maketh thee whole: arise and trasse thy couch together. And he arose immediately. 35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord. 36 There was also at Ioppa a certaine woman, a disciple named Tabitha (which by interpretation is called Dorcas) she was full of good workes and almes which she did. 37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she was sicke and died: and when they had washed her, they layd her in an upper chamber. 38 Now forasmuch as Lydda was neere to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men desiring that hee would not delay to come vnto them. 39 Then Peter arose & came with them: and when hee was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber, where all the widowes stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats & garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them. 40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled downe, and prayed, and turned him to the body, and sayd, Tabitha, arise. And shee opened her eyes, and when shee saw Peter, sate vp. 41 Then he gaue her the hand and lift her vp, and called the Saints, and widowes, & restored her aliue. 42 And it was knowne thorowout all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And

## THE ACTES.

43 And it came to passe that hee taried many dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a Tanner.

CHAP. 10. 1 *Cornelius the captaine sendeth for Peter: 47 He is baptized.*

**F**urthermore there was a certaine man in Cesarea called Cornelius, a captaine of the band called the Italian band, 2 A deuout man, & one that feared God with all his householde, which gaue much almes to the people, & prayed to God continually. 3 He saw in a vision evidently (about the ninth houre of the day) an Angell of God comming in to him, & saying vnto him Cornelius. 4 But when he looked on him, he was afraid, & said, What is it, Lord. And he sayd vnto him, Thy prayers & thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God. 5 Now therefore send men to Ioppa, & call for Simon, whose surname is Peter. 6 He lodgeth w<sup>th</sup> one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do. 7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his seruants and a soldier that feared God, one of the that waited on him, 8 And told them all things, and sent them to Ioppa. 9 On the morrow as they went on their journey, & drew neere vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about the sixth houre. 10 Then waxed he an hungred, & would haue eaten: but while they made iust preparation ready, he fell into a trance. 11 And he saw heauen opened, and a certaine vessel come down

## C H A P. X.

unto him, as it had bene a great sheete, knit at the  
four corners, and was let downe to the earth:  
12 Wherein were all maner of foure footed  
beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, & creeping  
things, & soules of the heauen. 13 And there came  
a voice to him, Arise, Peter. kill and cate. 14 But  
Peter said, Not so, Lord: for I haue neuer eaten  
any thing that is polluted, or vncleane. 15 And  
the voice spake vnto him againe the second time,  
The things that God hath purified, pollute thou  
not. 16 This was so done thrise: and the vessel  
was drawen vp againe into heauen. 17 Now  
while Peter doubted in himselfe what this visi-  
on which he had scene meant, behold, the men  
which were sent from Cornelius, had enquired  
for Simons house, & stood at the gate, 18 And  
called and asked, whether Simon, which was sur-  
named Peter were lodged there. 19 And while  
Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said vnto  
him, Behold, three men seeke thee. 20 Arise ther-  
fore, and get thee downe, and go with them, and  
doubt nothing: for I haue sent them. 21 Then  
Peter went downe to the men, which were sent  
vnto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am  
he whom ye seeke: what is the cause wherefore  
ye are come? 22 And they said, Cornelius the  
captaine a iust man, and one that feareth God,  
and of good report among all the nation of the  
Jewes, was warned from heauen by an holy  
Angel, to send for thee into his house, & to heare  
thy words. 23 Then he called them in, and lod-  
ged

## THE ACTES.

ged them, and the next day Peter went forth with them, & certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him. 24 And the day after they entered into Cesarea. Now Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen, and speciall friends. 25 And it came to passe, as Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, & fell down at his feet, and worshipped him. 26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp: for euen I my selfe am a man. 27 And as he talked with him, he came in & found many that were come together. 28 And he said vnto them, Ye know that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Jew, to company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed mee, that I should not call any man polluted, or vncleane. 29 Therefore came I vnto you without saying nay, when I was sent for. I aske therefore, for what intent haue ye sent for me? 30 Then Cornelius sayd, Foure dayes agoe, about this houre I fasted, and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine house: and beholde, a man stood before me in bright clothing, 31 And saide, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God. 32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon whose surname is Peter: (he is lodged in y<sup>e</sup> house of Simon a tanner by the sea side) who when he commeth, shall speake vnto thee. 33 Then sent I for thee immediately, and thou hast well done to come. Now therefore are wee all here present before God, to  
heare

# C H A P. IX.

heare all things that are commaunded thee of  
 God. 34 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, & said,  
 Of a trueth I perceiue, that \* God is no acceptor *Deut.*  
 of persons. 35 But in euery nation he that feareth *10. 17.*  
 him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted *2. chr.*  
 with him. 36 Ye know the worde which God *19. 7.*  
 hath sent to the children of Israel, preaching *106. 34*  
 peace by Iesus Christ, which is Lorde of all: *19.*  
 37 *Euen* the word which came through all *10. 22.*  
 Iudea, \* beginning in Galile after the baptisme *2. 11.*  
 which Iohn preached, 38 *To wit,* howe God *gal. 2.*  
 anoynted Iesus of Nazareth with y<sup>e</sup> holy Ghost, *6. eph.*  
 and with power: who went about doing good, *6. 9.*  
 and healing al that were oppressed of the deuill: *col. 3.*  
 for God was with him 39 And we are witneses *25.*  
 of all things which hee did both in the land of *1. per.*  
 the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whome they slew, *1. 17.*  
 hanging him on a tree. 40 Him God raised vp *Luke*  
 the third day, and caused that hee was shewed *4. 14.*  
 openly: 41 Not to al y<sup>e</sup> people, but vnto the wit-  
 nesles chosen before of God, *euen* to vs which  
 did eate and drinke with him, after he rose from  
 the dead. 42 And he commaunded vs to preach  
 vnto the people, & to testifie, that it is he that is  
 ordeined of God a iudge of quicke and dead.  
 43 To him also giue all the \* Prophets witnesse, *Chap.*  
 that through his Name all that belecue in him, *15. 9.*  
 shal receiue remission of sinnes. 44 While Pe- *iere.*  
 ter yet spake these wordes, the holy Ghost fell *31. 34.*  
 on all them which heard the word. 45 So they *miche*  
 of the circumcision which beleued were asto- *7. 1. &*



## THE ACTES.

nied, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost. 46 For they heard them speake with tongues & magnifie God. Then answered Peter. 47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which haue receiued y<sup>e</sup> holy Ghost, as wel as we? 48 So he commanded them to bee baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tary certayne dayes.

CHAP. 11. 24. *Disciples first called Christians.*

**N**OW y<sup>e</sup> Apostles & the brethren that were in Iudea, heard, y<sup>e</sup> the Gentiles had also receiued the word of God. 2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the circumcision contended against him, 3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and hast eaten with them. 4 Then Peter began, and expounded the thing in order to them, saying, 5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I sawe *u*ision, A certaine vessel coming downe, as it had bene a great sheete let downe from heauen by the foure corners, & it came to me. 6 Toward the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, & saw foure footed beastes of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the heauē. 7 Also I heard a voyce saying vnto me, Arise, Peter: slay & eate. 8 And I said, God forbid, Lord: for nothing polluted or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth. 9 But the voyce answered me the second time from heauen, The things that God hath purified, pol-

lute

## C H A P. XI.

lute thou not. 10 And this was done three times,  
 and all were taken vp againe into heauen.  
 11 Then beholde, immediatly there were three  
 men already come vnto the house, where I was,  
 sent from Cesarea vnto me. 12 And the Spirite  
 said vnto me, that I should goe with them, with-  
 out doubting: moreouer these sixe brethre came  
 with mee, and wee entred into the mans house.  
 13 And he shewed vs, how he had seene an An-  
 gel in his house which stood & said to him, Send  
 men to Ioppa, & call for Simon, whose surname  
 is Peter. 14 He shall speake words vnto thee,  
 whereby both thou & all thine house shalbe sa-  
 ued. 15 And as I began to speake, y<sup>e</sup> holy Ghost  
 fell on them, \* euen as vpon vs at the beginning.  
 16 Then I remembred the worde of the Lord,  
 how he said, \* Iohn Baptized with water: but ye  
 shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost. 17 Foras-  
 much then as God gaue them a like gift, as hee  
 did vnto vs, whē we beleueed in the Lord Iesus  
 Christ, who was I, that I could let God? 18 Whē  
 they heard these things, they held their peace,  
 and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also  
 to the Gentiles graunted repentance vnto life.  
 19 And they which \* were scattered abroad be-  
 cause of the affliction that arose about Steuen,  
 went throughout till they came vnto Phenice,  
 and Cyprus, and Antiochia, preaching the word  
 to no man, but vnto the Iewes onely. 20 Now  
 some of them were men of Cyprus & of Cyrene,  
 which when they were come into Antiochia,

*Chap.*

*2.4.*

*Chap. 3.*

*5 &*

*19.4.*

*Mat. 3.*

*3.11.*

*mark.*

*1.8.*

*lute*

*3.16.*

*Iohn*

*1.36.*

*Chap.*

*8.1.*

## THE ACTES.

Spake vnto the Grecians, and preached the Lord Iesus. 21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, so that a great number beleueed & turned vnto the Lord. 22 Theu tidings of those things came vnto the eares of the Church which was in Hierusalem, and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go vnto Antiochia. 23 Who when he was come and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted all that with purpose of heart they would continue in the Lord. 24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and faith, and much people ioyned themselves vnto the Lord. 25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus to seeke Saul: 26 And when he had found him, he brought him vnto Antiochia: & it came to passe that a whole yeere they were conuersant with the Church, & taught much people, insomuch that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia. 27 In those dayes also came Prophets from Hierusalem vnto Antiochia. 28 And there stood vp one of them named Agabus, & signified by the Spirit, that there should be great famine throughout al the world, which also came to passe vnder Claudius Cesar. 29 The the disciples, euery man according to his habilitie, purposed to send succour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea. 30 Which thing they also did, and sent it to the Elders, by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP.

**N**OW about y<sup>e</sup> time, Herod the king stretch-  
 ed forth his hands to vex certain of the  
 Church. 2 And he killed Iames the brother of  
 Iohn with y<sup>e</sup> sword. 3 And when he sawe that it  
 pleased the Iewes he proceeded further, to take  
 Peter also (then were the dayes of vnteauned  
 bread) 4 And when he had caught him, he put  
 him in prison, & deliuered him to foure quater-  
 nions of souldiers to be kept, intending after y<sup>e</sup>  
 Pascheouer to bring him forth to the people. 5 So  
 Peter was kept in prison, but earnest prayer was  
 made of the Church vnto God for him. 6 And  
 when Herod would haue brought him out vnto  
 the people, y<sup>e</sup> same night slept Peter betweene  
 two souldiers bound w<sup>th</sup> two chaines, & the kee-  
 pers before the doore, kept y<sup>e</sup> prison. 7 \* And *Chap.*  
 behold, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, 5.12  
 and a light shined in y<sup>e</sup> house, & hee smote Peter  
 on y<sup>e</sup> side, & raised him vp, saying, Arise quickly.  
 And his chaines fell off from *his* hands. 8 And  
 the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, & binde  
 on thy sandales, And so he did. Then he said vnto  
 him, Cast thy garment about thee, & follow me.  
 9 So Peter came out and followed him, and  
 knew not that it was true, which was done by  
 the Angel, but thought hee had seene a vision.  
 10 Now when they were past the first & second  
 watch, they came vnto the yron gate y<sup>e</sup> leadeth  
 vnto the citie, which opened to them by it owne  
 accord, & they went out, & passed thorowe one  
 streete, & by and by the Angel departed fro<sup>m</sup> him.

## THE ACTES.

11 And when Peter was come to himselfe, hee  
 said, Nowe I know for a trueth, y<sup>e</sup> the Lord hath  
 sent his Angel, and hath deliuered me out of the  
 hand of Herod, & from al the waiting for of the  
 people of the Iewes. 12 And as he considered  
*the thing*, he came to the house of Mary, the mo-  
 ther of Iohn, whose surname was Marke, where  
 many were gathered together, and prayed,  
 13 And when Peter knocked at the entrie doore,  
 a maid came forth to hearken, named Rhode.  
 14 But when she knew Peters voice, she opened  
 not the entrie *doore* for gladnesse, but ran in, and  
 tolde, how Peter stood before the entrie. 15 But  
 they said vnto her, Thou art mad, Yet she affir-  
 med it constantly that it was so. Then said they,  
 It is his Angel. 16 But Peter continued knocking,  
 and when they had opened it, and saw him, they  
 were astonied. 17 And he beckened vnto them  
 with the hand, to hold their peace, and told them  
 how y<sup>e</sup> Lord had brought him out of the prison.  
 And he said, Goe shew these things vnto Iames  
 and to the brethren: & he departed & went into  
 another place. 18 Now as soone as it was day,  
 there was no final trouble among the souldiers,  
 what was become of Peter. 19 And when He-  
 rod had sought for him, & found him not, he ex-  
 amined the keepers, and commanded them to be  
 led to be punished. And he went downe from  
 Iudea to Cesarea, and *there* abode. 20 Then He-  
 rod was angry with them of Tyrus and Sidon,  
 but they came al with one accord vnto him and  
 perswaded

# C H A P. XIII.

perswaded Blastus the kings chamberlaine, and they desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the Kings *land*. 21 And vpon a day appoynted, Herod arayed him selfe in royall apparell, & sate on the iudgement seate, & made an oration vnto them. 22 And the people gaue a shout, *(a)ing*, The voice of God, and not of man. 23 But immediatly the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gaue not glory vnto God, so *y* he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghost. 24 And the word of God grew, and multiplied. 25 So Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their office & tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

## C H A P. 13 8. *Elymas the sorcerer.*

**T**Here were also in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets & teachers, as Barnabas, & Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahen (which had bin brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul. 2 Now as they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas & Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them. 3 Then fasted they and prayed and laid their hands on them, and let them goe. 4 And they, after they were sent forth of the holy Ghost, came downe vnto Seleucia, & from thence they sailed to Cyprus. 5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to *their* minister. 6 So when they had gone throughout

## THE ACTES.

the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, being a Iewe, named Bar-  
 Iesus, 7 Which was with the Députie Sergius  
 Paulus, a prudent man. He called vnto him Bar-  
 nabas & Saul, and desired to heare the word of  
 God. 8 But Elymas, the sorcerer (for so is his  
 name by interpretation) withstoode them, and  
 sought to turne away the Deputie from the  
 faith. 9 Then Saul (which also is called Paul) be-  
 ing full of the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,  
 10 And said, O full of all subtiltie & al mischief,  
 the childe of the deuill, and enemye of all righte-  
 oulines, wilt thou not ceale to peruerse the straigh-  
 wayes of the Lord? 11 Now therefore, behold,  
 the hand of the Lord is vpon thee, and thou shalt  
 be blind, and not see the sunne for a season. And  
 immediatly there fell on him a mist and a darke-  
 nesse, and he went about, seeking some to leade  
 him by the hand. 12 Then the Deputie when he  
 sawe what was done, beleued, and was astonied  
 at the doctrine of the Lord. 13 Now when Paul  
 and they that were with him, were departed by  
 ship from Paphus, they came to Perga *a cite* of  
 Pamphylia: then Iohn departed from them, and  
 returned to Hierusalem. 14 But when they de-  
 parted from Perga, they came to Antiochia *a*  
*cite* of Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on  
 the Sabbath day, and sate downe. 15 And after  
 the lecture of the Law and Prophets, the rulers  
 of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye  
 men and brethren, if ye haue any word of ex-  
 hortation

# C H A P. XIII.

hortation for the people, say on. 16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckened with the hand, and said, Men of Israel, and ye that feare God, hearken. 17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the land of \* Egypt, and with an \* high arme *Exod.* brought them out thereof 18 And about the time 1.9. \* of fourtie yeeres suffered hee their manners in *Exod.* the wilderness. 19 And he destroyed tenen nations in the land of Chanaan, \* and diuided their *Exod.* land to them by lot. 20 Then afterward he gaue 16. 1. vnto them \* Iudges, about foure hundreth and *Ioshs.* fiftie yeeres, vnto the time of Sammel the Pro- 14. 1. phet. 21 So after that they desired a \* King and *Iudg.* God gaue vnto them \* Saul, the sonne of Cis, a 3.9. man of the tribe of Benjamin by the space of 1. Sam. fourtie yeeres. 22 And after hee had taken him 8. 5. away, he rayfed vp \* Dauid to be their King, of 1. Sam. whom hee witnessed, saying, I haue found Da- 9. 15. uid the sonne of Iesse, a man after mine owne 1. Sam. heart, which will doe all things that I will. 23 Of 16. 13. this mans seede hath \* God according to *his Psal.* promise raised vp to Israel, the Saniour Iesus: 89. 21. 24 When \* Iohn had first preached before his *Mal.* coming the baptisme of repentance to all y<sup>e</sup> peo- 3. 1. ple of Israel. 25 And when Iohn had fulfilled his course, he said, \* Whom ye thinke that I am, I *Mat.* am not he: but beholde, there cometh one after 3. 11. me, whose shoe of *his* feete I am not worthy to loose. 26 Ye men and brethren, children of the generation of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you



## THE ACTES.

you feareth God, to you is the word of this saluation sent. 27 For the inhabitants of Hierusalem, & their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the wordes of the Prophets, which are read euery Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him. 28 And though they found

*Mat.* no cause of death in him, \* yet desired they Pilate  
37.22. to kill him. 29 And when they had fulfilled all

things that were written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and put him in a sepulchre.

*Mat.* 30 But God \* raised him vp frō the dead. 31 And

38.2. he was seene many dayes of them, which came vp with him from Galile to Hierusalem, which are his witnesses vnto the people 32 And we declare vnto you, that touching the promise made vnto the fathers, 33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs their children, in that hee raised vp Iesus, euen

*Psal.* as it is written in the second Psalm, \* Thou

3.7. art my Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee.

34 Nowe as concerning that he raised him vp from the dead, no more to returne to corrup-

*Isai.* tion, he hath said thus, \* I will giue you the holy

55.3. things of Dauid, which are faithfull. 35 Where-

*Chap.* fore he saith also in another place, \* Thou wilt

2.31. not suffer thine holy one to see corruption.

36 Howbeit, Dauid after he had serued his time

*Chap.* by the counsell of God, \* he slept, and was laid

2.39. with his fathers, and saw corruption. 37 But he

whom God raised vp, saue no corruption 38 Be

it knowen vnto you therfore, men and brethren,

that through this man is preached vnto you for-

giuene

giue  
whi  
Mol  
fied  
you  
hold  
for  
whi  
clare  
of th  
song  
the m  
cong  
and  
Bam  
ther  
the n  
tie to  
when  
of en  
were  
rayli  
spak  
word  
to yo  
your  
turne  
comm  
light  
the s  
48 A

## CHAP. XIII.

giuenesse of finnes, 39 And from all things, from  
 which yee could not be iustified by the Law of  
 Moses, by him euery one that beleueneth, is iusti-  
 fied. 40 Beware therefore lest that come vpon  
 you, which is spoken of in the Prophets, 41 *Be- Haba,*  
 hold, ye despisers, and wonder, & vanish away: 1.5.  
 for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke  
 which ye shal not beleue, if a man would de-  
 clare it you. 42 And when they were come out  
 of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles be-  
 sought, that they would preach these wordes to  
 them the next Sabbath day. 43 Now when the  
 congregation was dissolued, many of the Iewes,  
 and Profelytes *y* feared God, folowed Paul and  
 Barnabas, which spake to them, and exhorted  
 them to continue in the grace of God. 44 And  
 the next Sabbath *day* came almost the whole ci-  
 tie together to heare the word of God. 45 But  
 when the Iewes saw the people. they were full  
 of enuie, and spake against those things, which  
 were spoken of Paul, contrarying *them*, and  
 rayling on *them*. 46 Then Paul and Barnabas  
 spake boldly and said, It was necessarie that the  
 word of God should first haue bene spoken vn-  
 to you: but seeing ye put it from you and iudge  
 your selues vnworthy of euerlasting life, loe, we  
 turne to the Gentiles. 47 For so hath the Lord  
 commaunded vs, *saying*, \* I haue made thee a *Isaie*  
 light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be 49.6.  
 the saluation vnto the ende of the worlde.  
 48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they were  
 glad,

## THE ACTES.

glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordeined vnto eternall life, beleued. 49 Thus the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole countrey. 50 But the Iewes stirred *certaine* deuout and honourable women, & the chiefe men of the citie, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coastes. 51 But they

*Chap.*  
*18.6.*

\*thooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium. 52 And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. 14 5 Paul persecuted, 19 and stoned.

**A**Nd it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes and the Grecians beleued. 2 And the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp, and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren. 3 So therefore they abode there a long time, and spake boldly in the Lord, which gaue testimonie vnto the word of his grace, and caused signes and wondrous to be done by their hands. 4 And the multitude of the city was diuided and some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles. 5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to doe the violence, and to stone them, 6 They were ware of it, & fled vnto Lystra, & Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, & vnto the region round about, 7 And there preached the Gospell. 8 Now there sate a certaine man at Lystra,

## C H A P. XIII.

Lystra, impotent in his feet, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked. 9 He heard Paul speake: who beholding him and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed, 10 Said with a loud voyce, Stand vpright on thy feet. And he leaped vp, & walked. 11 The when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likeness of men. 12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter & Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker. 13 Then Iupiters Priest, which was before their city, brought bulles with garlands vnto the gates, and would haue sacrificed with the people. 14 But when the Apostles, Barnabas & Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, & ran in among the people, cying, 15 And saying, O men, why doe ye these things? We are enen men subiect to the like passions that ye be, & preach vnto you, that yee should turne from these vaine things vnto the liuing God \*which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things that in them are: 16 Who in times past \*suffred all the Gentiles to walke in their owne wayes. 17 Neuertheless, he left not himselfe without witnesse, in that he did good and gaue vs raine frō heauen, and fruitfull seasons filling our hearts with food, and gladnesse. 18 And speaking these things, scarce appeased they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto them. 19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia, and Iconium;

*Gen.*  
*1.1.*  
*Psal.*  
*81.13.*

## THE ACTES.

nium, which when they had perswaded the  
 1. Cor. people, \* stoned Paul, and drew him out of the  
 21. 25. citie, supposing he had bene dead. 20 Howbe-  
 it, as the disciples stood round about him, he a-  
 rose vp and came into the citie, and the next day  
 he departed with Barnabas to Derbe. 21 And  
 after they had preached the glad tidings of the  
 Gospel to that citie and had taught many, they  
 returned to Iystra, and to Iconium, and to An-  
 tiochia, 22 Confirming the disciples hearts,  
 and exhorting them to continue in the faith, *es-*  
*si-ming* that wee must through many afflictions  
 enter into the kingdome of God. 23 And when  
 they had ordained them Elders by election in  
 euery Church, and prayed, and fasted, they com-  
 mended them to the Lord in whom they belea-  
 ued. 24 Thus they went throughout Pisidia,  
 and came to Pamphylia. 25 And when they had  
 preached the word in Perga they came downe  
 to Attalia, 26 And thence sailed to Antiochia,  
 \* from whence they had bene commended vnto  
 the grace of God, to the worke which they had  
 fulfilled. 27 And when they were come and  
 had gathered the Church together, they rehear-  
 sed all the things that God had done by them,  
 and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto  
 the Gentiles. 28 So there they abode a long  
 time with the disciples.

*Chap.*  
 13.

### CHAP. 15. 1 Of Circumcision.

**T**hen came downe certaine from Iudea, and  
 taught the brethren, saying, Except wee be  
 circumcised

## C H A P. XV.

circumcised after the maner of Moses, ye cannot be saued. 2 And when there was a great dissension and disputation by Paul & Barnabas, against them, they ordeined that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them, should go vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles & Elders about this question 3 Thus being brought soorth by the Church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the cōuerſion of the Gentiles, and they brought great ioy vnto all the brethren. 4 And whē they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, & of the Apostles and Elders, and they declared what things God had done by them. 5 But *said they*, certaine of the sect of the Pharisees, which did beleue, rose vp, saying, that it was needefull to circumsise them, and to command *them* to keepe the Law of Moses. 6 Then the Apostles & Elders came together to looke to this matter. 7 And when there had bene great disputation, Peter rose vp, and sayd vnto them, \* Ye men *and* brethren, yee Chap. knowe that a good while agoe among vs, God 10.20. chose out *mee*, that the Gentiles by my mouth *and* should heare the word of the Gospel, & beleue. 11.13. 8 And God which knoweth *ſ* hearts bare them witnes, in giuing vnto them the holy Ghost, euen Chap. *as he did* vnto vs. 9 And hee put no difference 10.43. betweene vs and them, after that \* by faith he had 1. cor. purified their hearts. 10 Now therefore why 1.2. tempt yee God, to \* lay a yoke on the disciples Mat. *beckes*, which neither our fathers, nor we were 2; 4c able

## THE ACTES.

able to beare? 11 But wee beleeeue through the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ to be saued, even as they doe. 12 Then all the multitude kept silence, and heard Barnabas and Paul, which tolde what signes and wonders God had done among the Gentiles by them. 13 And when they held their peace, Iames answered, saying, Men, and brethren, hearken vnto me. 14 Since on hath declared, howe God first did visite the Gentiles to take *of them* a people vnto his Name. 15 And to this agree the words of the Prophets, as it is written, 16 \* After this I will returne, and will builde againe the tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe, and the ruines thereof will I build againe and I will set it vp, 17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lord, and all the Gentiles vpon whom my Name is called, saith the Lord, which doeth all these things. 18 From the beginning of the world, God knoweth all his works. 19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them of the Gentiles that are turned to God, 20 But that wee send vnto them, that they abstaine themselves from filthines of idols, and fornication, and that that is strangled, and from blood. 21 For Moses of olde time hath in euery citie them that preach him, seeing he is read in the Synagogues euery Sabbath day. 22 Then it seemed good to the Apostles and Elders with the whole Church, to sende chosen men of their owne company, to Antiochia with Paul and Barnabas; to wit, Iudas whose sur-

name

name was Barfabas, and Silas, which were chiefe  
men among the brethren, 23 And wrote letters  
by them after this maner, T H E A P O-  
S T L E S, and the Elders, and the brethren, vnto  
the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antio-  
chia, and in Syria, and in Cilicia sende greeting.  
24 Forasmuch as wee haue heard, that certaine  
which went out from vs, haue troubled you  
with words, and cumbred your mindes, saying,  
Yee must be circumcised, and keepe the Lawe, to  
whom we gaue no such commandement: 25 It  
seemed therefore good to vs, when wee were  
come together with one accord to send chosen  
men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and  
Paul. 26 Men that haue giuen vp their liues for  
the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ. 27 We haue  
therefore sent Iudas and Silas, which shal also tell  
you the same things by mouth. 28 For it see-  
med good to the holy Ghost, and to vs to lay no  
more burden vpon you, then these necessary  
things, 29 To wit: that ye abstaine from things  
offered to idoles, and blood, and that which is  
strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye  
keepe your selues, ye shal doe wel. Fare ye well.  
30 Now when they were departed, they came  
to Antiochia, and after they had assembled the  
multitude, they deliuered the Epistle. 31 And  
when they had read it, they reioyced for the  
consolation. 32 And Iudas and Silas being Pro-  
phets, exhorted the brethren with many words,  
and strengthened them. 33 And after they had



## THE ACTES.

taried there a space, they were let goe in peace  
 of the brethren vnto the Apostles. 34 Notwith-  
 standing Silas thought good to abide there still.  
 35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antio-  
 chia, teaching and preaching with many other,  
 the worde of the Lord. 36 But after certaine  
 daies, Paul said vnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, &  
 visite our brethren in euery citie, where we haue  
 preached the word of the Lord, and see howe  
 they doe. 37 And Barnabas counsell'd to take  
 with them Iohn, called Marke. 38 But Paul  
 thought it not meet to take him vnto their com-  
 pany, which departed from them from Pam-  
 phylia, and went not with them to the worke.  
 39 Then were they so stirred, that they depar-  
 ted asunder one from the other, so that Bar-  
 nabas tooke Marke, and sayled vnto Cyprus.  
 40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being co-  
 mended of the brethren vnto the grace of God.  
 41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, Ra-  
 blishing the Churches.

CHAP. 16. 14. *Lydia & the iailer converted.*

Then came he to Derbe and to Lystra and be-  
 holde a certaine discipule was there named  
 \*Timotheus, a womans sonne, which was a Iewe-  
 esse and beleued, but his father was a Grecian,  
 2 Of whom the brethren which were at Lystra  
 and Iconium, reported well 3 Therefore Paul  
 would that he should goe soorth with him, and  
 tooke & circumcised him, because of the Iewes,  
 which were in those quarters: for they knew all  
 that;

Rom.

16. 31

phil.

2. 19.

1 thes.

3. 9.

## C H A P. XVI.

that his father was a Grecian. 4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them the decrees to keepe, ordeined of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem. 5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and increased in number daily. 6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia. 7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirite suffered them not. 8 Therefore they passed through Mysia, and came downe to Troas, 9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying. Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs. 10 And after hee had seene the vision, immediatly wee prepared to goe into Macedonia, being assured that the Lord had called vs to preach the Gospel vnto them. 11 Then went we forth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis, 12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the partes of Macedonia, and whose inhabitantes came from Rome to dwell there, and wee were in that city abiding certaine daies. 13 And on the Sabbath day, we went out of the citie, besides a Riuer, where they were wont to pray: and we sate down, and spake vnto the women which were come together. 14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyati-

## THE ACTES.

rians, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose  
 heart the Lorde opened, that she attended vnto  
 the things, which Paul spake. 25 And when  
 shee was baptized and her houtholde, thee bo-  
 fought vs, saying, If yee haue iudged me to be  
 faithfull to the Lord, come into mine house, and  
 abide *there*: and she constrained vs. 26 And it  
 came to passe *y* as we went to prayer, a certaine  
 maid hauing a spirit of diuination, met vs, which  
 gate her matters much vantage with diuining.  
 27 She followed Paul and vs, and cryed, say-  
 ing, These men are the seruants of the most  
 high God, which shewe vnto you the way of  
 saluation. 28 And this did she many dayes: but  
 Paul being grieved, turned about and sayde to  
 the spirite, I commaund thee in the name of Je-  
 sus Christ, that thou come out of her. And hee  
 came out the same houre. 29 Now when her  
 masters sawe that the hope of their gaine was  
 gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drewe  
 them into the market place vnto the Magi-  
 strates, 30 And brought them to the gouer-  
 nours, saying, These men which are Iewes, trou-  
 ble our citie. 31 And preach ordinances which  
 are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to ob-  
 serue, seeing we are Romanes. 32 The people  
 also rose vp together against them, and the go-  
 vernours rent their clothes, and commaunded  
*them* to bee beaten with rods. 33 And when  
 they had beaten the fore, they cast *them* into pri-  
 son, commanding the iaylor to keep them surely,

# CHAP. XVI.

14 Who hauing receiued such commande-  
ment cast them into the inner prison and made  
their secte fast in the stockes. 25 Now at mid-  
night Paul and Syllas prayed, and sung Psalmes  
vnto God: and the prisoners heard them 26 And  
suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that  
the foundation of the prison was shaken: and  
by and by all the doores opened, and every mans  
bands were loosed. 27 Then the keeper of the  
prison waked out of his sleepe, and when hee  
sawe the prison doores open, he drewe out his  
sworde and would haue killed himselfe, suppo-  
sing the prisoners had bin fled 28 But Paul cri-  
ed with a loud voyce, saying, Doe thy selfe no  
harme for we are all here. 29 Then hee called  
for a light, and leaped in & came trembling, and  
fel downe before Paul & Silas, 30 And brought  
them out. & said, Syis, what must I doe to be sa-  
ued? 31 And they said, Beleue in the Lord Iesus  
Christ & thou shalt be saued, & thine household.  
32 And they preached vnto him the worde of  
the Lord, and to all that were in his house. 33 Af-  
terward he tooke them the same houre of the  
night, & washed *their* stripes, and was baptized  
with all that belonged vnto him, straightway,  
34 And when hee had brought them into his  
house, he set meat before them, & reioyced y he  
with all his household beleened in God. 35 And  
when it was day, the gouernours sent the serge-  
ants, saying, Let those men goe. 36 Then the  
keeper of the prisō told these words vnto Paul,

## T H E A C T E S.

*saying,* The gouernours haue sent to loose you now therefore get you hence, and goe in peace. 37 Then said Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, and now would they put vs out priuily? nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out. 38 And the sergants tolde these words vnto the gouernours, who feared when they heard that they were Romans. 39 Then came they and praied them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie. 40 And they went out of the prison, and entren into *the house of Lydia*: and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. 17. 15 *Paul preacheth at Athens.*

**N**OW as they passed thorow Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes. 2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath *dayes* disputed with them by the Scriptures, 3 Opening, and alleaging that Christ must haue suffered and risen againe from the dead: and this is Iesus Christ, whom, *said hee*, I preach to you. 4 And some of them beleued, and ioyned in company with Paul, and Silas: also of the Grecians that feared God a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a fewe. 5 But the Iewes which beleued not, mooued with enuy, tooke vnto them certaine vagabonds and wicked fellowes, and when they had assem-  
bled

## C H' A P. XVII.

bled the multitude, they made a tumult in the  
 citie and made assault against the house of Iason,  
 and sought to bring them out to the people.  
 6 But when they found them not, they drew Iason  
 and certaine brethren vnto the heads of the  
 city, crying, These are they which haue subuer-  
 ted the state of the world, and here they are,  
 7 Whom Iason hath receiued, and these all doe  
 against the decrees of Cesar, saying that there is  
 another king, one Iesus. 8 Then they troubled  
 the people and the heads of the citie when they  
 heard these things. 9 Notwithstanding when  
 they had receiued sufficient assurance of Iason  
 and of the other, they let them goe. 10 And the  
 brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas  
 by night vnto Berea, which when they were  
 come thither, entred into the Synagogue of the  
 Iewes. 11 These were also more noble men  
 then they which were at Thessalonica, which re-  
 ceiued the word with all readinesse, and sear-  
 ched the Scriptures daily, whether those things  
 were so. 12 Therefore many of them beleeued,  
 and of honest women, which were Grecians,  
 and men not a fewe. 13 But when the Iewes of  
 Thessalonica knewe, that the word of God was  
 also preached of Paul at Berea, they came thi-  
 ther also, and moued the people. 14 But by  
 and by the brethren sent away Paul to goe as it  
 were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abo-  
 de there still. 15 And they that did conduct  
 Paul, brought him vnto Athens: and when they

## THE ACTES.

had receiued a commandement vnto Silas and Timotheus that they should come to him at once, they departed. 16 Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when hee sawe the citie subiect to idolatry. 17 Therefore hee disputed in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with them that were religious, and in the market daily with whomsoever he met. 18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoicks, disputed with him, and some said, What will this babbler say? Others said, He seemeth to bee a setter forth of strange gods (because hee preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection) 19 And they tooke him and brought him into Mars streete, saying, May wee not knowe what this newe doctrine whereof thou speakest, is? 20 For thou bringest certaine strange things vnto our eares: wee would know therefore, what these things meane. 21 For all the Athenjans, and strangers which dwelt there, gaue themselves to nothing els, but either to tell, or to heare some newes. 22 Then Paul stood in the mids of Mars streete, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things ye are too superstitious. 23 For as I passed by, and beheld your deuotions, I found an altar wherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOWN GOD. Whom yee then ignorantly worship, him shewe I vnto you. 24 God that made the world, and all things that are therein, seeing that he is the Lord of hea-

## C H A P. XVII.

uen and earth, \* dwell:th not in temples made (*chap.*  
 with hands, 25 Neither is worshipped with 7. 48.  
 mens hands, as though hee needed any thing, see- *Psal.*  
 ing he giueth to al life and breath, and al things, 5. 8.  
 26 And hath made of one blood all mankinde,  
 to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath  
 assigned the seasons which were ordained be-  
 fore, & the bounds of their habitation, 27, That  
 they should seeke the Lord, if so be they might  
 haue groped after him, and found him. though  
 doubtlesse he be not farre from euery one of vs.  
 28 (For in him we liue and moue, and haue our  
 being, as also certaine of your owne Poets haue  
 said, For ye are also his generation ) 29 \* For- *I/ai.*  
 asmuch then, as wee are the generation of God, 40. 13.  
 wee ought not to thinke that the Godhead is  
 like vnto golde, or siluer, or stone grauen by arte  
 and the inuention of man. 30 And the time of  
 this ignorance God regarded not : but now he  
 admonisheth all men euery where to repent,  
 because he hath appoynted a day in the which  
 hee will iudge the world in righteoutnesse, by  
 that man whom he hath appoynted, *wherof* he  
 hath giuen an assurance to all men, in that hee  
 hath raised him from the dead. 32 Now when  
 they heard of the resurrection from the dead,  
 some mocked : and other said, Wee will heare  
 thee againe of this thing. 33 And so Paul de-  
 parted from among them. 34 Howbeit certaine  
 men claue vnto Paul, and beleued, among  
 whom was also Denijs Arcopagita, and a wo-



# THE ACTES.

man named Damaris, and other with them.

CHAP. 18. 2. 1. *Apollos instructed by Aquila.*

**Rom** 16. 5. **A**fter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinthus, 2 And found a certaine Iew named \*Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italie, & his wife Priscilla, (Because that Claudius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and he came vnto them. 3 And because hee was of the same craft, he abode with them, & wrought (for their craft was to make tents.) 4 And hee disputed in the Synagogue euery Sabbath day, and exhorted the Iewes, and the Grecians. 5 Now when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul forced in Spirit, testified to the Iewes that Iesus was the Christ. 6 And when they resisted and **Chap.** blasphemed, he \* shooke his raiment, & said vnto 13. 51. the, Your blood be vpon your owne head: I am **mass.** cleane: from henceforth wil I goe vnto the Gen- 10. 14. tiles. 7 So he departed thence, and entered into a certaine mans house named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue. 8 \* And Crispus the chiefe ruler of the **1. Cor.** Synagogue, beleued in the Lord with all his **1. 14.** household: and many of the Corinthians hearing it, beleued and were baptized. 9 Then said the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Feare not, but speake, and holde not thy peace. 10 For I am with thee, and no man shal lay hands on thee to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie. 11 So he continued there a yeere and

## C H A P. XVIII.

fixe moneths, & taught the word of God among  
 the. 12 Now when Gallio was deputie of Achaia,  
 the Iewes arose with one accord against Paul,  
 & brought him to the iudgement seate, 13 Say-  
 ing, This fellow perswadeth men to worship  
 G O D otherwise then the Lawe appoynteth.  
 14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth,  
 Gallio said vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of  
 wrong, or an euill deede, O ye Iewes, I would  
 according to reason maintaine you. 15 But if it  
 be a question of words, and names, and of your  
 Law looke ye to it your selues: for I will be no  
 iudge of those things. 16 And he draue them  
 from the iudgement seat. 17 Then tooke all the  
 Grecians Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Syna-  
 gogue, and beat him before the iudgement seate:  
 but Gallio cared nothing for those things.  
 18 But when Paul had taried there yet a good  
 while, he tooke leave of the brethren, and sailed  
 into Syria (and with him Priscilla and Aquila)  
 after that he had shorne his head in Cenchrea:  
 for he had a \*vow. 19 Then he came to Ephe- *(had.*  
 sus, and left them there: but he entred into the 21. 24.  
 Synagogue & disputed with y<sup>e</sup> Iewes. 20 Who *numb.*  
 desired him to tary a longer time with them: but 16. 18.  
 he would not consent, 21 But bade them fare-  
 well, saying, I must needs keepe this feast that  
 cometh, in Hierusalem: but I will returne a- 1. Cor.  
 gaine vnto you, \* if God will. So he sailed fro 4. 19.  
 Ephesus. 22 And when he came downe to Ce- *James*  
 sarea, he went vp to Hierusalem: and when he 4. 15.  
 had

## THE ACTES.

had saluted the Church, hee went downe vnto Antiochia. 23 Now when he had taried *there* a while he departed, and went thorow the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthening all the disciples. 24 And a certaine Iew named \* Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures. 25 The same was instructed in the way of the Lord, and he spake feruently in the spirit, and taught diligently the things of the Lord, and knew but the Baptisme of Iohn only. 26 And he beganne to speake boldly in the Synagogue. Whom \* when Aquila & Priscilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly. 27 And when he was minded to goe into Achaia, the brethren exhorting him, wrote to the disciples to receiue him: and after he was come thither, he holpe them much which had beleued through grace. 28 For mightily hee confuted publikely the Iewes, with great vehemencie, shewing by the Scriptures, that Iesus was that Christ.

CHAP. 19.    13 *The Jewish Exorcists,*  
19 *Coniuring bookes are burnt.*

**A**ND it came to passe, while Apollos was at Corinthus, that Paul when he passed thorow the vpper coasts, came to Ephesus, & found certaine disciples, 2 And said vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghost since ye beleued? And they said vnto him, We haue not so much

32 heard whether there bee an holy Ghost.

3 And he said vnto them, Vnto what were yee then baptized. And they sayd, Vnto Iohns baptisme.

4 Then said Paul, \* Iohn verely baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people, that they should belecue in him, which should come after him, that is, in Christ Iesus.

5 And when they heard it, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus.

6 So Paul laid his hands vpon them, & the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake the tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 Moreover hee went into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and exhorting to the things that appertaine to the kingdome of God.

9 But when certaine were hardened, and disobeyed, speaking euil of the way of God before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, and disputed dayly in the schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this was done by the space of two yeres, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Iesus, both Iewes and Greciaus.

11 And God wrought no small miracles by the hands of Paul,

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the sicke, kerchiefs or handkerchiefs, and the diseases departed from them, and the euill spirits went out of them.

13 Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes, exorcists, tooke in hand to name ouer them, which had euill spirits, the Name of the

Lord

chap.

1.5.

and.

2. and

11. 16.

ma.

3. 11.

mark

1.8.

lue

3 16.

john

1.26.

## THE ACTES.

Lord Iesus, saying . Wee adiure you by Iesus,  
 whome Paul preacheth. 14 ( And there were  
 certaine sonnes of Sceua a lew, the Prielt, about  
 seven, which did this) 15 And the euil spirit an-  
 swered, and said, Iesus I acknowledge and Paul  
 I know: but who are ye? 16 And the man in  
 whom the euil spirit was, ran on them, & over-  
 came them, and preuailed against them, so that  
 they fled out of that house, naked, & wounded.  
 17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes and  
 Grecians also, which dwelt at Ephesus, and feare  
 came on them all, and the Name of the Lord Ie-  
 sus was magnified, 18 And many that beleued,  
 came and confessed, and shewed their workes,  
 19 Many also of them which vsed curious arts,  
 brought their bookes, and burned them before  
 all men, and they counted the price of them, and  
 found it fiftie thousand *pieces* of siluer. 20 So  
 the word of God grew mightily, and preuailed.  
 21 Now when these things were accomplished,  
 Paul purposed by the Spirit to passe thorow  
 Macedonia and Achaia, and to go to Hierusalem,  
 saying, After I haue bene there, I must also see  
 Rome. 22 So sent hee into Macedonia two of  
 them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus and  
 Erastus, *but* he remained in Asia for a season.  
 23 And the same time there arose no small trou-  
 ble about that way. 24 For a certaine man na-  
 med Demetrius a siluer smith, which made siluer  
 temples of Diana, brought great gaines vnto the  
 craftsmen, 25 Whom he called together, with

## C H A P. XIX.

the workemen of like things, and said, Sirs, yee knowe that by this craft wee haue our goods: 26 Moreouer yee see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost thorowout all Asia this Paul hath perswaded, & turned away much people, saying, That they be not gods which are made with hands. 27 So that not onely this thing is dangerous vnto vs, that this our portio<sup>n</sup> shalbe reprobued, but also that the Temple of the great goddesse Diana should be nothing esteemed, and that it would come to passe that her magnificence, which all Asia and the world worshippeth, should be destroyed. 28 Now when they heard it, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians. 29 And the whole city was full of confusion, and they rushed into the common place with one assent, and caught \* Gaius, and \* Aristarchus, men of Macedouia. & Pauls companions of his journey. 30 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not. 31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not present himselfe in the comon place. 32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was out of order, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together. 33 And some of the company drew forth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him forwards. Alexander then beckened with the hand, and would haue excused the matter to y<sup>e</sup> people.

34 But

34 But when they knew that he was a Iew, there arose a shout almost for y<sup>e</sup> space of two houres, of all men, crying Great is Diana of the Ephesians. 35 Then the towne Clarke when hee had stayed the people, sayd, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is it, that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddess Diana, & of the image which came downe from Iupiter? 36 Seeing then that no man can speake against these things, ye ought to be appeased, and to doe nothing rashly. 37 For yee haue brought hither these men, which haue neither committed sacrilege, neither doe blaspheme your goddess. 38 Wherefore, if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, haue a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are Deputies: let them accuse one another. 39 But if yee inquire any thing concerning other matters, it may be determined in a lawfull assembly. 40 For we are euen in icopardy to bee accused of this dayes sedition, forasmuch as there is no cause, wherby we may giue a reason of this course of people. 41 And when hee had thus spoken, he let the assembly depart.

CHAP. 20. 9 Paul raiseth dead Eutychus.

**N**OW after the tumult was appeased, Paul called the disciples vnto him, & embraced them, & departed to go into Macedonia. 2 And when he had gone thorow those parts, and had exhorted them with many words, he came into Grecia. 3 And hauing taried there three mo-  
neths,

## C H A P. XX.

neths, because the Iewes laid wait for him, as he  
 was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to re-  
 turne through Macedonia. 4 And there accom-  
 panied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of  
 them of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, and Secundus,  
 and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus, & of them  
 of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus. 5 These went  
 before, and taried vs at Troas. 6 And we sayled  
 forth from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleau-  
 ned bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fve  
 dayes, where we abode seuen dayes. 7 And the  
 first day of the weeke the disciples being come  
 together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto  
 the, ready to depart on the morowe, and con-  
 tinued the preaching vnto midnight. 8 And  
 there were many lightes in an vpper chamber,  
 where they were gathered together. 9 And  
 there sat in a windowe a certaine yong man,  
 named Eutychus, fallen into a deepe sleepe: and  
 as Paul was long presching, he overcome with  
 sleepe, fell downe from the thrid loft, & was ta-  
 ken vp dead. 10 But Paul went downe, & layd  
 himselfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying,  
 Trouble not your selues: for his life is in him.  
 11 Then when Paul was come vp againe, and  
 had broken bread, and eaten, hauing spoken a  
 long while till the dawning of the day. hee so  
 departed. 12 And they brought the boy aliue,  
 and they were not a litle comforted. 13 Then  
 we went before to ship, and sailed vnto the ciue  
 Allos, that we might receiue Paul there: for so



## THE ACTES.

had he appointed, and would him selfe go a foot  
 14 Now when he was come vnto vs to Assos,  
 & we had receiued him, we came to Mitylenes,  
 15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day  
 ouer against Chios and the next day we arrived  
 at Samos, & taried at Trogyllium: the next day  
 we came to Miletum. 16 For Paul had determi-  
 ned to saile by Ephesus, because he would not  
 spend the time in Asia: for he hasted to be, if he  
 could possibly, at Hierusalem, at the day of  
 Pentecost. 17 Wherefore from Miletum, hee  
 sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the  
 Church. 18 Who when they were come to  
 him, he sayd vnto them, Ye kuowe from the first  
 day that I came into Asia, after what maner I  
 haue bene with you at all seasons, 19 Seruing  
 the Lord with all modestie, & with many teares,  
 and tentations, which came to me by y<sup>e</sup> laying  
 awaite of the Iewes, 20 And how I kept backe  
 nothing that was profitable, but haue shewed  
 you, and taught you openly and throughout  
 euery house, 21 Witnessing both to the Iewes,  
 and to the Greciaas the repentance toward  
 God and faith toward our Lorde Iesus Christ,  
 22 And nowe behold, I goe bound in the Spirit  
 vnto Hierusalem, & know not what things shall  
 come vnto me there, 23 Sane that the holy Ghost  
 witnesseth in euery citie, saying, that bondes and  
 afflictions abide me. 24 But I please not at all, nei-  
 ther is my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I may  
 fulfill my course with ioy, and the ministration,  
which

## C H A P. XX.

which I haue receiued of y<sup>e</sup> Lord Iesus, to testifie  
the Gospel of the grace of God. 25 And now  
behold, I know that hencefoorth ye all, through  
whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of  
God, shall see my face no more. 26 Wherefore  
I take you to record this day, that I am pure  
from the blood of all men. 27 For I haue kept  
nothing backe, but haue shewed you all the  
counsell of God. 28 Take heede therefore vnto  
your selues and to all the flocke, whereof the  
holy Ghost hath made you ouerseers, to feede  
the Church of God, which hee hath purchased  
with that his owne blood. 29 For I know this,  
that after my departing, shall grievous wolues  
enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.  
30 Moreover of your own selues shal men arise,  
speaking peruerse things, to drawe disciples af-  
ter them. 31 Therefore watch, and remember,  
that by *the space* of three yeres I ceased not to  
warne every one, both night & day with teares.  
32 And now brethren I commend you to God,  
and to the worde of his grace, which is able to  
bulde further, and to giue you an inheritance,  
among all them which are sanctified. 33 I haue  
couered no mans siluer, nor gold, nor apparell.  
34 Yea, ye know, that these hands haue ministred *1. Cor.*  
vnto my \* necessities, & to them that were with *4. 12.*  
me. 35 I haue shewed you all things, how that *1. thes.*  
so labouring, yee ought to support the weake, *2. 9.*  
and to remember the wordes of the Lord Iesus, *2. thes.*  
how y<sup>e</sup> he said, It is a blessed thing to giue, rather *3. 8.*

## THE ACTES.

then to receiue 36 And whē he had thus spokē,  
he kneeled down, & praied w<sup>th</sup> the m<sup>al</sup>. 37 Then  
they wept al abundantly, & fell on Pauls necke,  
& kissed him, 38 Being chiefly sory for y<sup>e</sup> words  
which he spake, That they should see his face  
no more And they accompanied him vnto y<sup>e</sup> ship,

**CHAP. 21.** *1. Paul goeth toward Hieru-  
salem, 27 And is apprehended of the Iewes.*

**A**Nd as we launched forth and were depar-  
ted from them, wee came with a straight  
course vnto Coos, & the day following vnto the  
Rhodes, & from thence vnto Patara. 2 And we  
found a shippe that went ouer vnto Phenice,  
and went aboard, and set forth 3 And when we  
had discovered Cyprus, wee left it on the left  
band, & sailed toward Syria, and arriued at Ty-  
rus: for there the shippe vnladed the burden.  
4 And when we had found disciples, we taried  
there seven dayes And they tolde Paul through  
the Spirit, y<sup>e</sup> he should not go vp to Hierusalem.  
5 But when the dayes were ended, we departed,  
and went our way, and they all accompanied vs  
with their wives and children, euen out of the  
citie: and we, kneeling downe on the shoare,  
prayed. 6 Then when we had embraced one an-  
other, wee tooke ship and they returned home.  
7 And when we had ended the course from Ty-  
rus, we arriued at Ptolemais, and saluted y<sup>e</sup> bre-  
thren, & abode with them one day. 8 And the  
next day, Paul & we that were with him, depar-  
ted, and came vnto Cesarea: and we entred into  
the

## C H A P. XXI.

the house \* of Philip the Euangelist, which was *Chap.*  
 one of the seuen *Deacons*, and abode with him. 6. 5.  
 9 Now he had foure daughters virgins, which  
 did prophecie. 10 And as we taried there many  
 daies, there came a certaine Prophet from Iu-  
 dea, named Agabus. 11 And when he was come  
 vnto vs, he tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his  
 owne handes and feete and said, Thus saith the  
 holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem  
 binde the man that oweth this girdle. and shall  
 deliuer him into the handes of the Gentiles.  
 12 And whē we had heard these things, both we  
 and other of the same place besought him that  
 he would not goe vp to Hierusalem. 13 Then  
 Paul answered and said, What do ye weeping,  
 and breaking mine heart? For I am ready not to  
 be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem  
 for the Name of the Lord Iesus. 14 So when he  
 would not be perswaded we ceased, saying, The  
 will of the Lord be done. 15 And after those  
 daies we trusted vp our fardels, and went vp to  
 Hierusalem. 16 There went with vs also cer-  
 taine of the disciples of Cesarea, and broughe  
 with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disci-  
 ple, with whō we should lodge. 17 And when  
 we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren re-  
 ceined vs gladly. 18 And y<sup>e</sup> next day Paul went  
 in with vs vnto Iames, and all the Elders were  
 there assembled. 19 And when he had abra-  
 ced them, he tolde by order all things that God  
 had wrought among the Gentiles by his mini-

## THE ACTES.

stration, 20 So when they heard it, they glorified God, and said vnto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousand Iewes there are which beleue, & they are all zealous of the Law: 21 Now they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes, which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, & sayest, that they ought not to circumcise their sonnes, neither to liue *after* the customes. 22 What is then *to be done*? the multitude must needs come together: for they shall heare that thou art come. 23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee. We haue foure men which haue made a vow, 24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, and contribute with them, that they may <sup>\*</sup>shave their heads: and all shall know, that those things, whereof they haue bin informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy selfe also walkest & keepst the Law. 25 For as touching the Gentiles, which beleue, we haue written and determined, that they obserue no such thing, but that they keepe themselves from things offered to idoles, and from blood and from that that is strangled, and from fornication. 26 Then Paul tooke the men and the next day was purified with them, and entred into the Temple, declaring the accomplishment of the dayes of the purification, vntil that an offering should be offered for euery one of them. 27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia, (when they saw him in the Temple) moued all the people, and laide

Chap.

18.18.

18.18.

6.18.

## CHAP XXI.

laid hands on him, 28 Crying, Men of Israel,  
 helpe: this is the man that teacheth al men enery  
 where against the people, and the Law, and this  
 place: moreouer, he hath brought Grecians into  
 the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.  
 29 For they had seene before Trophimus an E-  
 phesian with him in the citie, whom they suppo-  
 sed that Paul had brought into the Temple.  
 30 Then all the citie was moued, & the people  
 ran together: & they tooke Paul and drew him  
 out of the Temple, & forthwith the doores were  
 shut. 31 But as they went about to kill him, ti-  
 dings came vnto the chiefe captaine of the band,  
 that al Hierusalem was on an uproare. 32 Who  
 immediately tooke souldiers & Centurions, and  
 ran downe vnto them: and when they sawe the  
 chiefe Captaine & the souldiers, they left beating  
 of Paul. 33 Then the chiefe Captaine came neere  
 and tooke him, and comanded him to be bound  
 with two chaines, & demanded who he was, and  
 what he had done. 34 And one cryed this, ano-  
 ther that, among the people. So when he could  
 not know the certaintie for the tumult, he com-  
 maunded him to be led into the castle. 35 And  
 when hee came vnto the grieces, it was so that  
 he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence  
 of the people. 36 For the multitude of the peo-  
 ple followed after crying, Away w<sup>th</sup> him. 37 And  
 as Paul should haue bene led vnto the castle,  
 he said vnto the chiefe Captaine, May I speake  
 vnto thee? Who said, Canst thou *speake Greeke?*

## THE ACTES.

38 Art not thou the Egyptian who before these dayes raised a sedition, and led out into the wilderness foure thousand men that were murderers? 39 Then Paul said, Doubtlesse I am a man which am a lewe, & citizen of Tarsus, a famous cite of Cilicia, and I beseech thee. suffer mee to speake vnto the people. 40 And when he had giuen him licence, Paul stood on the grieces, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made great silence, hee spake vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

CHAP. 22. 17 *Pauls second  
is continued.*

**Y**E men, brethren and Fathers, heare my defence now toward you. 1 (And when they heard, that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence, and hee said) 2 I am verely a man, which am a lewe, borne in Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this cite at the feete of Gamaliel, and instructed according to the perfect manner of the Law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day. 3 And I persecuted this way vnto my death, binding and deliuering into prison both men and women. 4 As also the chiefe Priest dooth beare me witnesse, and all the compaignie of the Elders of whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damascus to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem that they might be punished. 5 And so it was, as I journeyed and was come neere vnto Damascus

about

## C H A P. XXII.

about noone, that suddenly there shone from  
 heauen a great light round about me. 7 So I fell  
 vnto the earth, and heard a voyce saying vnto  
 me, Saul, Saul, Why persecutest thou me? 8 Then  
 I answered, Who art thou Lord? And hee said  
 to mee, I am Iesus of Nazareth, whom thou  
 persecutest. 9 Moreouer, they that were with  
 me saw in deed a light & were afraid: but they  
 heard not the voyce of him that spake vnto me.  
 10 Then said I, What shall I doe, Lord? And the  
 Lord said vnto mee, Arise, and goe into Damas-  
 cus: and there it shall be tolde thee of all things,  
 which are appointed for thee to do. 11 So when  
 I could not see for the glory of that light, I was  
 led by the hand of them that were with me, and  
 came into Damascus. 12 And one Ananias a  
 godly man, as pertaining to the Lawe, hauing  
 good report of all the Jewes which dwelt there,  
 13 Came vnto mee, and stood, and sayde vnto  
 me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight: and that  
 same houre I looked vpon him. 14 And he said,  
 The God of our fathers hath appoynted thee,  
 that thou shouldest know his will, and shouldest  
 see that iust one, and shouldest heare the voyce  
 of his mouth. 15 For thou shalt be his witness  
 vnto all men of the things which thou hast seene  
 and heard. 16 Nowe therefore why tariest  
 thou? Arise and be baptized, and wash away thy  
 finnes, in calling on the Name of the Lord.  
 17 And it came to passe, that when I was come  
 againe to Hierusalem, and prayed in the Temple,  
 I was



## T H E A C T E S.

I was in a trance, 18 And saw him, saying vnto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy witness concerning me. 19 Then I said, Lord, they know that I prisoned, & beat in euery Synagogue them that beleued in thee. 20 And when the blood of thy martyr Steuen was shed, I also stood by, and consented vnto his death, & kept the clothes of them that slew him. 21 Then he said vnto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles. 22 And they heard him vnto this word, then they lift vp their voyces, & said, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not meete that he should liue. 23 And as they cryed and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the ayre, 24 The chiefe Captaine commanded him to be led into the castle, and bade that hee should bee scourged and examined, that hee might knowe wherefore they cryed so on him. 25 And as they bound him with thongs, paul sayde vnto the Centurion that stood by, Is it lawful for you to scourge one that is a Roman, and not condemne him? 26 Nowe when the Centurion heard it, hee went and tolde the chiefe Captaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest: for this man is a Roman. 27 Then the chiefe Captaine came, and said to him, Tell me, art thou a Roman? And hee sayd, Yea. 28 And the chiefe Captaine answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedome. Then Paul said, But I was so borne. 29 Then straightway they departed

from

## C H A P. XXIII.

from him, which should haue examined him: and the chiefe Captaine also was afraide, after hee knewe that he was a Romane, and that hee had bound him. 30 On the next day, because hee would haue knowen the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed him from his bonds, and commanded the hie Priests and all their Council to come together: and he brought Paul, and set him before them.

CHAP. 23. 2 *Paul brought before Ananias.*

AND Paul beheld earnestly the Council, and said, Men & brethren, I haue in al good conscience serued God vntill this day. 3 Then the hie Priest Ananias commanded them that stood by, to smite him on the mouth. 3 Then said Paul to him, God wil smite thee, thou whited wall: for thou sittest to iudge me according to the Law, and transgressing the Law, commandest thou me to be smitten? 4 And they that stood by, sayd, Reulest thou Gods hie Priest? 5 Then sayde Paul, I knowe not, brethren, that he was the hie Priest: for it is written, \* Thou shalt not speake euil of the Ruler of thy people. 6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were of y<sup>e</sup> Sadduces, & the other of the Pharises, he cried in the Council, Men and brethren, \* I am a Pharise, the soune of a Pharise: I am accused of the hope and resurrection of the dead. 7 And when he had sayde this, there was a dissension betweene the Pharises and the Sadduces, so that the multitude was diuided. 8 \* For the Sadduces say that there is no resurrection.

Exod.

22.27.

Chap.

24.22.

phil.

3.5.

Mat.

22.23.

resur-

## T A E A C T E S.

resurrection, neither Angel, nor spirit: but the Pharises cōlesse both. 9 Then there was a great cry, and the Scribes of the Pharises part rose vp, and stroue, saying, Wee finde none euill in this man: but if a spirit or an Angel haue spoken to him, let vs not fight against God. 10 And when there was a great dissension, the chiefe captaine, fearing lest Paul should haue bin pulled in pieces of the, commanded 5 souldiers to go downe, and to take him from among them, and to bring him into the castle. 11 Now the night folowing the Lord stood by him, and said Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou hast testified of mee in Hierusalem, so must thou beare witness also at Rome. 12 And when the day was come, certaine of the Iewes made an assembly, and bound them selues with a curse, saying, that they would neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul. 13 And they were more then fourtie, which had made this conspiracie. 14 And they came to the chiefe Priestes and Elders and sayd, Wee haue bound our selues with a solemn curse, that wee will eate nothing, vntill wee haue slaine Paul. 15 Now therefore, ye and the Council signify to the chiefe captaine, that he bring him forth vnto you to morow, as though ye would know some thing more perfectly of him, and wee, or euery one come neere, will bee ready to kill him. 16 But when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying awaite, hee went and entred into the castle, and tolde Paul. 17 And Paul called one of the Cen-

## C H A P. XXIII.

curious vnto him, and sayd, Take this yong man  
 hence vnto the chiefe captaine: for hee hath a  
 certaine thing to shew him. 18 So he tooke him,  
 and brought him to the chiefe captaine, & sayd,  
 Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and pray-  
 ed mee to bring this yong man vnto thee, which  
 hath some thing to say vnto thee. 19 Then the  
 chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, & went  
 apart with him alone, and asked him, What hast  
 thou to shew mee? 20 And he said, The Iewes  
 haue conspired to desire thee, that thou wouldest  
 bring forth Paul to morow, into the Coun-  
 cill, as though they would enquire somewhat of  
 him more perfectly: 21 But let them not per-  
 swade thee: for there lie in waite for him of  
 the more then fourty men, which haue bonnd  
 themselves with a curse, that they will neither  
 eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and  
 now are they ready, and waite for thy promise.  
 22 The chiefe captaine then let the yong man  
 depart, after hee had charged him to vter it to  
 no man, that hee had shewed him these things.  
 23 And he called vnto him two certaine Centu-  
 rions, saying, Make ready two hundreth souldi-  
 ers, that they may go to Cæsarea, and horsemen  
 threescore & ten, and two hundreth with darts,  
 at the third houre of the night. 24 And let them  
 make ready an horse, that Paul being set on, may  
 bee brought safe vnto Felix the Gouvernour.  
 25 And hee wrote an Epistle in this maner:  
 26 Claudius Lyfias vnto the most noble Gouver-

## THE ACTES.

our Felix sendeth greeting. 27 As this man  
 was taken of the Iewes, and should haue bene  
 killed of them, I came vpon them with the garri-  
 son, and rescued him, perceiuing that hee was a  
 Romane. 28 And when I would haue knowen  
 the cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought  
 him forth into their Councill. 29 There I per-  
 ceiued that hee was accused of questions of their  
 Law, but had no crime worthy of death, or of  
 bonds. 30 And when it was shewed mee, how  
 that the Iewes laid waite for the man, I sent him  
 straightway to thee, and commaunded his accu-  
 sers to speake before thee the things that they  
 had against him. Farewell. 31 Then the fouli-  
 ers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul and  
 brought him by night to Antipatris. 32 And the  
 next day, they left the horsemen to goe with  
 him, and returned vnto the castle. 33 Now when  
 they came to Casarea, they deliuered the Epistle  
 to the Gouvernour, and presented Paul althow-  
 to him. 34 So when the Gouvernour had read  
 it, he asked of what prouince he was: and when  
 he vnderstood that he was of Cilicia. 35 I wil  
 heare thee, said he, when thine accusers also are  
 come, and commaunded him to bee kept in He-  
 rods iudgement hall.

CHAP. 24.    2 *Tertullus accuseth Paul  
 before Felix.*

**N**OW after fise dayes, Ananias the hie Priest  
 came downe with the Elders,, & with Ter-  
 tullus a certaine oratour, which appeared be-

fore the Gouverneur against Paul. 2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that we haue obtained great quietnesse through thee, and that many worthy things are done vnto this nation, through thy providence, 3 We acknowledge it wholly and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thanks. 4 But that I bee not tedious vnto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs of thy courteisie a few wordes. 5 Certainly we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, and a chiefe maintainer of the sect of the Nazarites: 6 And hath gone about to pollute the Temple: therefore we tooke him, and would haue iudged him according to our Law: 7 But the chiefe captaine Typhas came vpon vs, and w<sup>th</sup> great violence tooke him out of our hands. 8 Commaunding his accusers to come to thee: of whome thou mayest (if thou wilt inquire) knowe all these things whereof we accuse him. 9 And the Iewes likewise assumed, saying, that it was so. 10 Then Paul, after that the Gouverneur had bekenen vnto him that hee should speake, answered, I doe the more gladly answer for my selfe, forasmuch as I knowe that thou hast bene of many yeeres a Iudge vnto this nation, 11 Seeing that thou mayest knowe, that there are but twelue dayes since I came vp to worship in Hierusalem. 12 And they neither found mee in the Temple disputing with any

## THE ACTES.

man, neither making uproare among the people neither in the Synagogues, nor in the cite. 13 Neither can they proue the things, whereof they now accuse me. 14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call here, sic) so worship I the God of my fathers, beleauing all things which are written in the Lawe and the Prophets, 15 And haue hope towards God, that the resurrection of the dead, which they themselues looke for also, shalbe both of iust and vniust. 16 And herein I endeavour my selfe to haue alway a cleare conscience towards God, and toward men. 17 Nowe after many yeeres, I came, and brought almes to my nation and offerings. 18 At what tyme certaine Iewes of Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult. 19 Who ought to haue bene present before thee, and accuse me, if they had ought against me. 20 Or let these themselues say, if they haue found any vniust thing in me, while I stood in the Council, 21 Except it be for this one voyce, that I cried standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day. 22 Now when Felix heard these things, he deferred them, and sayde. When I shall more perfectly knowe the things which concerne this way, by the coming of Lyfias the chiefe Captaine, I will decide your matter. 23 Then he commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that hee should haue ease, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance.

## C H A P. XXV:

quaintance to minister vnto him or to come vnto him. 24 And after certaine dayes, came Felix with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iewesse, and he called forth Paul, and heard him of the faith in Christ. 25 And as he disputed of righteousness and temperance, and of the iudgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Goe thy way for this time, and when I haue conuenient time, I wil call for thee. 26 He hoped also that money should haue bene giuen him of Paul, that hee might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the officer, and communed with him. 27 When two yerres were expired, Porcius Festus came into Felix rounge: and Felix willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul bound.

C H A P. 25.     2. *Paul pleadeth before  
Festus and Agrippa.*

**W**HEN Festus was then come into the prouince, after three dayes he went vp from Casarea vnto Hierusalem. 2 Then the hie Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him against Paul: and they besought him, 3 And desired fauour against him, that he would send for him to Hierusalem: and they layde waite to kill him by the way. 4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Casarea, and that he himselfe would shortly departe thither. 5 Let them therefore, sayd he, which among you are able, come downe with vs: and if there be any wickednesse in the man, let them accuse him. 6 Nowe when hee had taried among them no



more then tenne dayes, he went downe to Cafareta, and the next day fate in the iudgement seat, and commaunded Paul to be brought. 7 And when he was come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stood about him, and layd many and grievous complaints against Paul, whereof they could make no plaine prooffe, 8 Ierast much as he answered, that hee had neither offended any thing against the Law of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor against Caesar. 9 Yet Festus willing to get favour of the Iewes, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me? 10 Then said Paul I stand at Caesars iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudged to the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well knowest. 11 For if I haue done wrong or committed any thing woorthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things, whereof they accuse mee, no man, to pleasure them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto Caesar. 12 Then when Festus had spoken with the Councill, hee answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Caesar? vnto Caesar shalt thou goe. 13 And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice came downe to Cafareta to salute Festus. 14 And when they had remained there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Iohn, 15 Of whome when I came to Hierusalem, the chief Priestes and Elders of the Iewes informed

# C H A P. XXV.

me and desired to haue iudgement against him,  
 16 To whome I answered, that it is not the man-  
 ner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any  
 man to the death, before that hee which is accu-  
 sed, haue the accusers before him, and haue place  
 to defende himselfe concerning the crime.  
 17 Therefore when they were come hither,  
 without delay the day following I sat on the  
 iudgement seate, and commanded the man to be  
 brought forth. 18 Against whom when the ac-  
 cusers stood vp, they brought no crime of such  
 things as I supposed: 19 But had certaine que-  
 stions against him of their owne superstition,  
 and of one Iesus, which was dead, whome Paul  
 affirmed to be aliuē. 20 And because I doubted  
 of such manner of question, I asked him whether  
 hee would goe to Hierusalem, and there bee  
 iudged of these things. 21 But because hee ap-  
 pealed to be referued to the examination of Au-  
 gustus I commanded him to be kept till I might  
 send him to Cæsar. 22 Then Agrippa said vn-  
 to Iesus, I would also heare the man my selfe.  
 Tomorowe, sayde hee, thou shalt heare him.  
 23 And on the morowe when Agrippa was  
 come and Bernice with great pompe and were  
 entred into the common hall with the chiefe  
 captaines and chiefe men of the citie, at Fe-  
 stus commaundement Paul was brought forth.  
 24 And Iesus sayd, King Agrippa, and all men  
 which are present with vs, yee see this man, a-  
 bout whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue

## THE ACTES.

called vpon me, both at Hierusalem, and here,  
 crying, that hee ought not to liue any longer.  
 25 Yet haue I found nothing worthy of death,  
 that he hath committed: neuertheless, seeing  
 that he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue deter-  
 mined to send him. 26 Of whome I haue no  
 certaine thing to write vnto my Lord: where-  
 fore I haue brought him foorth vnto you, and  
 specially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after exa-  
 mination had, I might haue somewhat to write.  
 27 For me thinketh it vnreasonable to send a  
 prisoner, and not to shewe the causes which are  
 laid against him.

CHAP. 25. 2. *Pauls oration to Agrippa.*

**T**HEN Agrippa said vnto Paul, Thou art per-  
 mitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul stret-  
 ched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe,  
 2 I thinke my self happy, King Agrippa, because  
 I shall answer this day before thee of all the  
 things whereof I am accused of the Iewes,  
 3 Chiefly, because thou hast knowledge of all  
 customes, and questions which are among the  
 Iewes: wherefore I beseech thee, to heare me pa-  
 tiently. 4 As touching my life from my child-  
 hood, & what it was from the beginning among  
 mine owne nation at Hierusalem, knowe all the  
 Iewes, 5 Which knewe mee heretofore, euen  
 from mine elders (if they would testifie) that after  
 the most strait sect of our religion I liued a Pha-  
 rise. 6 And now I stand and am accused for the  
 hope of the promise made of God vnto our fa-  
 thers.

## C H A P. XXVI.

ethers. 7 Whereunto our twelue tribes instantly  
 ly seruing God day and night, hope to come: for  
 the which hopes sake, O king Agrippa, I am ac-  
 cused of <sup>y</sup> lewes. 8 Why should it be thought  
 a thing incredible vnto you, that God shoulde  
 raise againe the dead? 9 I also verily thought  
 in my selfe, that I ought to doe many contrary  
 things against the Name of I E S V S of Naza-  
 reth. 10 \* Which thing I also did in Hierusalem: *(chap. 8.3.*  
 for many of the Saints I shut vp in prison, ha-  
 uing receiued authoritie of the hie Priestes, and  
 when they were put to death, I gaue ~~my~~ sentēce.  
 11 And I punished them throughout all the Sy-  
 nagogues & compelled them to blaspheme, and  
 being more mad against them, I persecuted them  
 euen vnto strange cities. 12 At which time, euen  
 as I went to \* Damascus with authoritie, & com- *Chap. 9.2.*  
 mission from the hie Priestes, 13 At midday, O  
 King, I saw in the way a light from heauen pas-  
 sing the brightnesse of the sunne, shine round a-  
 bout me, and them which were with me. 14 So  
 when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a  
 voyce speaking vnto me, and saying in the He-  
 brew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou  
 me? It is hard for thee to kick against prickles.  
 15 Then I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said,  
 I am Iesus whom thou persecutest. 16 But rise  
 and stand vp on thy seete: for I haue appeared  
 vnto thee for this purpose, to appoynt thee a  
 minister and a witnesse, both of the things which  
 thou hast seene, and of the things in the which

## THE ACTES.

I wil appeare vnto thee, 17 Deliuering thee fro  
this people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom  
nowe I send thee, 18 To open their eyes, that  
they may turne from darknesse to light, & from  
the power of Sa an vnto God, that they may re-  
ceiue forgiveness of sinnes, and inheritance a-  
mong them, which are sanctified by faith in me,

*Chap.* 9. 22, 26. 27. 33. 4. 19 Wherefore, King Agrippa, I was not obe-  
dient vnto the heauenly vision, 20 \* But thoued  
first vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusalem,  
and thorowout al the coasts of Iudea, and came to  
the Gentiles, that they should repent, & turne to  
God, and do works worthy amendement of life.

*Chap.* 21. 30. 21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in the  
\* Temple, and went about to kill me. 22 Neuer-  
thelesse, I obtained helpe of God, and continue  
vnto this day, witnessing both to small and to  
great, say ng none other things then those which  
the Prophets and Moses did say should come,  
23 To wit, that Christ should suffer, and that he  
should be the first that should rise fro the dead,  
and should shew light vnto this people, and to  
the Gentiles. 24 And as he thus answered for  
himselle Festus said with a loud voyce, Paul,  
thou art besides thy selie: much learning doth  
make thee mad. 25 But he said, I am not mad, O  
noble Festus, but I speake the words of truth &  
sobernesse. 26 For the King knoweth of these  
things, before whom also I speake boldly: for I  
am perswaded that none of these things are hid  
from him: for this thing was not done in a cor-

## C H A P. XXVII.

**ver. 17** O King Agrippa, beleueſt thou the Pro-  
phets? I know that thou beleueſt. **28** Then A-  
grippa ſaid vnto Paul, Almoſt thou perſwadeſt  
me to become a Chriſtian. **29** Then Paul ſaid, I  
would to God that not onely thou but alſo all  
that heare me to day, were both almoſt, and al-  
together ſuch as I am, except theſe bondes.  
**30** And when he had thus ſpoken, the King roſe  
vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that  
ſate with them. **31** And when they were gone  
apart, they talked betwene themſelues, ſaying,  
This man doth nothing worthy of death, nor of  
bondes. **32** Then ſaid Agrippa vnto Feſtus, This  
man might haue bene looſed: if he had not ap-  
pealed vnto Ceſar.

C H A P. 27. *Pauls ſhipwrecke*

**N**O when it was concluded, that we ſhould  
ſaile into Italie, they deliuered both Paul  
and ſome other priſoners vnto a Centurion  
named Iulius, of the band of Auguſtus. **2** And  
wee entered into a ſhip of Adramyttium, pur-  
poſing to ſaile by the coaſts of Asia, and lanched  
forth, and had Ariſtarchus of Macedonia, a Theſ-  
ſalonian, with vs. **3** And the next day we arri-  
ued at Sidon: and Iulius courteouſly increaſed  
Paul, & gaue him liberty to goe vnto his friends,  
that they might reſreſh him. **4** And from thence  
we lanched and ſailed hard by Cyprus, becauſe  
the windes were contrarie. **5** Then ſailed wee  
ouer the ſea by Cilicia, and Pamphylia, and came  
to Myra, a citie in Lycia. **6** And there the Cen-  
turion

2. Cor.  
11. 25.

## THE ACTES.

centurion found a ship of Alexandria, sailing into  
 Italie, and put vs therein. 7 And when we had  
 sailed slowly many dayes, and scarce were come  
 against Gnidum, because the winde suffered vs  
 not, we sailed hard by Candie, neere to Salomon:  
 8 And with much adoe sailed beyond it, and  
 came vnto a certaine place called the Faire ha-  
 uens, neere vnto the which was the citie Iossa.  
 9 So when much time was spent, and sailing  
 was now ieopardous, because also the Ialt was  
 now past, Paul exhorted *them*, 10 And said vn-  
 to them. Syrs, I see that this voyage will be with  
 hurt & much damage, not of the lading & ship  
 onely, but also of our liues. 11 Nevertheless  
 the Centurion beleued rather the Gouernour  
 and y<sup>e</sup> master of y<sup>e</sup> ship, then those things which  
 were spoken of Paul. 12 And because the ha-  
 uen was not commodious to winter in, many  
 tooke counsel to depart thence, if by any means  
 they might attaine to Phenice, *there* to winter,  
 which is an haven of Candie, and lieth towards  
 the Southwest, and by West, and Northwest, and  
 by West. 13 And when the Southerne winde  
 blew softly, they supposing to obtaine their  
 purpose, loosed nere, & sailed by Candie. 14 But  
 anon after, there arose by it a stormie winde cal-  
 led Euroclydon. 15 And when the ship was  
 caught, and could not resist the winde, we let her  
 go, and were caried away. 16 And we ran vnder  
 a little Ile named Clauda, and had much adoe to  
 get the boat. 17 Which they tooke vp and vsed

## C H A P. XXVII.

all helpe, vndergirding the ship, fearing lest they should haue fallen into Syrtes, and they strake saile, and so were caried. 18 The next day when we were tossed with an exceeding tempest, they lightened the ship. 19 And the third day we cast out with our owne hands the tackling of the ship. 20 And when neither sun nor starres in many daies appeared, & no small tempest lay vpon vs. all hope that we should be saued, was then taken away. 21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the mids of them and said, Syrs, ye should haue hearkened to me, and not haue loosed from Candie: so should ye haue gained this hurt and losse. 22 But now I exhort you to be of good courage: for there shall be no losse of any mans life among you, saue of the ship onely. 23 For there stood by me this night the Angel of God whose I am, and whom I serue. 24 Saying, Feare not, Paul: for thou must be brought before Cesar: and loe, God hath giuen vnto thee freely all that saile with thee. 25 Wherefore. first, be of good courage: for I beleue God that it shalbe so as it hath bin tolde me. 26 Howbeit, we must be cast into a certaine land. 27 And when the fourteenth night was come, as we were caried to and fro in the airc, about midnight, the shipmen discerned that some country approached vnto the, 28 And sounded & found it twenty fathoms: & when they had gone a litle farther, they sounded againe, & found fifteene fathoms. 29 Then fear-  
ring



## THE ACTES.

ring least they should haue fallen into some rough places they cast foure ancores out of the sterne, & withed y<sup>e</sup> the day were come. 30 Now as the mariners were about to flee out of the ship, and had let downe the boat into the sea vnder a colour as though they would haue cast ancores out of y<sup>e</sup> foreship, 31 Paul said vnto the Centurion & the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship ye cannot be safe. 32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boate, and let it fall away. 33 And when it began to be day, Paul exhorted the mall to take meate, saying, This is the fourteenth day that ye haue taried, & continued fasting, receiuing nothing. 34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meate: for this is for your safeguard: for there shall not an haire fall from the head of any of you. 35 And when he had thus spoken, he tooke bread, & gaue thanks to God, in presence of them all, & brake it: & he began to eat. 36 Then were they all of good courage, and they also tooke meate. 37 Now were in the ship in all two hundred threescore and fiftene soules. 38 And when they had eaten ynough, they lightned the ship, & cast out y<sup>e</sup> wreck into the sea. 39 And when it was day, they knew not the countrey, but they spied a certain creeke with a shanke, in to the which they were minded (if it were possible) to thrust in the ship. 40 So when they had taken vp the ancores, they committed the ship vnto the sea, and loosed the rudder bonds, & hoisted vp the maine saile to the winde.

## C H A P. XXVIII.

and drew to the shore. 41 And when they fell into a place, where two seas meet, they thrall in the ship: and the forepart sticke fast, and could not be moved, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves. 42 Then the souldiers countell was, to kill the prisoners, lest any of them, when he had found out, should flee away. 43 But the Centurion willing to save Paul, Rayed the countell, and commanded that they that could swim, should cast the shelves first into the sea, and goe out to land: 44 And the other, some on boards, and some on certaine raftes of the ship: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

### CHAP. 28. 3 *The viper on Pauls hand.*

And when they were come safe, then they knew that the yle was called Melita. 2 And the Barbarians shewed vs no little kindnesse for they kindled a fire, & received vs euery one, because of the present thowre, and because of the colde. 3 And when Paul had gathered a nūber of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heate, and leapt on his hand. 4 Now when the Barbarians saw the worne hang on his hand, they sayde among themselves, This man surely is a murderere, whom, though he hath escaped the sea yet Vengeance hath not suffered to live. 5 But he thooke off the worne into the fire, & felt no harme. 6 Howbeit they waited when hee should haue swolne, or fallen downe dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great

## THE ACTES.

a great while, & saw no inconuenience come to him, they changed their mindes, and said, that he was a God. 7 In the same quarters the chiefe man of the yle (whose name was Publius) had possessions: the same receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously. 8 And so it was, that the father of Publius lay sicke of the feuer, & of a bloody fluxe: to whom Paul entred in, & when he prayed, he layd *his* hands on him, and healed him. 9 When this then was done, other also in the yle, which had diseases, came to him & were healed, to which alio did vs great honor: and when wee departed, they laded vs with things necessary. 10 Now after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the yle. whose badge was Castor & Pollux. 11 And when we arriued at Syracusa, we taried *there* three dayes. 12 And from thence we set a compa<sup>n</sup>ie & came to Rhegium and after one day, the South winde blew, & the second day we came to Puteoli: 13 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tary with them seuen dayes, and so we went toward Rome. 14 And from thence, wh<sup>en</sup> the brethren heard of vs, they came to meete vs at the Market of Appins, & at the threetaernes, wh<sup>en</sup> when Paul saw, he thanked God, and waxed bolde. 15 So when wee came to Rome, the Centurion deliuered the prisoners to the generall captaine: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himselfe with a souldier that kept him. 17 And the third day after, Paul called

## CHAP. XXVIII.

called the chiefe of the Iewes together: and when they were come, he sayde vnto them, Men and brethren though I haue committed nothing against the people, or lawes of the fathers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the hands of the Romanes. 18 Who when they had examined mee, would haue let mee goe, because there was no cause of death in me. 19 But when the Iewes spake contrary, I was constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not because I had ought to accuse my nation of. 20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you, to see you, and to speake with you: for that hope of Israels sake, I am bound with this chaine. 21 Then they said vnto him, Wee neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither came any of the brethren that shewed or spake any euill of thee. 22 But we wil heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that euery where it is spoken against. 23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many vnto him into his lodging, to whom he expounded, testifying the kingdome of God, & perswading them those things that concerne Iesus, both out of the Law of Moses, and out of the Prophets, from morning to night. 24 And some were perswaded with the things which were spoken, and some beleeued not. 25 Therefore when they agreed not among themselves, they departed. after that Paul had spoken one word, to wit, Wee speake the holy Ghost by Esaias y Prophet vnto  
our

# TO THE ROMANES.

**Isai.** our Fathers, 26 Saying \* Go vnto this people,  
**6.9.** and say, By hearing ye shall heare, and shall not  
 vnderstand, and seeing ye shall see, and not per-  
 ceue. 27 For the heart of this people is waxed  
 fat, and their eares are dull of hearing, and with  
 their eyes haue they winked: lest they should see  
 with *their* eyes, & heare with *their* eares, & vnder-  
 stand with *their* hearts, and should returne,  
 that I might heale them. 28 Be it known therefore  
 vnto yon, that this saluation of God is sent  
 to the Gentiles, and they shall heare it. 29 And  
 when he had said these things, y Jewes departed  
 & had great reasoning among themselues. 30 And  
 Paul remained two yeeres full in an house hired  
 for himselfe, & receiued all y came in vnto him,  
 31 Preaching the kingdome of God, & teaching  
 those things, which concerne the Lorde Iesus  
 Christ, with all boldnesse of speech, without let.

## THE EPISTIE OF THE Apostle Paul to the Romanes

CHAP. I. 26 *The punishment of those  
 that refused grace.*

**27.**  
**28.1.**

**P**AUL a seruant of Iesus Christ,  
 called to be an Apostle. \* put apart  
 to preach the Gospell of God,  
 (Which he had promised afore  
 by his Prophets in the holy Scrip-  
 tures) 3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our  
 Lord (which was made of the seede of David,  
 according to the flesh, 4 And declared might-  
 fully

tilly to be the Sonne of God, touching y<sup>e</sup> Spirit of sanctification by the resurrection from the dead.)

5 By whom we haue receiued grace & Apostleship (that obedience might bee giuen vnto the faith, for his name among al the Gentiles, 6 Among v<sup>h</sup>o ye be also the called of Iesus Christ:

7 To all you that be at Rome beloued of God, called to be Saints: Grace be with you, & peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ. 8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, because your faith is published thorow out the whole world. 9 For God is my witness, (whom I serue in my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne) that without ceasing I make mention of you. 10 Alwayes in my prayers, beseeching that by some means, one time or other, I might haue a prosperous iourney by the will of God, to come vnto you. 11 For I long to see you, that I might bestow among you some spiriuall gift, that you might be strengthened:

12 That is, that I might be consoled together with you, through our mutuall faith, both yours and mine. 13 Now my brethren, I would that ye should not be ignorant, how that I haue oftentimes purposed to come vnto you, (but haue binet hitherto) that I might haue some fruite also among you, as I haue among the other Gentiles.

14 I am debter both to the Grecians, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise men & vnto the vnwise. 15 Therefore as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the Gospel to you also that are at

Rome.

## TO THE ROMANES.

Rome. 16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel  
of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto salua-  
tion to euery one that beleeueth, to the Iew first,  
& also to the Grecian. 17 For by it the righte-  
ousnesse of God is reueiled frō faith to faith: as  
Haba. it is written, \*The iust shal liue by faith. 18 For  
2.4. the wrath of God is reueiled frō heauen against  
all vngodlines, & vnrighteousnes of men, which  
withhold the truth in vnrighteousnes, 19 For-  
asmuch as that, which may be knowen of God, is  
manifest in them: for God hath shewed it vnto  
them. 20 For the inuisible things of him, that  
is, his eternall power and Godhead, are seene by  
the creation of the world, being considered in his  
works, to the intent that they should be without  
excuse: 21 Because that when they knew God,  
they glorified him not as God, neither were  
thankfull, but became vaine in their thoughts, &  
their foolish heart was full of darknes. 22 When  
they professed themselues to be wise, they became  
fooles. 23 For they turned the glory of the in-  
corruptible God, to the similitude of the image  
of a corruptible man, & of birds, and foure foot-  
ed beasts, & of creeping things. 24 Wherefore  
also God gaue them vp to their hearts lusts, vnto  
uncleannes, to defile their own bodies betwene  
themselues. 25 Which turned the truth of God  
vnto a lie, and worshipped and serued the crea-  
ture, forsaking the Creator, which is blessed for-  
euer, Amen. 26 For this cause God gaue them  
vnto vile affections: for euen their women dis-

changed

## C H A P. II.

change the natural vse into that which is against nature. 27 And likewise also y<sup>e</sup> men left the natural vse of the woman, and burned in their lust one toward another, & man with man wrought strange, & receiued in themselves such recompence of their error, as was meete. 28 For as they regarded not to acknowledge God, *thus* so God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate mind, to doe those things which are not conuenient, as being full of all vnrighteousnes, fornication, wickednes, conetousnes, maliciousnes, full of enuie, of murder, of debate, of deceite, taking all things in the euil part, whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proud, boasters, insensers of euil things, disobedient to parents, without vnderstanding, couenant breakers, without any all affliction, such as can neuer bee appeased, nor reliefe. 31 Which men though they knewe the Iawes of God howe that they which commit such things are worthy of death, yet not only so they doe, but also fauour them y<sup>e</sup> do them.

CHAP. 2. 14. *Ignorance excuseth no man.*

**I** Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, who-  
 soeuer thou art that condemnest: for in that  
 that thou condemnest another, thou condemnest  
 thy selfe, for thou that condemnest dost y<sup>e</sup> same  
 things. 2 But we know that the iudgement of  
 God is according to truth, against them which  
 commit such things. 3 And thinkest thou this,  
 O thou man, that condemnest them which doe  
 such things, and dost the same, that thou shalt

D d

escape



**James**

**5.3.**

**Psal.**

**63.12**

**134.1**

**16.27**

**yeuel.**

**32.12.**

escape <sup>y</sup> iudgement of God? 4 Or despisest thou the riches of his bountifulnes and patience, and long sufferance, not knowing that the bountifulnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance? 5 But thou, after thine hardnes, and heart that cannot repent, \* heapest vp as a treasure vnto thy selfe wrath against the day of wrath, & of the declaration of the iust iudgement of God, 6 \* Who will reward euery man according to his works, 7 *That is*, to them which through patience in well doing seeke glory, & honour, & immortallitie, euerlasting life. 8 But vnto them <sup>y</sup> are contentious and disobey the trueth, & obey vnrighteousnes, *shalbe* indignation & wrath. 9 Tribulation & anguish *shalbe* vpon the soule of euery man that doeth euil: of the Iew first, & *also* of the Grecian. 10 But to euery man that doeth good, *shalbe* glory, and honour, and peace, to the Iew first, & *also* to the Grecian. 11 For there is no respect of persons with God. 12 For as many as haue sinned without the Lawe, shall perish also without the Law: and as many as haue sinned in the Law, *shalbe* iudged by the Law. 13 (For the hearers of the Lawe *are* not righteous before God, but the doers of the Lawe *shalbe* iustified. 14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Lawe, doe by nature the things *contained* in the Law, they hauing not the Lawe, are a Law vnto themselves, 15 Which shewe the effect of that Law writte in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts accusing

## C H A P. II.

one another, or excusing) 16 At the day when  
 God shal iudge y<sup>e</sup> secrets of men by Iesus Christ  
 according to my Gospel. 17 Behelde, thou art  
 called a lew. and restest in the Law, & gloriest in  
 God, 18 And knowest his will, & triest y<sup>e</sup> things  
 that descend from it, in that thou art instructed  
 by the Lawe: 19 And persvadest thy selfe that  
 thou art a guide of the blinde, a light of them  
 which are in darknes, 20 An instructor of them  
 which lacke discretion, a teacher of the vnlearn-  
 ed, which hast y<sup>e</sup> forme of knowledge, & of the  
 truth in the Law. 21 Thou therefore which tea-  
 chest another, teachest thou not thy selfe? thou  
 that preacheest, A man should not steale, dost  
 thou steale? 22 Thou that sayest a man should  
 not commit adulterie, dost thou commit adul-  
 terie? thou that abhorrest idoles, commitest  
 thou sacriledge? 23 Thou that gloriest in y<sup>e</sup> Law,  
 through breaking the Lawe, dishonourest thou  
 God? 24 For the Name of God is blasphemed  
 among the Gentiles through you, \* as it is writ-  
 ten. 25 For circumcision verily is profitable, if  
 thou doe the Law: but if thou be a transgressor  
 of the Law, thy circumcision is made vncircum-  
 cision. 26 Therefore if the vncircumcision keepe  
 the ordinances of the Law, shal not his vncircu-  
 mcision be counted for circumcision? 27 And shal  
 not vncircumcision which is by nature (if it keepe  
 the Law) condemne thee which by the letter and  
 circumcision art a transgressor of the Law? 28  
 For he is not a lew, which is one outward:

*Isai.*  
*52. 5.*  
*zek.*  
*36. 20.*

## TO THE ROMANES.

Neither is y<sup>e</sup> circumcision, which is outward in  
y<sup>e</sup> flesh. 29 But he is a Jew which is one within,  
& the circumcision is of y<sup>e</sup> heart in y<sup>e</sup> spirit, not in  
y<sup>e</sup> letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. 3. 9. *That all men be saved.*

**W**Hat is then the prebentment of the letter?  
Or what is the profit of circumcision?  
2 Much every manner of way: for chiefly because  
vnto them were of credite committed the oracles  
of God. 3 For what though some did not be-  
leeue, shall their vnbeliefe make y<sup>e</sup> faith of God  
without effecte? 4 God forbid: yea let God be  
true, and eevery man a liar, as it is written, That  
thou mightest be iustified in thy words, & over-  
come, when thou art iudged. 5 Now if our ius-  
tification shalbe counted the righteousness of  
God, what shall wee say? Is God vnrigateous  
which punisheth them (speake as a man)? 6 God  
forbid: else howe shall God iudge the world?  
7 For if the verity of God hath more abounded  
through my lie vnto this glory, why am I yet con-  
demned as a sinner? 8 And (as we are blamed,  
and as some blame us that we say) why do we not  
eate, that good may come to us? whose dam-  
nation is iust. 9 What then? are we more ex-  
cellent? No in no wise: for we have already pro-  
uened that all, both Iewes and Gentiles are vnder  
sinn. 10 As it is written, There is none righte-  
ous no not one. 11 There is none that iudgeth  
it iust: there is none (seeketh God) 12 They  
be all gone out of the way: they have bene

### CHAP. III.

made altogether vnpromisable there is none that  
doeth good, no not one. 13 \* Their throte is an *Pfal.*  
open sepulchre, they haue vsed their tongues to *51. 10.*  
decide the poyson of aspes & vnder their lips. *156.*  
14 \* Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitter- *140. 3.*  
nesse. 15 \* Their feet are swift to shed blood, *Psal.*  
16 Destruction & calamitie are in their wayes, *10. 7.*  
17 and y way of peace they haue not knowen. *156.*  
18 \* The feare of God is not before their eyes. *55. 7.*  
19 Now we know that whatsoeuer the Lawe *172.*  
saith it to them which are vnder y Lawe, *36. 33*  
that euery mouth may be stopped and all the  
world be subiect to the iudgement of God.  
20 Therefore by the workes of the Lawe shall  
no man be iustified in his sight for by the Lawe  
cometh the knowledge of sinne. 21 But now  
is the righteousness of God made manifest with-  
out the Lawe hauing witness of the Law & of the  
Prophets. 22 *To wit* the righteousness of God  
by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all and vpon all  
that beleue. 23 For there is no difference for  
all haue sinned, and are deprived of the glory of  
God. 24 And are iustified freely by his grace,  
through the redemption that is in Christ Iesus,  
25 Whom God hath set forth to be a reconcilia-  
tion through faith in his blood to declare his  
truthfullnes. by y forgiveness of the finnes that  
are passed, 26 through the patience of God, to  
shew at this time his righteousness y he might be  
iust, and a iustifier of him which is of the faith of  
Ihus. 27 Where is then the reioycing? It is ex.

## TO THE ROMANES.

cluded. By what Lawe? of workes? Nay, but by the Law of faith. 28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith without the workes of the Law. 29 *God*, is he the God of the Iewes only, & not of the Gentiles also? Yes, euen of the Gentiles also. 30 For it is one God who shall iustifie circumcision of faith, and vncircumcision through faith. 31 Doe we then make the Law of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the Lawe.

### CHAP 4. 1. *Of faith and workes.*

**W**Hat shall we say then, y Abraham our father hath found concerning the flesh? 2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, hee hath wherein to reioyce, but not with God. 3 For what sayeth the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, & it was counted to him for righteousness. 4 Nowe to him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by debt: 5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth in him y iustifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. 6 Euen as Dauid declareth the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, saying, 7 Blessed are they, whose iniquities are forgiven, & whose finnes are couered. 8 Blessed is the man, to whom the Lord imputeth not sinne. 9 *Came* this blessednes then vpon the circumcision onely, or vpon the vncircumcision also? For wee say, that faith was imputed to Abraham for righteousness. 10 How was it then imputed? when he was circumcised,

# C H A P. IIII.

circumcised, or vncircumcised? not when he was circumcised, but when he was vncircumcised. 11 After he receiued the signe of circumcision, as the seale of the righteousnesse of the faith which he had when he was vncircūcised, that he should be the Father of all them that beleue, not being circumcised, y<sup>e</sup> righteousnesse might be imputed to them also, 12 And the father of circumcision, not vnto them onely which are of the circumcision but vnto them also that walke in the steps of the faith of our father Abraham, *which he had when he was circumcised.* 13 For the promise, that he should be the heire of the world, was not *giuen* to Abraham or to his seede, through the Law, but through the righteousnesse of faith. 14 For if they which are of the Lawe, be heires, faith is made void, and the promise is made of none effect. 15 For the Law causeth wrath: for where no Lawe is, there is no transgression. 16 Therefore it is by faith, that it might come by grace, and the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Law: but also to y<sup>e</sup> which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the Father of vs all, 17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a father of many nations) *euē* before God whom he beleued, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not, as though they were. 18 Which Abraham aboue hope, beleued vnder hope, y<sup>e</sup> he should be the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken *to him*, So shall thy seede be, 19 And

## TO THE ROMANES.

he not weake in the faith, considering that  
 owne body which was nowe dead being almost  
 an hundred yeeres olde, neither the decaye of  
 Saraes wombe. 20 Neither did he doubt of the  
 promise of God through vnbeliefe, but was  
 strengthened in the faith, & gaue glory to God,  
 21 Being fully assured that hee which had pro-  
 mised, was also able to doe it. 22 And therefore  
 it was imputed to him for righteousness. 23 Now  
 it is not written for him onely, that it was im-  
 puted to him for righteousness, 24 But also for  
 vs to whom it shalbe imputed for righteousness,  
 which beleue in him that raised vp Iesus our  
 Lord from the dead, 25 Who was delivered for  
 death for our sinnes, and is risen againe for our  
 iustification.

### C H A P. 5. 1. Of Christs mediation.

**T**hen being iustified by faith, we haue peace  
 toward God through our Lord Iesus Christ.

*Ephē.* 2 \* By whom also through faith, wee haue had  
 2.18. this access into this grace, wherein we stand,  
 and reioyce vnder the hope of the glory of God.

*Jam.* 3 Neither ~~that~~ only, but also \* we reioyce in tri-  
 1.2. bulations, knowing that tribulation bringeth  
 forth patience, 4 And patience experience, and  
 experience hope, 5 And hope maketh not asha-  
 med, because the loue of God is shed abroad in

*Hebr.* our hearts by v<sup>e</sup> holy Ghost which is given vnto  
 9.15. vs. 6 For Christ whē we were yet of no strength,  
*1. per.* at his time dyed for the \* vngodly 7 Doubtlesse,  
 3.18. one will scarce dye for a righteous man, but yet  
 for

## C H A P. V.

for a good man it may bee that one dare dye,  
8 But God setteth out his loue toward vs, see-  
ing that while we were yet sinners Christ dyed  
for vs. 9 Much more then being nowe iustified  
by his blood, wee shall bee saved from wrath  
through him. 10 For if when we were enemies,  
wee were reconciled to God by the death of  
his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we  
shall be saved by his life, 11 And not onely so, but  
we shall reioyce in God through our Lord Iesus  
Christ, by whom wee haue nowe receiued the  
abundance. 12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne  
entered into the world, and death by sinne, and so  
death went ouer all men: in whom all men  
hine sinned. 13 For vnto the time of the Law  
was sinne in the world but sinne is not imputed,  
while there is no Lawe. 14 But death reigned  
from Adam to Moses, euen ouer them alio that  
sinned not after the like maner of the trans-  
gression of Adam, which was the figure of him  
that was to come. 15 But yet the gift is not so,  
as is the offence: for if through the offence of  
that one, many bee dead, much more the grace  
of God and the gift by grace, which is by one  
manifestus Christ, hath abounded vnto many.  
16 Neither is the gift *so, as that which entruin*  
*by one that sinned: for the fault came of one*  
*sinne vnto condemnation: but the gift is of*  
*many offences to iustification.* 17 For if by the  
offence of one, death reigned through one,  
much more shall they which receiue that abun-  
dance



## TO THE ROMANES.

dance of grace, and of that gift of that righteousnesse, reigne in life through one, *that is*, Iesus Christ, 18 Likewise then as by the offence of one, *the fault came* on all men to condemnation, so by the justifying of one, *the benefite abounded* toward al men to the iustification of life. 19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners: so by that obedience of that one shall many also be made righteous. 20 Moreouer the Lawe entred thereupon that the offence should abound: neuerthelesse, where sinne abounded *there* grace abounded much more: 21 That as sinne had reigned vnto death, so might grace also reigne by righteousnesse vnto eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

*Gala.*

CHAP. 6. 2. *Of sanctification.*

3.27. **W**Hat shall we say then? Shall we continue  
*Colos.* still in sinne, that grace may abound? God  
 2.12. forbid. 2 How shall we that are dead to sinne  
*Ephe.* liue yet therein? 3 Know ye not, \* that all we  
 4.23. which haue bin baptized into Iesus Christ, haue  
*colos.* bin baptized into his death? 4 \* We are buried  
 3.8. then with him by baptisme into his death, that  
*hebr.* like as Christ was raised vp from the dead to the  
 12. 1. glory of the Father, so we also should walke in  
 2.pet. newnesse of life 5 \* For if we be planted w<sup>th</sup> him  
 2.1. to the similitude of his death, euen so shall we be  
 1.Cor. to the similitude of his resurrection, 6 Knowing  
 6.14. this, that our old man is crucified with him, that  
 2.111. the body of sinne might be destroyed, & hence  
 3.11. forth we should not serue sinne. 7 For he is

dead

## C H A P. VI.

dead, is freed from sinne. 8 Wherefore, if we be  
 dead with Christ, wee beleue that we shall liue  
 also with him. 9 Knowing that Christ being rai-  
 sed from the dead, dieth no more: death hath no  
 more dominion ouer him. 10 For in that he di-  
 ed, he died once to sinne: but in that he liueth he  
 liueth to God. 11 Likewise thinke ye also, that  
 ye are dead to sinne, but are alieue to God in Je-  
 sus Christ our Lord. 12 Let not sin reigne there-  
 fore in your mortall body, that ye should obey  
 it in the lustes thereof. 13 Neither giue ye your  
 members as weapons of vnrighteousnesse vnto  
 sinne: but giue your selues vnto God, as they  
 that are alieue frō the dead, and giue your mem-  
 bers as weapons of righteousness vnto God.  
 14 For sinne shal not haue dominion ouer you:  
 for yee are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace.  
 15 What then, shal we sinne, because we are not  
 vnder the Lawe, but vnder grace? God forbid.  
 16 \* Know ye not, that to whomsoever ye giue *Iohn*  
 your selues as seruants to obey, his seruants yee *8. 34.*  
 are to whom yee obey, whether it be of sinne *2 pet.*  
 vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousness? *2. 19.*  
 17 But God be thanked, that yee haue bene the  
 seruants of sinne, but ye haue obeyed from the  
 heart vnto the forme of the doctrine, whereun-  
 to ye were deliuered. 18 Being then made free  
 frō sinne, ye are made the seruants of righteouf-  
 nesse. 19 I speake after the maner of man, be-  
 cause of the infirmitie of your flesh: for as yee  
 haue giuen your members seruants to vnclean-  
 nes,

## TO THE ROMANES.

nes, and to iniquitie, to *committ* iniquities, so not  
 giue your members seruants vnto righteousness  
 in holinesse. 20 For when ye were the seruants  
 of sin, ye were freed frō righteousness. 21 What  
 fruit had ye then in those things, whereof ye are  
 now ashamed? For the ende of those things  
 death. 22 But now being freed from sinne and  
 made seruants vnto God, ye haue your fruits in  
 holinesse, & the end, euerlasting life. 23 For the  
 wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God  
 eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. 7. 1 *Of the Law.* 14 *Of man,*

**K** Now ye not, brethren (for I speake to them  
 that knowe the Law,) that the Law hath do-  
 minion ouer a man as long as he liueth. 2 As  
 the woman which is in subiection to a man,  
 bound by the Law to the man, while he liueth:  
 but if the man be dead, shee is delivered from  
 the Law of the man. 3 So then, if while shee  
 liueth, shee take another man, she shall be called  
 an adulteresse: but if a man be dead, shee is free  
 from the Law, so that shee is not an adulteresse  
 though she take another man. 4 So ye my bre-  
 thren, are dead also to the Law by the body of  
 Christ, that ye should be vnto another, w<sup>ch</sup> is  
 to him that is raysed vp from the dead, that we  
 should bring forth fruit vnto God. 5 For when  
 wee were in the flesh, the affections of sinnes,  
 which were by the Law, had force in our mem-  
 bers, to bring forth fruit vnto death. 6 But now  
 wee are deliuered from the Law, he being dead

## C H A P. VII.

in whom we were holden, that we should serue  
 in newnes of Spirit, and not in the oldnes of the  
 letter. 7 What shall we say then? Is the Lawe  
 sinne? God forbid Nay, I knew not sinne, but by  
 the Lawe: for I had not knowen lust, except the  
 Lawe had sayde, \* Thou shalt not lust. 8 But *Exod.*  
 sinne tooke an occasion by the commandement, 20 17.  
 and wrought in me all maner of concupiscence: *Leuit.*  
 for without the Lawe sinne is dead. 9 For I once  
 was alive, without the Lawe: but when the com-  
 mandement came, sinne reuiued, 10 But I died:  
 and the same cō mandement which was *ordained*  
 to life, was found to bee vnto mee vnto death.  
 11 For sinne tooke occasion by the commande-  
 ment, and deceiued mee, and thereby slewe mee.  
 12 Wherefore the Lawe \* is holy, and that com- *1. Tim.*  
 mandement is holy, and iust, and good. 13 Was *1.8.*  
 that then which is good, made death vnto mee?  
 God forbid: but sinne, that it might appeare sin,  
 through death in mee by that which is good,  
 our sinne might be out of measure sinnefull by  
 the commandement. 14 For we know that the  
 Lawe is spirituall. but I am carnall, sold vnder  
 sinne. 15 For I allow not that which I doe: for  
 that I would, that doe I not: but what I hate,  
 I doe. 16 If I doe then that which I would  
 not consent to *the* Law, that it is good. 17 Now  
 it is no more I, that doe it, but sinne that  
 dwelleth in me. 18 For I know, that in me, that  
 is in me, dwelleth no good thing: for to  
 be present with mee: but I finde no meanes

## TO THE ROMANES.

to performe that which is good. 19 For I doe not the good thing, which I would, but the euill which I would not, that do I. 20 Now if I doe that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but the sinne that dwelleth in me. 21 I find then that when I would doe good, I am thus yoked, that euill is present with me. 22 For I delite in the Law of God, concerning the inner man: 23 But I see another Law in my members, rebelling against the law of my minde, and leading me captiue vnto the Law of sinne, which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer mee from the body of this death? 25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lorde. Then I my selfe in my minde serue the Lawe of God, but in my flesh the Law of sinne.

CHAP. 8. *1 The faithfull assured saluation.*

**N**OW then there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2 For the Law of the Spirit of life, which is in Christ Iesus, hath freed mee from the Law of sinne and of death. 3 For (that that was impossible to the Law, in as much as it was weake, because of the flesh) God sending his owne Sonne, in the similitude of sinfull flesh, and for sinne, condemned sinne in the flesh, 4 That that righteousness of the Law might bee fulfilled in vs, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 5 For they that are after the flesh, saour the things of the flesh but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the

**CHAPTER VIII**  
Spirit. 6 For the wisdom of the flesh is death:  
but the wisdom of the Spirit is life and peace,  
7 Because the wisdom of the flesh is enemie a-  
gainst God: for it is not subject to the Law of  
God, neither in deede can bee. 8 So then they  
that are in the flesh, cannot please God. 9 Now  
ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit because  
the Spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any  
man hath not the Spirit of Christ, the same is  
not his. 10 And if Christ be in you, the body is  
dead because of sinne: but the Spirit is life for  
righteousnes sake. 11 But if the Spirit of him  
that rayed vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you,  
he that rayed vp Christ from the dead, shal also  
quicken your mortall bodies, by his Spirit that  
dwelleth in you. 12 Therefore, brethren, we  
are debtors not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh:  
13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but  
if ye mortifie the deeds of the body by the Spi-  
rit, ye shal liue. 14 For as many as are led by the  
Spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.  
15 For ye haue not receiued the Spirit of bon-  
dage to feare againe: but yee haue receiued the  
Spirit of adoption, whereby wee cry Abba, Fa-  
ther. 16 The same Spirit beareth witnes with  
our Spirit that we are the children of God. 17 If  
we be children, we are also heires, euen the heires  
of God, and heires annexed with Christ: if so be  
that we suffer with him, that we may also be glo-  
rified with him. 18 For I count that the affli-  
ctions of this present time are not worthy of the  
glory

## TO THE ROMANES.

glory which shall bee shewed vnto vs. 19 For  
 the feruent desire of the creature waiteth when  
 the sonnes of God shalbe reueiled, 20 Because  
 the creature is subiect to vanitie, not of it owne  
 wil, but by reason of him, which hath subiect it  
 vnder hope, 21 Because the creature also shall  
 bee deliuered from the bondage of corruption  
 into the glorious libertie of the sonnes of God.  
 22 For we know that euery creature groaneth  
 with vs also, and trauaileth in paine together,  
 vnto this present. 23 And not only the crea-  
 ture, but we also which haue the first fruits of the  
 Spirit, euen we doe sigh in our selues, waiting  
 for the adoption, *euen* the redemption of  
 our body. 24 For wee are saued by hope: but  
 hope that is seene, is no hope: for howe can a  
 man hope for that which he seeth? 25 But if we  
 hope for that we see not, we doe with patience  
 abide for it. 26 Like wise the Spirit also helpeth  
 our infirmities, for wee know not what to pray  
 as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh re-  
 quest for vs with sighes, which can not bee ex-  
 pressed. 27 But hee that searcheth the hearts,  
 knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit, for  
 he maketh request for the Saintes, according to  
 the wil of God. 28 Also we know that all things  
 worke together for the best vnto them that loue  
 God, euen to them that are called of his pur-  
 pose. 29 For those which he knewe before he  
 also predestinated to be made like to the image  
 of his Sonne, that he might be the first borne  
 among

2. Cor.  
 21. 28.

## C H A P. IX,

mong many brethren 30 Moreouer whom he predestinated, them also he called, and whom he called, them also he iustified, & whom he iustified them also he glorified. 31 What shal we then say to these things? If God bee on our side, who can be against vs? 32 Who spared not his own Sonne, but gaue him for vs all to death, howe shall hee not with him giue vs all things also? 33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? *is* a God that iustificieth, 34 Who shall condemne? *is* a Christ which is dead, yea or rather, which is risen againe, who is also at the right hand of God, & maketh request also for vs. 35 Who shal separate vs from the loue of Christ? shall tribulation, or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sword? 36 As it is written, \* For thy sake are we killed al day *psal.* long: we are counted as sheepe for y slaughter. *44.28* 37 Neuerthelesse, in al these things we are more then conquerours through him that loued vs. 38 For I am perswaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, 39 Nor height, nor deapth, nor any other creature shall bee able to separate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Iesus our Lord.

### C H A P 9 10. Of Predesination.

I say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,  
2 That I haue great heauinesse, & continuall sorrow in mine heart. 3 For I would with my selfe



to be separate from Christ, for my brethren that are my kinsmen according to the flesh, 4 Which are the Israelites to whom no tainteth the adop-

*Chap.* tion, and the glory, and the<sup>e</sup> covenants, & the gi-  
2. 17. uing of the Law and the service of God, and the  
*ephes.* promises. 5 Of whom are the fathers, and of  
3. 12. whom concerning the flesh Christ came, who

*Chap.* God ouer all, blessed for euer, Amen. 6 Not  
3. 28. with standing it cannot be that the word of God  
should take none effect: for all they are not Is-  
rael, which are of Israel: 7 Neither are all

*Gene.* children, because they are the seede of Abraham:  
but,\* in Isaac shall thy seed be called: 8 That is,  
21. 12. they which are the children of the flesh are not  
*hebr.* the children of God: \* but the children of the  
11. 18. promise are counted for the seed. 9 For this is

*Gen.* a word of promise, \* In this same time will I  
4. 28. come, and Sara shall haue a sonne. 10 Neither is  
*Gene.* onely *Isa. 64.* she, but also \* Rebecca when she was  
18. 18. conceived by one, *Gen.* by our father Isaac: yet

*Gene.* yet the children were borne and when they had  
35. 21. neither done good nor euill (that the purpose  
of God might remaine according to election,  
not by works, but by him that calleth.) 12 And yet

*Gene.* sayd vnto her, \* The elder shall serue the younger.  
25. 23. 13 As it is written, \* I haue loved Jacob, and  
*Mal.* haue hated Esau. 14 What shall we saye to

1. 2. Is there vnrighteousnes with God? God forbid.  
*Exod.* 15 For he saith to Moses,\* I wil haue mercy on  
33. 19 him, to whom I wil shew mercie: and will shew  
compassion on him, on whom I will haue com-

passion. 16 So then it is not in him that will-  
 eth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that  
 sheweth mercie. 17 For the Scripture saith vn-  
 to Pharao, \* For this same purpose haue I stirred *Exod.*  
 thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee & 9. 16.  
 that my Name might be declared throughout all  
 the earth. 18 Therefore he hath mercy on whom  
 he wil, and whom he wil, he hardeneth. 19 I thou  
 wilt say then vnto me, Why doeth hee yet com-  
 plaine? for who hath resisted his will? 20 But,  
 O man, who art thou that pleadedst againe God?  
 \* Shall the thing formed say to him that formed *Isa.*  
 it, Why hast thou made mee thus? \* Hath not 45. 9.  
 the potter power of y clay to make of the same *Jer.*  
 lump one vessell to honour, and another to dish- 18. 6.  
 honour? 12 *What* and if God would, to shew  
 his wrath, and to make his power known, suf-  
 fering with long patience the vessels of wrath, pre-  
 pared to destruction. 23 And that he might de-  
 clare the riches of his glory vpon the vessels of  
 mercy, which hee hath prepared vnto glory?  
 24 Then vs, whom hee hath called, not of the  
 Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles, 25 As he  
 saith also in *Osée*, \* I will call them, My people, *Hose.*  
 which were not my people: and her, Beloued, 2. 23.  
 which was not beloued. 26 And it shall bee in *1. pet.*  
 the place where it was sayd vnto them, \* Ye are 2. 10.  
 not my people, that there they shall bee called, *Hose.*  
 The children of the liuing God. 27 Also *Esaías* 1. 10.  
 crieth concerning Israel, \* Though the number of *Isa.*  
 the children of Israel were as the sand of the sea, 20. 22.

TO THE ROMANES.

yet shall but a remnant be saued. 28 For he will make his accompt, and gather it into a short summe with righteounesse: for the Lorde will make a short count in the earth. 29 \* And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of hostes had left vs a seede, we had bene made as Sodom, and had bene like to Gomorrha. 30 What shal we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not righteounesse, haue attained vnto righteousness, euen the righteousness which is of faith. 31 But Israel which followed the Law of righteousness, could not attaine vnto the Law of righteousness. 32 Wherefore? Because *they sought it* not by faith, but as *it were* by the workes of the Lawe: for, they haue stumbled at the stumbling stone, 33 As it is written, \* Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and a rocke to make men fall: and euery one that beleueth in him, shall not bee ashamed.

*Isay*  
29.

*Psal.*  
118.  
22.

CHAP. 10. 4. *The effects of election.*

Brethren, mine heartes desire and prayer to God for Israel is that they might bee saued. 3 For I heare them recorde. that they haue the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge. 3 For they, being ignorant of the righteousness of God, and going about to stablish their owne righteounesse, haue not submitted themselues to the righteounesse of God, 4 \* For Christ is the end of the Law for righteousness vnto euery one *Zeni.* that beleueth. 5 For Moses thus describeth the 18. 5. righteounesse which is of the Lawe, \* That the

## C H A P. X.

man which doeth these things, shall live thereby.

6 But y<sup>e</sup> righteousnes which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, \* Say not in thine heart, Who shall *Deut.*  
ascend into heauen? (that is to bring Christ from *30.12*  
aboue) 7 Or who shall descend into the deepe?

(that is to bring Christ againe from the dead.)

8 But what saith it? \* The worde is nere thee, *Deut.*  
*encl.* in thy mouth, & in thine heart. This is the *30.14*  
word of faith which we preach. 9 For if thou

shalt cōfesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and  
shalt beleue in thine heart, that God raised him  
vp from the dead, thou shalt be saued. 10 For  
with the heart man beleueth vnto righteousnes,  
and with the mouth man confesseth to saluation.

11 For the Scripture saith, \* Whosoever beleue- *I say*  
th in him, shall not be ashamed. 12 For there is *28.16*  
no difference betweene the Iew & the Grecian:

for he that is Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all, that  
cal on him. 13 \* For whosoever shall cal vpon the *Ioel*  
Name of the Lord, shall be saued. 14 But how *1.3*

shall they call on him, in whome they haue not  
beleueed? and how shall they beleue in him, of  
whom they haue not heard? and how shall they  
heare without a preacher? 15 And how shall  
they preach, except they be sent? as it is written,

\* Howe beautifull are the feete of them which *I say*  
bring glad tidings of peace, & bring glad tidings *52. 7*

of good things. 16 But they haue not al obeyed  
the Gospel: for Esaias saith, \* Lord, who hath *I say*

beleueed our report? 17 Then saith it by hea- *53. 1*  
ring, and hearing by the word of God. 18 But I

## TO THE ROMANES.

**Pfal.** demand, Have they not heard? \* No doubt then  
**119.3.** sound went out through all the earth and to it  
 wordes into the endes of the world. **12** But I  
 demand. Did not Israel knowe God? First Moyses

**Deu.** saith, \* I wil promoke you to enuie by a nation  
**32.21.** that is not a nation, and by a foolish nation I

**44.** wil anger you. \* And Elia is bold, and saith,

**65. 1.** I was toind of them that sought me not & haue  
 bin made manifest to them that asked not after

**7/47** me. **21** And vnto Israel he saith, \* All the day

**65. 2.** long haue I stretched forth mine hand vnto a  
 disobedient and gainesaying people.

CHAP. 1. 1. *unward for we no more  
 of the heart.*

**I** Demand then, Hath God cast away his peo-

**1** ple? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of  
 the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

**2** God hath not cast away his people which hee  
 knew before. Know yee not what the Scriptures

saith of I haue how he conuinceth with God

**2.Kin.** against Israel, saying, \* Lord they haue killed thy

**19.15.** Prophets, and digged downe thine altars: and I

am left alone, & they seeke my life? **3** But what

**2.Kin.** saith the answer of God to him? I haue refu-

**19.18.** sed vnto my selfe seven thousand men, which

haue not bowed the knee to Baal. **4** Euen to

then at this present time is there a remaine ac-

cording to the election of grace. **5** And if it be

of grace, it is no more of workes, or

else were grace no more grace: but if it be of

workes, it is no more grace: or else were

workes no more workes. **7** What then? Israel

# CHAP. XI.

hath not obtained that hee sought: but the ele-  
 ction hath obtained it, and the rest hath bene  
 hardened, 8 According as it is written, *God* *Iſai.*  
 hath giuen them the ſpirit of ſlumber, eyes that 6 9.  
 they ſhould not ſee, and eares that they ſhould  
 not heare vnto this day. 9 And David ſaith,  
 \*Let their table be made a mine, and a net, and a *Pſal.*  
 ſtumbling blocke, euen for a recompence vnto 69. 23.  
 them. 10 Let their eyes be darkened that they ſee  
 not, & bow downe their backe alwaies. 11 I de-  
 mand then, Haue they ſtumbled, that they ſhould  
 fall? God forbid: but through their fall, ſalvati-  
 on *cometh* vnto the Gentiles to prouoke them  
 to follow them. 12 Wherefore if the fall of them  
 be the riches of the world, and the diminiſhing  
 of them the riches of the Gentiles, howe much  
 more ſhall their abundance be? 13 For in that  
 I ſpeake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the  
 Apoſtle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office,  
 14 *to ſee* if by any meanes I might prouoke  
 ſome of my fleſh to follow them and might ſaue  
 ſome of them. 15 For if the caſting away of them  
 be a reconciling of the world, what ſhall the re-  
 ceiving be, but life from the dead? 16 For if the  
 ſmall fruits be holy, ſo be the whole lump: and if  
 the root be holy, ſo are the branches. 17 And  
 though ſome of the branches be broken off, and  
 thou being a wilde Olive tree, waſt graſt in for  
 them, & made partaker of the root, & fatneſſe of  
 the Olive tree: 18 Boaſt not thy ſelfe againſt the  
 branches: and if thou boaſt thy ſelfe, thou bea-

## TO THE ROMANES.

rest not the roote, but the roote thee. 19 Thou wilt say then. The branches are broken off that I might be grafted in. 20 Well: through vnbeliefe they are broken off, and thou standest by faith: be not hie minded, but feare. 21 For if God spared not the naturall branches, *take heede*, lest he also spare not thee. 22 Beholde therefore the bountifulnesse & seueritie of God: toward them which haue fallen, seueritie: but toward thee, bountifulnesse if thou continue in *his* bountifulnesse: or els thou shalt also be cut off. 23 And they also, if they abide not still in vnbeliefe, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graffe them in againe. 24 For if thou wast cut out of the Oliue tree, which was wilde by nature, & wast graffed contrary to nature in a right Oliue tree. howe much more shall they that are by nature, be graffed in their owne Oliue tree? 25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this secret (lest ye should be arrogant in your selues) that partly obstinacy is come to Israel, vntill the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in. 26 And so *Isai.* all Israel shalbe saued, as it is written, \* The deuiler shall come out of Sion, and shall tunc a way the vngodlinesse from Iacob. 27 And this *Isai* is my couenant to them, \* When I shall take away their sinnes. 28 As concerning the Gospel, *37.9.* they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloued for the fathers sakes. 29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance. 30 For euen as ye in time

past

## C H A P. XII.

past haue not beleueed God, yet haue now ob-  
 tained mercy through their vubeliefe: 31 Euen so  
 now haue they not beleueed by y<sup>e</sup> mercy shew-  
 ed vnto you, that they also may obtaine mercy.  
 32 For God hath shut vp all in vnbeliefe, that  
 he might haue mercy on all. 33 O the deepenesse  
 of the riches both of the wisdom, & knowledge  
 of God! how vnssearchable are his iudgements,  
 and his wayes past finding out! 34 \* For who *Iob 41*  
 hath knowen the minde of the Lord? or who *2.1/41.*  
 was his counsellor? 35 Or who hath giuen vn- *40.13.*  
 to him first, and he shalbe recompensed? 36 For  
 of him, and through him, and for him, are all  
 things: to him be glory for euer. Amen.

CHAP. 12. 1. *The right Christian life described.*

**I** Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mer-  
 cies of God, that ye giue vp your bodies a li-  
 uing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, *which*  
 is your reasonable seruing of God. 2 And fa-  
 shion not your selues like vnto this world, but  
 be ye changed by the renewing of your minde,  
 that ye may \* prooue what the good, & accepta- *Ephes.*  
 ble & perfect wil of God is. 3 For I say through *5. 17.*  
 the grace that is giuen vnto mee, to euery one *1. thes.*  
 that is among you, that no man presume to vn- *4. 3.*  
 derstand aboue y<sup>e</sup> which is meete to vnderstand,  
 but that hee vnderstand according to sobrietie,  
 as God hath dealt to euery man the \* measure *1. Cor.*  
 of faith. 4 For as wee haue many members in *12. 11.*  
 one body, and all members haue not one office,  
 5 So we being many are one body in Christ, and  
 euery



## TO THE ROMANES.

**1. Pet.** every one, one anothers members. **6** \* Seeing  
**4. 10.** then that we haue gifts that are diuers, accor-  
 ding to the grace that is giuen vnto vs, whether  
 we haue prophesie, or vnto p<sup>r</sup>ophetie according  
 to the proportion of faith: **7** Or an office, or  
 vs wait on the office: or hee that teacheth on  
**Mat.** teaching: **8** Or, he that exhorteth, on exhorta-  
**6. 2.** tion: he that distributeth, *et* *hunc* *et* *hunc* \* with sim-  
**Am.** plicie: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that  
**3. 15.** sheweth mercy with cheerefulnesse. **9** *et* *hunc* *et* *hunc*  
**Ephe.** *et* without dissimulation. \* Abhorre that which  
**4. 2.** is euill, & cleaue vnto that which is good. **10** *et* *hunc*  
**2. Pet.** affectioned to loue one another with brotherly  
**3. 8.** loue. In giuing honor, goe one before another,  
**Luke** *et* Not slothfull to doe service: fervent in spi-  
**18. 1.** rit seruing the Lord: **12** Reioycing in hope,  
**Hebr.** patient in tribulation. \* continuing in prayer:  
**13. 2.** *et* \* Distributing vnto the necessities of the Saints:  
**Mat.** \* giuing your selues to hospitality. **14** \* Blesse  
**5. 42.** them which persecute you: blesse, *et* *hunc* *et* *hunc*, and  
**Thou.** curse not. **15** Reioyce with them that reioyce, &  
**3. 7.** weepe with them that weepe. **16** Be of like af-  
**Prov.** fection one towards another: \* be not haughty-  
**20. 2.** ded: but make your selues equal to them of the  
**Hebr.** lower sort: be not wise in your selues. **17** \* Re-  
**12. 14.** compense to no man euill for euill: but if  
**Eccle.** things honest in the sight of all men. **18** \* If it  
**2. 18** be possible, as much as in you is, haue peace w<sup>th</sup>  
**Deut.** all men. **19** Dearely beloved, \* auenge not your  
**32. 35.** selues, but giue place vnto wrath: for it is mine.  
**Prov.** ten, \* Vengeance is mine: I will: repay, *et* *hunc* *et* *hunc*  
**55. 22.** Lord. **20** Therefore, if thine enemy hunger,

## C H A P. XIII.

feede him: if he thirst, giue him drinke: for in so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire on his head. 21 Be not overcome of euil, but overcome euill with goodnesse.

### CHAP. 13. 1 Obedience to Magistrates.

**I** Let \* every soule be subject vnto the higher Titus  
 powers: for there is no power but of God: 3.1.  
 and the powers that bee, are ordeined of God. 1 pet.  
 2 Who soeuer therefore resisteth the power re- 2.13.  
 sisteth the ordinance of God: and they that re-  
 sist, shall receiue to themselves condemnation.  
 3 For Magistrates are not to be feared, in good  
 works, but in euill. Wilt thou then be without  
 feare of the power? do well: so shalt thou haue  
 praise of the same. 4 For he is the minister of  
 God for thy wealthe: but if thou doe euill, feare:  
 for he beareth not the sword for nought: for he  
 is the minister of God to take vengeance on him  
 that doeth euill. 5 Wherefore we must be sub-  
 iect, not because of wrath onely, but also for  
 conscience sake. 6 For, for this cause wee pay  
 tribute: for they are Gods ministers, apply-  
 ing themselves for the same things. 7 \* Giue to Mat.  
 all men therefore their duty: tribute, to whom 23.11.  
 tribute, custome, to whom custome: feare,  
 to whom feare: honour to whom ye owe ho-  
 nour. 8 Owe nothing to any man but to loue  
 one another: for hee that loueth another, hath  
 fulfilled the Law. 9 For this, \* Thou shalt not Exod.  
 commit adulterie, Thou shalt not kill, Thou 20.14.  
 shalt not slea, Thou shalt not beare false wit-  
 nesse,

## TO THE ROMANES.

nesse, Thou shalt not couet : and if there be any other commaundement, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, *even* in this, \* Thou shalt loue

*Zenit.* thy neighbour as thy selfe. 10 Loue doeth not  
19 18. euil to his neighbour: therefore is loue the \*ful-

*1. Tim.* filling of the Law. 11 And that, considering the  
1. 1. season, that *it is* now time that wee should arise

from sleepe : for now is our saluation neerer, then when we beleeued it. 12 The night is past, and the day is at hand : let vs therefore cast away the works of darknesse, and let vs put on the armour of light, 13 So that we walke honestly,

*Luke* as in the day: not in \* gluttony & drunkennesse,  
21. 34. neither in chambering and wantonnesse, nor in

*Gala.* strife & enuying: 14 \* But put yee on the Lord  
5. 16. I E S V S C H R I S T, and take no thought for  
5. 16. the flesh, so fulfill the lusts of it.

2. 11. C H A 14. 1 *Of offence,* 10 *and rash iudgement.*

**H**Im that is weake in the faith, receiue vnto you. *but* not for controuerfies of disputations. 2 One beleeueth that hee may eate of all things : and another which is weake, eateth herbes. 3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, condemne him that eateth : for God hath receiued him. 4 \* Who art thou that condem-

*James* nest another mans seruant? he standeth or falleth  
4. 12. to his owne master: yea, he shalbe established for God is able to make him stand. 5 This man esteemeth one day aboue another day, and another man counteth euery day alike : let euery

man be fully perswaded in his mind. 6 He that obserueth the day, obserueth it to the Lord; and hee that obserueth not the day, obserueth it not to the Lord. Hee that eateth, eateth to the Lord: for hee giueth God thanks: and he that eateth not, eateth not to y<sup>e</sup> Lord, & giueth God thanks. 7 For none of vs liueth to himselfe, neither doth any die to himselfe. 8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lord: or whether wee die, we die vnto the Lorde: whether wee liue therefore, or die, wee are the Lords. 9 For Christ therefore died & rose againe, & reuiued, that he might be Lord both of the dead and the quicke. 10 But why dost thou condemne thy brother? or why dost thou despise thy brother? \* for wee shall all appeare before the iudgement seat of Christ. 11 For it is written, \* I liue, saith the Lord, and every knee shall bow to me, & all tongues shall confesse vnto God. 12 So then every one of vs shall giue accounts of himselfe to God. 13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: but vse *your* iudgement rather in this, that no man put an occasion to fall, or a stumbling blocke before *his* brother. 14 I know, and am perswaded through the Lord Iesus, that there is nothing vncleane of it selfe: but vnto him that iudgeth any thing to be vncleane, to him *it is* vncleane. 15 But if thy brother be grieved for the meate, now walkest thou not charitably: \* de- stroy not him with thy meate, for whom Christ died. 16 Cause not your commoditie to be euil spoken

2. Cor.

1. 10.

Isa.

45. 23.

phil.

2. 10.

2. Cor.

8. 11.

spoken of 17 For the kingdome of God is not  
meate nor drinke, but righte ousnesse and peace,  
and ioy in the holy Ghost. 18 For whosoever  
in theſe things ſerueth Chriſt, is acceptable vnto  
God, and is approoued of men. 19 Let vs then  
follow thoſe things which concerne peace, and  
wherewith one may edifie another. 20 I tell you  
not the worke of God for meats ſake: all things  
indeede are pure: but if a man which  
eateth with offence. 21 It is good neither to eat  
fleſh, nor to drinke wine, nor any thing whereby  
thy brother ſtumbleth, or is offended, or made  
weake. 22 Haſt thou faith? haue it with thy  
ſelfe before God: bleſſed is hee that condemneth  
not himſelfe in that thing which he alloweth.  
23 For he that doubteth, is condemned if  
he eate, becauſe he eateth not of faith: ſo what-  
ſoever is not of faith, is ſinne.

CHAP. 15. 1 To beare with infirmities.

WE which are ſtrong ought to beare the in-  
firmities of the weak, and not to pleaſe  
our ſelues. 2 Therefore let every man pleaſe his  
neighbour in that that is good to edification.  
3 For Chriſt alſo would not pleaſe himſelfe but  
as it is written, \* The rebukes of them which re-  
buked thee, fell on me. 4 For whatſoever things  
are written aforetime, are written for our learn-  
ing, that wee through patience, and comfort of  
the Scriptures might haue hope. 5 Now the

Titus

1.15.

2. Cor

8.13.

Titus

69.10.

1. Cor.

13.10.

God of patience and conſolation giue you that  
ye be like minded one towards another, accord-

ding to Christ Iesus, 6 That ye with one mind,  
 and with one mouth may praise God, even the  
 Father of our Lord Iesus Christ. 7 Wherefore  
 receive yee one another, as Christ also received  
 us to the glory of God. 8 Now I say, that Iesus  
 Christ was a minister of the circumcision, for  
 the truth of God, to confirme the promises  
 made unto the fathers. 9 And let the Gentiles  
 praise God for his mercy, as it is written, \* For *Psal.*  
 this cause I will confesse thee among the Gen. 18 50.  
 tiles, and sing vnto thy Name. 10 And againe  
 he saith, \* Reioyce, yee Gentiles, with his people. *Deut.*  
 11 And againe, \* Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, 32 43.  
 and laude him, all people together. 12 And as *Psal.*  
 game Esaus saith, \* There shall be a root of Iesse, 117. 7.  
 & he that shall rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, *Isay*  
 in him shall the Gentiles trust. 13 Now the God 11. 10.  
 of hope fill you with all ioy, and peace in beke-  
 uing, that yee may abound in hope through the  
 power of the holy Ghost. 14 And I my selfe al-  
 so am perswaded of you, my brethren, that yee  
 also are full of goodnesse & filled with all know-  
 ledge, and are able to admonish one another.  
 15 Notwithstanding, brethren, I haue somewhat  
 boldly after a sort written vnto you as one that  
 purteth you in remembrance, through the grace  
 that is given mee of God. 16 That I should be  
 the minister of Iesus Christ towarde the Gentiles,  
 ministering the Gospel of God, that the offering  
 of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being  
 sanctified by the holy Ghost. 17 I haue therefore  
 whereof

TO THE ROMANES.

whereof I may reioyce in Christ Iesus, in those things which *pertaine* to God. 18 For I dare not speake of any thing, which Christ hath not wrought by me, *to make* the Gentiles obediēt in word & deed. 19 With the power of signes & wonders by the power of the spirite of Gods: so that from Hierusalem and round about vnto Illyricum, I haue caused to abound the Gospel of Christ. 20 Yea so I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, least I should haue built on another mans foundation.

**Esa.** 21 But as it is written, \* To whom he was not  
**32.15.** spoken of, they shal see *him*, and they that heard  
**Chap.** not, shall vnderstand *him*. 22 \* Therefore also  
**1.11.** I haue bene oft let to come vnto you: 23 But  
**3.17.** now seeing I haue no more place in these quar-  
**3.17.** ters, and also haue \* bene desirous many yeeeres a-  
 gone to come vnto you, 24 When I shall take  
 my iourney into Spaine, I wil come to you. for I  
 trust to see you in my iourney, & to be brought  
 on my way thitherward by you, after that I  
 haue bene somewhat filled with your *company*.  
 25 But now go I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto  
 the Saints. 26 For it hath pleased them of  
 Macedonia & Achaia. to make a certaine distri-  
 bution vnto the poore Saints which are at Hierusalem.  
 27 For it hath pleased them, and their  
**1.5or.** debtors are they: \* for if the Gentiles be made  
**6.11.** partakers of their spirituall things, their duty is  
 also to minister vnto them in carnall things.  
 28 When I haue therefore performed this, and

## C H A P. XVI.

haue sealed them this fruite, I will passe by you into Spaine. 29 And I know when I come, that I shall come to you with abundance of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ. 30 Also brethren, I beseech you for our Lorde Iesus Christes sake, and for the loue of the Spirit, that yee would strive w<sup>th</sup> me by prayers to God for me, 31 That I may bee deliuered from them which are disobedient in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue to doe at Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saints, 32 That I may come vnto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed. 33 Thus the God of peace be with you all, Amen.

### C H A P. 16. 17. To be ware of Sectaries.

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of y<sup>e</sup> Church of Cenchrea: 2 That yee receive her in y<sup>e</sup> Lord, as it becometh Saints, and that yee assist her in whatsoeuer busines she needeth of your ayde for she hath giuen hospitality vnto many, & to me also. 3 Greete \*Priscilla, & Aquila my fellow helpers in Christ Iesus. 4 Which haue for my life layd downe their owne neckes. Vnto whome not I onely giue thanks, but also al the Churches of the Gentiles. 5 Likewise greet the Church that is in their house. Salute my brother Epinetus, which is the first fruite of Achaia in Christ. 6 Greete Mary which bestowed much labour on vs. 7 Salute Andronicus & Iunia my cousins and fellow prisoners, which are notable among the Apostles

*Alls*  
18. 3.



and were in Christ before me. 8 Greete Ampli-  
as my beloued in the Lord. 9 Salute Vibanas  
our felow helper in Christ, and Stachys my be-  
loued. 10 Salute Apelles approued in Christ.  
Salute them which are of Aristobulus *friende*.  
11 Salute Herodion my kinseman. Greete them  
which are of the *friendes* of Narcissus which are  
in the Lord. 12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa,  
which *women* labour in the Lord. Salute the be-  
loued Peris, which *women* hath laboured much  
in the Lord. 13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord,  
and his mother and mine. 14 Greete Alsynchus,  
Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the  
brethren which are with them. 15 Salute Philo-  
logus, and Iulias, Nereas, and his sister, & Cleo-  
pas, & al the Saints which are with them. 16 Sa-  
lute one another with an \*holy kisse. The Char-  
ches of Christ salute you. 17 Now I beseech you  
brethren, marke them diligently which cause di-  
uision and offences, contrary to the doctrine  
which ye haue learned, \* & auoyd them. 18 For  
they y are such, serue not the Lord Iesus Christ,  
but their owne bellies. & with faile speach and  
flattering deceiue y hearts of the simple. 19 For  
your obedience is come abroad among all. I am  
glad therefore of you: but yet I would haue  
you wise vnto that whj his good, and simple  
concerning euill. 20 The God of peace shal  
tread Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace  
of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. 21 Greete  
Klotheus my helper, and Lucius, and Iason, and

1. Cor.  
16. 20.  
2. Cor.  
13. 12.  
1. pet.  
3. 14.  
2. Ioh.  
20.  
  
Affe  
15. 1.  
phil  
2. 19.

Solipater my kinsmen, Salute you. 22 I Tertius which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the Lord. 23 Gaius mine hoste and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erastus the steward of the city saluteth you, & Quartus a brother. 24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all, Amen. 25 \* To him now that is of power to *Eph. 3. 20.* establish you according to my Gospel & preaching of Iesus Christ, by \* the reuelation of the *Eph. 3. 9.* myserie, which was kept secret since the world began: 26 (But now is opened, and published *col. 1. 26.* among all nations by the Scriptures of the Prophets, at the commandement of the euerlasting *2. Tim. 1. 10.* God for the obedience of faith.) 27 To God, for ever, Amen. *1. 3.*

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, and sent by Phoebe, seruant of the Church which is at Cenchrea.

## THE FIRST EPISTLE OF Paul to the Corinthians.

CHAP. I. 12. *Diuisions reprehended. 17 He calleth them from pride to humilitie.*



*Acts 15. 9.* PAUL called to be an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, through *1. thess. 4. 7.* the will of God, and our brother Sosthenes, 2 Vnto the Church of Rome, God which is at Corinthus, to 17. them that are \* sanctified in Christ Iesus, \* Saints *2. Tim. 2. 7.* by calling; \* with all that call on the Name of 1. 22.

# II. CORINTHIANS.

our Lord Iesus Christ, in euery place, both their  
*Lord*, and ours: 3 Grace be with you, and peace  
 from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus  
 Christ. 4 I thanke my God alwayes on your  
 behalfe for the grace of God, which is given  
 you in Iesus Christ, 5 That in all things ye are  
 made rich in him in all kind of speech, out in all  
 knowledge: 6 As y<sup>e</sup> testimonie of Iesus Christ  
 hath bin confirmed in you: 7 So that ye are not  
*Phil.* destitute of any gift, \* waiting for the appearing  
 1.20. of our Lord Iesus Christ. 8 \* Who shall also con-  
 firm you vnto the ende, that ye may be blame-  
 1.11. lesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ. 9 \* God  
 .7th. is faithfull, by whom ye are called vnto the fel-  
 .13. lowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord.  
 and 5. 10 Now I beseech you, brethren by the Name of  
 3. our Lord Iesus Christ, y<sup>e</sup> ve all speake one thing,  
*The.* and that there be no dissentions among you:  
 .24. but be ye knit together in one minde & in one  
 iudgement. 11 For it hath bin declared vnto me,  
 my brethren, of you by them that are of the  
 house of Chloe that there are contentions among  
 you. 12 Now this I say, that every one of you  
 17th. sayeth, I am Pauls and I am \* Apollos, and I am  
 8.24. Cephas, and I am Christs. 13 Is Christ diuided?  
 was Paul crucified for you? either were ye bap-  
 tized into the Name of Paul? 14 I thanke God,  
 17th. that I baptized none of you, but \* Crispas and  
 8.8. Gains, 15 Least any should say that I had bap-  
 tized into mine owne name. 16 I baptized also  
 the household of Stephanas: furtherinore know I

## C H A P. I.

not, whether I baptized any other. 17 For  
 Christ sent me not to baptize but to preach the  
 Gospel, not with \* wisdom of words, least the *Chap.*  
 crosse of Christ should be made of none effect. 2. 13.  
 18 For that preaching of the crosse is to them  
 that perish, foolishnes: but vnto vs, which are  
 saved, it is the \* power of God. 19 For it is writ- *Rome*  
 ten, \* I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and 1. 16.  
 will cast away the vnderstanding of the prudent. *1/43.*  
 20 Where is y wise? where is the Scribe? where *29. 14*  
 is the disputer of this world? hath not God made  
 the wisdom of this world foolishnes? 21 For  
 seeing the world by wisdom knew not God in  
 the wisdom of God, it pleased God by the foo-  
 lishnes of preaching to saue them that beleue:  
 22 \* Seeing also that the Iewes require a signe, *Mar.*  
 and the Grecians seeke after wisdom. 23 But *12. 38*  
 we preach Christ crucified: vnto the Iewes euen  
 a stumbling block, and vnto the Grecians, foo-  
 lishnes. 24 But vnto them which are called both  
 of the Iewes & Grecians, we preach Christ, the  
 power of God, & the wisdom of God. 25 For  
 the foolishnes of God is wiser then men, & the  
 weakenes of God is stronger then men. 26 For  
 brethren, you see your calling, how that not ma-  
 ny wise men after the flesh, not many mightie,  
 not many noble are called. 27 But God hath  
 chosen the foolish things of the world, to con-  
 found the wise, and God hath chosen the weak  
 things of the world, to confound the mightie  
 things. 28 And vile things of the world, and  
 things

# I. CORINTHIANS.

things which are despised, hath God chosen, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are, 29 That no flesh should reioyce in his presence 30 But ye are of him in Christ Iesus,

*Per.* who of God is made vnto vs. wisdom, and  
*9. 24.* righteousness, & sanctification, and redemption,  
*2. cor.* 31 That according as it is written, \*He that re-  
*10. 17.* ioyceth, let him reioyce in the Lord.

## CHAP. 2. 1. *The platforme of Pauls preaching, &c.*

*Chap.* **A**ND I, brethren, when I came to you, came  
*1. 17.* not with \*excellencie of words, or of wis-  
 dome, shewing vnto you the testimonie of God.

*Acts.* 2 For I esteemed not to know any thing among  
*18. 1.* you, saue Iesus Christ, & him crucified 3 \*And I  
 was among you in weakenes, & in feare, and in  
 much trembling 4 Neither ~~floud~~ my word and

*Chap.* my preaching in the \*intifing speech of mans  
*1. 17.* wisdom, but in plaine euidence of the Spirit  
*2. pet.* and of power, 5 That your faith should not be  
*4. 16.* in the wisdom of men, but in <sup>e</sup>y power of God.

6 And we speake wisdom among them that  
 are perfect: not the wisdom of this world, nei-  
 ther of the princes of this world, which come to  
 nought. 7 But we speake the wisdom of God  
 in a mysterie, *even* the hid *wisdom*, which God  
 had determined before the world, vnto our glory  
 8 Which none of the princes of this world  
 hath knowen: for had they knowen it, they  
 would not haue crucified the Lord of glory.

*2. 1.* 9 But as it is written, \*The things which eye hath  
*5. 1. 3.*

### C H A P. III.

yet seene, neither eare hath heard neither came  
into mans heart, *10* which God hath prepared  
for them that loue him. *10* But God hath reuei-  
led *them* vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit  
teacheth all things, yea, y<sup>e</sup> deepe things of God.  
*11* For what man knoweth the things of a man,  
save the spirit of a man, which is in him? euen so  
the things of God knoweth no man, but the  
Spirit of God. *12* Now we haue receiued not  
the Spirit of the world, but the Spirit, which is  
of God, that we might know the things that are  
giuen to vs of God. *13* Which things also we  
speak, not in *the* words which mans wisdom *Chap*  
teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, *1.17.*  
comparing spiritual things with spiritual things. *2. pe*  
*14* For the natural man perceiueh not the things *1.18.*  
of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishnes vnto  
him: neither can he know *them*, because they  
are spiritually discerned. *15* But he that is spiri-  
tually, discerneth all things: yet hee him selfe is  
iudged of no man. *16* \* For who hath knowen *Isai*  
the minde of the Lord, that hee might instruct *40.1*  
him? But we haue the minde of Christ. *rom*

### C H A P. 3. 6 The ministers office.

**A**ND I could not speake vnto you, brethren,  
as vnto spirituall men, but as vnto carnall,  
euen as vnto babes in Christ. *2* I gaue you milke  
to drinke, and not meate: for ye were not yet  
able to beare it, neither yet now are yee able.  
*3* For yee are yet carnall: for whereas *there is*  
among you enuying, and strife, and diuisions, are

# I. CORINTHIANS.

ye not carnall, and walke as men? 4 For when one saith, I am Pauls, and another, I am Apollos, are ye not carnall? 5 Who is Paul then? & who is Apollos, but the ministers by whom ye beleeued, & as the Lord gaue to euery man? 6 I haue planted, Apollos watered, but God gaue the encrease. 7 So then, neither is he that planteth, any thing, ne ther he y<sup>e</sup> watereth, but God that giueth the increase. 8 And he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one, \* and euery man shall receiue his wages, according to his labour. 9 For we together are Gods labourers: ye are Gods husbandry, and Gods building. 10 According to the grace of God giuen to me, as a skillfull master builder I haue laide the foundation, and another buildeth thereon: but let euery man take heede howe he buildeth vpon it. 11 For other foundation can no man lay, then y<sup>e</sup> which is laide, which is Iesus Christ. 12 And if any man build on this foundation gold, siluer, precious stones, timber, hay, or stubble, 13 Euery mans worke shalbe made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shalbe reuiled by the fire: and the fire shall trie euery mans worke of what sort it is. 14 If any mans worke that he hath built vpon, abide, he shall receiue wages. 15 If any mans worke burne, he shall lose, but he shall be saved himselfe: neuerthelesse yet as it were by the fire. 16 \* Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? 17 If any man destroy the Temple of God,

*Psal.*

*62. 12.*

*galat.*

*6. 5.*

*Chap.*

*5. 19.*

*1. cor.*

*5. 16.*

### C H A P. IIII.

him shall God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which ye are. 18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: If any man among you seeme to be wise in this world, let him be a foole that he may be wise. 19 for the wisdom of this world is foolishnes with God: for it is written, \* He catcheth *Job 5,* the wise in their own craftinesse. 20 \* And againe, *13.* The Lord knoweth that the thoughts of the wise be vaine. 21 Therefore let no man reioyce in *45. 18,* men: for all things are yours. 22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death: whether they bee things present, or things to come, *ues.* al are yours, 23 And ye Christes, and Christ Gods.

#### C H A P. 4. 1. *The true Apostles described.*

**L**et a man so thinke of vs, as of the ministers of Christ, and disposers of the secrets of God: 2 And as for the rest, it is required of the disposers, that euery man be found faithfull. 3 As touching me. I passe very little to be iudged of you, or of mans iudgement: no, I iudge not mine owne selfe. 4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord. 5 Therefore \* iudge nothing *Mas.* before the time, vntill the Lord come, who will *7. 1.* lighten things that are hid in darkenesse, & make the counsels of the hearts manifest: and then shall euery man haue praise of God. 6 Nowe these things, brethrē, I haue figuratiuely applied into mine owne selfe and Apollos, for your sakes, that yee might learne by vs, that no man presume



# I. CORINTHIANS.

presume about that which is written, that one  
 shall not against another for any mans cause.  
 7 For who separateth thee? and what hast thou  
 that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast recei-  
 ued it, why reioycell thou, as though thou had  
 not receiued it? 8 Nowe ye are full: now ye  
 are made rich: ye reigne as Kings without vs  
 and would to God ye did reigne, that we also  
 might reigne with you. 9 For I thinke that God  
 hath set forth vs the last Apostles, as men ap-  
 poynted to death: for wee are made a stinking  
 stocke vnto the world, and to the Angels, and to  
 men. 10 We are fooles for Christs sake, and we  
 are wise in Christ: we are weake, and we are  
 strong: ye are honourable, and we are despised.  
 11 Vnto this houre we both hunger & thirst, and  
 are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certain  
 dwelling place, 12 \* And labour, working wi-  
 our owne hands: wee are reuiled, and we  
 bleſſe: we are persecuted, and we suffer it. 13 We  
 are euill spoken of, & we pray: we are made  
 the filth of the world, the offscouring of all  
 things, vnto this time. 14 I write not theſe  
 things to shame you, but as my beloved child-  
 I admoniſh you. 15 For though ye haue ten  
 thousand instructors in Christ, yet haue ye not  
 many fathers: for in Christ Ieſus I haue begot-  
 ten you through the Goſpel. 16 Wherefore  
 I pray you, be ye followers of me. 17 For this  
 cauſe haue I lent vnto you Timotheus, which  
 my beloued ſonne, and faithfull in the Lo-

*Act.*

*20.34.*

*1. theſ.*

*2.9.*

*2. theſ.*

*5.8.*

*Mar.*

*5.44.*

*luke*

*23.34.*

*actes*

*7.60.*

## C H A P. V.

which shall put you in remembrance of my waves in Christ, as I teach euery where in euery Church. 18 Some are puffed vp, as though I would not come to you. 19 But I wil come to you shortly, \* if the Lord will, and will know, *Acts* not the wordes of them which are puffed vp, 19. 21, but the power. 20 For the kingdome of God *James* is not in word, but in power. 21 What wil ye? 4. 135 shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in the spirit of meekenes?

### CHAP. 5. *Of punishing incest.*

**I**T is heard certainly *that there is* fornication among you, & such fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife. 2 And ye are puffed vp, and haue not rather sorrowed, that he which hath done this deede, might be put from among you. 3 For I verely as absent in body, but present in spirit, haue determined already, as though I were present, that hee that hath thus done this thing, 4 When ye are gathered together, & my spirit, in the name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that such one, *1 Cor.* by the power of our Lord Iesus Christ, 5 Be deliuered vnto Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saued in the day of y<sup>e</sup> Lord Iesus. 6 Your reioycing is not good. Know ye not that a litle leauen leaueneth the whole lump? 7 Purge out therefore the olde leauen, that ye may be a new lump, as yee are unleavened: for Christ our Pascheouer is sacrificed for vs. 8 Therefore let vs keepe the feast,

## I. CORINTHIANS.

least, not with olde leauen, neither in the leaue  
of maliciousnesse, and wickednesse: but with the  
vneleavened bread of sinceritie and truth. 9 I  
wrote vnto you an Epistle, that yee should not  
company together with fornicators, 10 And  
not altogether with the fornicatours of this  
worlde, or with the couetous, or with extortion-  
ners, or with idolaters: for then ye must goe out  
of the world. 11 But now I haue written vnto  
you, that ye company not together: if any that  
is called a brother, be a fornicator, or couetous,  
or an idolater, or a rayler, or a drunkard, or an  
extortioner, with such one eate not. 12 For  
what haue I to do, to iudge them also which are  
without? doe ye not iudge them which are within?  
13 But God iudgeth them that are without.  
Put away therefore from among your selves  
that wicked man.

### CHAP. 6. *1 Of going to the Law.*

**D**Are any of you, hauing busines against ano-  
ther, be iudged vnder the vniust, and not vnder  
the Saintes? 2 Doe ye not knowe, that the  
Saints shall iudge the world? If the world then  
shalbe iudged by you, are ye vnworthy to iudge  
the smallest matters? 3 Know ye not that we shall  
iudge the Angels? how much more, things that  
pertaine to this life? 4 If then yee haue iudge-  
ments of things pertaining to this life set vp the  
which are least esteemed in y Church. 5 I speake  
it to your shame. Is it so that there is not a wise  
man among you? no not one that can iudge be-

keene his brethren? 6 But a brother goeth to  
 law with a brother, and that vnder the infidels.  
 7 Now therefore there is altogether infirmitie  
 in you, that yee goe to law one with another:  
 why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather su- *Mat.*  
 mine ye not harme? 8 Nay, ye your selues doe *5.39.*  
 wrong, & doe harme, and that to your brethren. *luke*  
 9 Know ye not that the vnrighteous shal not in- *6.29.*  
 herit the kingdom of God? Be not deceiued: nei- *7.11.*  
 ther fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, *12.19.*  
 nor watons, nor buggerers, nor Theenes, nor *1 The.*  
 ractours, nor drunkards, nor railers, nor extorti- *4.6.*  
 ders shal inherit the kingdom of God. 11 And  
 which were some of you: but ye are washed, but *Titus*  
 are sanctified, but ye are justified in the Name *3.3.*  
 of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God.  
 \*All things are lawfull vnto me: but all things *Chap.*  
 are not profitable. I may doe all things, but I wil *10.23.*  
 be brought vnder the power of any thing.  
 Meates are ordeined for the belly, and the bel-  
 ly for the meates: but God shall destroy both  
 and them. Now the body is not for fornicati-  
 on, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body.  
 And God hath also raysted vp the Lorde, and  
 alraise vs vp by his power. 15 Know ye not, *Rom.*  
 your bodies are the members of Christ? shal *6.5.*  
 we then take the members of Christ, and make  
 them the members of an harlot? God forbid.  
 Doe ye not knowe, that he which coupleth  
 himselfe with an harlot, is one body? \* for two, *Gene.*  
 he shall be one flesh. 17 But he that is ioy- *2.24.*  
 ned

Chap.

3.17.

Chap.

7.23.

ned vnto the Lord, is one spirit. 18 Flee fornication: euery sinne that a man doeth, is without the body: but hee that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body. 19 Know ye not, that your body is the \* Temple of  $\bar{y}$  holy Ghost, which is in you, whom ye haue of God? and ye are not your owne. 20 \* For ye are bought for a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit: for they are Gods

CHAP. 7. 1. Of marriage and v. r. i. n. t. i. e.

s. Pet.

3.7.

**N**ow concerning the things whereof ye wrote vnto mee, *it were good* for a man not to touch a woman. 2 Nevertheless, to auoyde fornication, let euery man haue his wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband. 3 \* Let the husband giue vnto the wife due beneuolence, and likewise also the wife vnto the husband. 4 The wife hath not the power of her owne body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife. 5 Defraud not one another except *it be* with consent for a time, that ye may giue your selues to fasting & prayer, and againe come together, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie. 6 But I speake this by permission, not by commandement. 7 For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe am: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that. 8 Therefore I say vnto the vnmarried, and vnto the widowers, It is good for them if they abide euen as I am.

9 But if they cannot absteine, let them marrie  
for it is better to marrie then to burne. 10 \* And *Ma.*  
vnto the married I command, not I but the Lord, 5.32.  
let not the wife depart from her husbnde. & 19.  
11 But and if she depart, let her remaine vnmar- 9. mar  
ried, or be reconciled vnto her husbands: and let 10. 11.  
not the husband put away *his* wife. 12 But to 12.  
the remnant I speake, *and* not the Iorde, If any *luke*  
brother haue a wife that beleueth not, if she be 16. 18.  
content to dwell with him, let him not forsake  
her. 13 And the woman which hath an husband  
that beleueth not, if hee be content to dwell  
with her, let her not forsake him. 14 For the  
vnbeleuuing husband is sanctified to the wife,  
and the vnbeleuuing wife is sanctified to the hus-  
band, as were your children vncleane: but now  
are they holy. 15 But if the vnbeleuuing depart,  
let the other depart: a brother or a sister is not in  
subiection in such things: but God hath called vs  
in peace. 16 For what knowest thou, O wife,  
whether thou shalt saue thine husband? Or what  
knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue  
thy wife? 17 But as God hath distrib ted to  
every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so  
let him walke: and so ordeine I in all Churches,  
18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him  
not gather *his* vncircumcision: is any called vn-  
circumcised? let him not be circumcised. 19 Cir-  
cumcision is nothing, and vncircumcision is no-  
thing, but the keeping of the commandments 1. Tim  
of God. 20 \* Let every man abide in the same *&c.*  
vocation

# I. CORINTHIANS.

vocation wherein hee was called. 21 Art thou called *being* a seruant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be free use it rather. 22 For he that is called in the Lord, *being* a seruant, is the Lords freeman: likewise also he that is called *being* free, is Christes seruant. 23 \* Yee are bought with a price: be not the seruants of men. 24 Brethren, let euery man wherein he was called therin abide with God. 25 Nowe concerning virgines, I haue no commandement of the Lord but I gaue mine aduice, as one that hath obtained mercie of the Lord to bee faithfull. 26 I suppose then this to be good for the present necessitie: I *meane* that it is good for a man so to be. 27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife. 28 But if thou takest a wife, thou sinnest not: and if a virgine marry, she sinneth not: neuerthelesse, such shall haue trouble in the flesh: but I spare you. 29 And this I say, brethren, because the time is short, hereafter that both they which haue wiues, bee as though they had none: 30 And they that weepe as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not: 31 And they that vse this world, as though they used it not: for the fashion of this world goeth away. 32 And I would haue you without care. The vnmarried careth for the things of the Lorde, how he may please the Lord. 33 But hee that is married careth for the things

## C H A P. VIII.

things of the worlde, howe hee may please *his* wife. 34 There is difference also betweene a virgin and a wife: the vnmarried woman careth for the things of the Lorde, that she may bee holy both in body and spirit: but she that is married, careth for the things of the worlde, howe she may please her husband. 35 And this I speake for your owne commoditie, not to tangle you in a snare, but that yee followe that, which is honest, and that yee may cleaue fast vnto the Lorde without separation. 36 But if any man thinke that it is vncomely for his virgine, if shee passe the flowre of *her* age, and neede so require, let him doe what he wil, he sinneth not let them be married. 37 Neuerthelesse, hee that standeth firme in his heart, that he hath no neede, but hee hath power ouer his owne will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keepe his virgine, he doeth well. 38 So then he that giueth her to marriage, doeth well: but he that giueth her not to marriage doth better. 39 The wife is bound by the Law, as long as her husband <sup>liueth</sup>: but if her husband be dead, she is at libertie to marry with whom she will, only in the Lord. 40 But she is more blessed, if she so abide in my iudgement: and I thinke that I haue also the Spirit of God.

Rom.

7.1.

1.7th

4.8.

C H A P. 8. *Abuse of Christian libertie.*

**A**ND as touching things sacrificed vnto idols, we knowe that wee all haue knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth. Now,



# L CORINTHIANS.

if any man thinke that he knoweth any thing,  
he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to knowe.  
3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowen  
of him. 4 Concerning therefore the eating of  
things sacrificed vnto idoles, wee know that an  
idole is nothing in the worlde, and that there is  
none other God but one. 5 For though there  
be that are called gods, whether in heauen, or in  
earth, (as there be many gods, and many lords)  
6 Yet vnto vs there is but one God, *whom* is  
that Father of whome are all things, and we in

*Chap.* him: \* and one Lorde Iesus Christ by whom are  
*12. 3.* all things. & we by him. 7 But euery man hath  
*10. 11.* not that knowledge: for many hauing consci-  
*15. 13.* ence of the idole, vntil this houre, eate as a thing  
sacrificed vnto the idole, and so their conscience  
being weake, is defiled. 8 But meat maketh not  
vs acceptable to God: for neither if wee eate,  
haue we the more: neither if we eate not, haue  
we the lesse. 9 But take heed, lest by any means  
this power of yours be an occasion of falling,  
to them that are weake. 10 For if any man see  
thee which hast knowledge, sit at table in the  
idoles Temple, shall not the conscience of him  
which is weake, be boldned to eate those things  
which are sacrificed to idoles? 11 And through  
*Rom.* thy knowledge shall \* the weake brother perish  
*14. 15.* for whom Christ died. 12 Now when ye sinne  
so against the brethren, and wound their weake  
*Rom.* conscience, ye sinne against Christ. 13 \* Where  
*14. 21* fore if meate offend my brother, I will eate no

## CHAP. IX.

feeth while the worlde standeth, that I may not offend my brother.

### CHAP. 9. 1 Pauls moderation of Christian libertie.

**A**M I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? are ye not my worke in the Lorde? 2 If I be not an Apostle vnto other, ye doubtlesse I am vnto you: for ye are the seale of mine Apostleship in the Lord. 3 My defence to them that examine me, is this, 4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke? 5 Or haue we not power to leade about a wife being a siller, as well as the rest of the Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lorde and Cephas? 6 Or I only and Barnabas, haue not we power not to worke? 7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne cost? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruite thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke? 8 Say I these things according to man? saith not the Lawe the same also? 9 For it is written in the Lawe of Moses, \* Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the oxe, that treadeth out the corne: doeth God take care for oxen? 10 Either saith hee it not altogether for our sakes? For our sakes no doubt it is written, that he which eareth, should eare in hope, and that he that thresheth in hope, should bee partaker of his hope. 11 \* If we haue sown vnto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we reape your carnall things? 12 If others with you bee par-

*Deut.*

*25.4.*

*Rom.*

*15.27.*

# I. CORINTHIANS.

kers of ~~this~~ power, ~~are~~ not we rather? neuertheless, we haue not vsed this power: but for all things, that we should not hinder the Gospel of Christ. 13 Doe ye not knowe, that they which minister about the \* holy things, eate of the things of the Temple? and they which waite at the altar, are partakers with the altar? 14 So al- so hath the Lorde ordeined, that they which preach the Gospel, should liue of the Gospel. 15 But I haue vsed none of these things: neither wrote I these things, y it should bee so done vnto me: for it were better for me to die then that any man shoulde make my reioycing vaine. 16 For though I preach the Gospel, I haue nothing to reioyce of: for necessitie is layd vpon me, and woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Gospel. 17 For if I do it willingly, I haue a reward, but if I doe it against my will, notwithstanding the dispensation is comitted vnto me. 18 What is my reward then? verily that when I preach the Gospel, I make the Gospel of Christ free, that I abuse not mine authoritie in the Gospel. 19 For though I be free from all men, yet haue I made my selfe seruant vnto al men, that I might winne the more. 20 \* And vnto the Iewes, I become as a Iew, that I may winne the Iewes: to them that are vnder the Lawe, as though I were vnder the Lawe, that I may winne them that are vnder the Lawe: 21 To them that are without Lawe, as though I were without Lawe. (when I am not without Lawe as pertayning to God, but am

Deut.  
28.11.

Act.  
28.3.  
Galat.  
2.3.

in  
th  
I  
I  
al  
G  
w  
ru  
pr  
eu  
fro  
rup  
26  
figh  
Ibe  
iecd  
pre  
pro  
C  
M  
wer  
\* th  
inth  
the  
the  
spit  
Rock  
God  
throw  
are o

## C H A P. X.

in the Lawe through Christ) that I may winne them that are without Lawe: 22 To the weak I become as weak, that I may winne y<sup>e</sup> weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes saue some. 23 And this I do for the Gospels sake, that I might bee partaker thereof with you 24 Knowe ye not, that they which runne in a race, runne all, yet one receiueth the prize? so runne that yee may obtaine. 25 And euery man that prooueth masteries, abstaineth from all things: and they *do it* to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we for an vncorruptible. 26 I therefore so runne, not as vncertainly: so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre. 27 But I beate downe my body, and bring it into subiection, least by any meanes after that I haue preached to other, I my selfe should be reproued.

C H A P. 10. 1. *The Iewes are our examples.*

**M**ORouer, brethren, I woulde not that yee should bee ignorant, that all our fathers were vnder \*that cloude, and all passed through \*that sea, 2 And were al baptized vnto Moses, in that cloud, and in that sea, 3 \*And did al eate the same spiritual incate. 4 \*And did all drinke the same spiritual drinke (for they dranke of the spirituall Rocke that followed them: and the Rocke was Christ) 5 But with many of them God was not pleased: for they were<sup>e</sup> ouerthrowen in the wilderness. 6 Now these things are our ensamples, to the intent that we should

Exod.  
13.21.  
Exod.  
14.22  
Exod.  
16.15  
Exod.  
17.6.  
Num.  
26.65

# I. CORINTHIANS

**Num.** not lust after euil things \* as they lusted. **11.4.** ther be ye idolaters as were some of them, as it is  
**Exod.** written, \* The people sat downe to eate and  
**32.6.** drinke, and rose vp to play. **8** Neither let vs com-  
 mit fornication, as some of them committed for-  
**Num.** nication, and fell in one \* day three an hundred  
**35.9.** thousand **9** Neither let vs tempt Christ as some  
**Num.** of them also tempted him, & \* were destroyed  
**21.6.** of serpents. **10** Neither murmure ye, as some of  
**Num.** them also murmured, \* and were destroyed of  
**24.37.** the destroyer. **11** Nowe all these things came  
**1udg.** vnto them for ensamples, & were written to ad-  
**2.24.** monish vs, vpon whom the ends of the world  
 are come. **12** Wherefore, let him that thinketh  
 he standeth, take heede lest hee fall. **13** There  
 hath no temptation taken you, but such as apper-  
 taineth to man. and God is faithfull, which will  
 not suffer you to be tempted aboue that you be  
 able, but will euery giue the issue with the tenta-  
 tion, that ye may be able to beare it. **14** Where-  
 fore my beloved, flee from idolatry. **15** I speake  
 as vnto them which haue vnderstanding: **16** I ge-  
 ye what I say. **17** The cup of blessing which we  
 blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of  
 Christ? The bread which we breake, is it not the  
 communion of the body of Christ? **18** For we  
 that are many, are one bread and one body, be-  
 cause we all are partakers of one bread. **19** Be-  
 hold Israel, which is after the flesh: are not they  
 which eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the al-  
 tar? **20** What say I then? that the idole is any  
 thing?

# C H A P. X.

thing? or that which is sacrificed to idoles, is any thing? 20 *Yea*, but that these things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, & not vnto God. and I would not that ye should have fellowship with the devils. 21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, & the cup of *y* devils. Ye cannot be partaker of the Lords table, and of the table of devils. 22 Do we prouoke the Lord to anger? are we stronger then he? 23 \* All things are lawfull for me but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not. 24 Let no man seeke his owne, but euery man anothers wealth. 25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles eate ye, & aske no question for conscience sake. 26 \* for the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is. 27 If any of them which beleeeue not, call you to a feast, and if ye will goe, whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake. 28 But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idols, eate it not, because of him that shewed it, & for the conscience (for the earth is the Lords, & all that therein is,) 29 And the conscience, I say, not thine, but of that other: for why should my liberty be condemned of another mans conscience? 30 For if I through Gods benefite be partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that wherefore I giue thanks? 31 \* Whether therefore ye eat, or drinke, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God. 32 Giue none offence, ne ther to the Iewes, nor to *y* Grecians, nor to the Church

*Chap.*  
6. 12.

*Psal.*  
24. x.

*Coloss.*  
3. 17.

# I. CORINTHIANS.

of God: 33 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profit, but *the profit* of many, that they might be saved.

CHAP. II. 2 *Of recurrent behaviour in the Church.*

3 *The.* **B**E ye followers of me, euen as I am of Christ.  
 3.9. **N**ow brethren, I commend you, that ye remember all my things, & keepe the ordinances, as I deliuered them to you. 3 But I wil that ye  
*Ephef.* know, that Christ is \*the head of enery man, and  
 3.23. the man is the womans head: and God is Christs head. 4 Enery man praying or prophesying hauing *a ything* on his head, dishonoureth his head. 5 But enery woman that prayeth or prophesieth bareheaded, dishonoureth her head: for it is euen one very thing, as though she were shauen. 6 Therefore if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorne: and if it be thine for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be covered. 7 For a man ought not to cover his  
*Gene.* head: for, since he is the \*image & glory of  
 1.26. God: but the woman is the glory of the man.  
*1.5.1.* 8 For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man. 9 \*For the man was not created for the womans sake: but the woman for  
*Gene.* mans sake. 10 Therefore ought the woman to haue power on her head because of the Angels.  
 3.22. 11 Neuertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord. 12 For as the woman is of the man, so is the man also by the woman: but all things

## C H A P. XI.

are of God. 13 Iudge in your selues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncovered? 14 Doeth not nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire it is a shame vnto him? 15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a praise vnto her: for her haire is giuen her for a couerment. 16 But if any man lust to be contentious, we haue no such custome neither the Churches of God. 17 Now in this that I declare, I praise you not, that ye come together, not with profite, but with hurt. 18 For first of all when ye come together in the Church, I heare that there are dissensions among you: and I beleene it to be true in some part. 19 For there must be heresies euen among you, that they which are approved among you, might be knowen. 20 When ye come together therefore into one place, *this* is not to eate y<sup>e</sup> Lords Supper. 21 For euery man when they should eate, taketh his owne supper afore, and one is hungry, & another is drunken. 22 Haue ye not houses to eate and to drinke in? despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that haue none. What shall I say to you? shall I praise y<sup>e</sup> in this? I praise you not. 23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which I also haue deliuered vnto you, to wit, That the Lord Iesus in the night that he was betrayed, to ke bread: 24 And when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, *Mat.* and said, Take, eat. this is my body which is broken for you: this do ye in remembrance of me. *1 Cor. 11. 26,* After the same maner also he took the cup, *14. 23.* when



## I. C O R I N T H I A N S.

when he had supped, saying. This cup is the New testament in my blood: this doe as oft as wee

drinke it, in remembrance of mee. 26. For as often as ye shall eat this bread, and drinke this

cup, yee shewe the Lords death till hee come. 27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread,

and drinke the cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guiltie of the body and blood of the Lord.

5. Cor. 13. 5. 28 \* Let enery man therefore examine himselfe,

and so let him eat of this bread, & drinke of this cup. 29 For he that eateth and drinketh unwor-

thily, eateth and drinketh his owne damnation, because he discerneth not the Lords body. 30 For

this cause many are weake, & sicke among you, and many sleepe. 31 For if we would iudge our

selues, we should not be iudged. 32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord because we should not be cōdemned w<sup>th</sup> the world.

33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eate, tary one for another. 34 And if

any man be hungry let him eate at home, that ye come not together vnto condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.

### C H A P. 12. 1. Of spirituall gifts.

NOW concerning spirituall gifts, brethren, I would not haue you ignorant. 2 Yee

know that ve were Gentiles, and were caried away vnto the dumbe idoles, as yee were led

Max. 9. 30. 3 Wherefore, I declare vnto you, that no<sup>t</sup> man

Chap. 8. 5. speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Iesus ex- crable: also no man can say, that Iesus is the Lord

## C H A P. XII.

but by the holy Ghost. 4 Now there are diuersities of gifts, but the same Spirit. 5 And there are diuersities of administrations, but the same Lord. 6 And there are diuersities of operations, but God is the same which worketh all in all. 7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man, to profit withall. 8 For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom: and to another the words of knowledge, by the same Spirit. 9 And to another faith by the same Spirit: and to another the gifts of healing, by the same Spirit. 10 And to another the operations of great works: and to another, prophecies: and to another, the discerning of spirits: and to another, diversities of tongues: and to another, the interpretation of tongues. 11 \* And all these things worketh one, and the selfe same Spirit, distributing to every man severally as he will. 12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of the body which is one, though they be many, yet are they one body: even so Christ. 13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jewes, or Gentians, whether we be bond or free, & have bene all made to drinke into one Spirit. 14 For the body also is not one member, but many. 15 If the foote would say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body? 16 And if the eare should say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

*Rom.*

12.3.

*ephe.*

4.7.

## I. CORINTHIANS.

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were  
 the hearing? if the whole were hearing, where  
 were the smelling? 18 But now hath God dis-  
 posed the members every one of them in the  
 body at his owne pleasure. 19 For if they were  
 all one member, where were the body? 20 But  
 now are there many members, yet but one body.  
 21 And the eye can not say vnto the hand, I haue  
 no neede of thee: nor the head againe to the  
 feete, I haue no neede of you. 22 Yea, much re-  
 cher those members of the body, which seeme to  
 be more feeble, are necessary. 23 And vpon  
 those members of the body, which wee thinke  
 most vnholiest, put wee more honestie on: and  
 our vncomely parts haue more comelinesse on.  
 24 For our comely parts neede it not: but God  
 hath tempered the body together, and hath gi-  
 uen the more honor to that parts which lacked,  
 25 Lest there should be any diuision in the bo-  
 dy: but that the members should haue the same  
 care one for another. 26 Therefore if one mem-  
 ber suffer, all suffer with it: if one member bee  
 had in honour, all the members reioyce with it.  
 27 Now yee are the body of Christ, and mem-  
 bers for *your part*. 28 \* And God hath ordi-  
 ned some in the Church: as first Apostles, se-  
 condly, Prophets, thirdly Teachers, then them  
 that doe miracles: after that, the gifts of healing,  
 helpers, gouernors, diuinity of tongues. 29 Are  
 all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all Teachers?  
 30 Are all doers of miracles? haue all the gifts

*Ephes.*  
 4.11.

## C H A P. XIII.

of healing? do all speake with tongues? doe all interpret? 31 But desire you the best gifts, and I will yet shew you a more excellent way.

CHAP. 13. 1 *He sheweth that there are no gifts so excellent, which in Gods sight are not corrupt, if Charitie be away.*

**T**Hough I speake with the tongues of men and Angels & haue not loue, I am as sounding braise, or a tinkling cymball. 2 And though I had the gift of prophesie, and knew all secrets, & all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I could \* remoue mountaines, and had not loue, *Matt. 17.20.* I were nothing. 3 And though I feed the poore with all my goods, and though I giue my body, that I be burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth me nothing. 4 Loue suffereth long: it is bountifull: loue enuieth not: loue doeth not boast it selfe: it is not puffed vp: 5 It doeth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her owne things: it is not prouoked to anger: it thinketh not euill. 6 It reioyceth not in iniquity, but reioyceth in the trueth: 7 It suffereth all things: it beleeueth all things: it hopeth all things: it endureth all things. 8 Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophesyings bee abolished, or the tongues cease, or knowledge vanish away. 9 But we knowe in part, and we prophesie in part. 10 But what that which is perfect, is come, then that which is in part, shall be abolished. 11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstood as a childe, I thought as a childe:

but

## I. CORINTHIANS.

but when I became a man, I put away childish things. 12 For now wee see thorow a glasse darkely: but then *shall we see face to face*. Now I know in part: but then shall I knowe even as I am knowen. 13 And now abideth faith, hope and loue, *euen these three*: but the chiefest of these is loue.

CHAP. 14. 1 *Of tongues and interpreting.*  
34 *Women forbidden to speake in the congregation.*

**F**ollow after loue, and conueit spirituall gifts, and rather that ye may prophesie. 2 For he that speaketh in a *strange* tongue, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man heareth him: howbeit in the spirit he speaketh secret things. 3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh vnto men to edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort. 4 He that speaketh *by a* language, edifieth himselfe: but hee that prophesieth, edifieth the Church. 5 I would that yee all spake *strange* languages, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth, then he that speaketh *diuers* tongues, except he expound it, that the Church may receiue edification. 6 And now, brethren, if I come vnto you speaking in *strange* tongues, what shall I profit you, except I speake to you, either by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine? 7 Moreouer things without life which giue a sound, whether it be a pipe or an harpe, except they make a distinction in the sounds, how shall

## CHAP. XIII.

it be knowen what is piped or harped? 8 And  
 also, if the trumpet giue an vncertaine sound,  
 who shall prepare himselfe to battell? 9 So  
 likewise you, by the tongue, except yee vter  
 words that haue signification how shall it be vn-  
 derstood what is spoken? for yee shall speake  
 in the ayre. 10 There are so many kindes of  
 voyces (as it commeth to passe) in the worlde,  
 and none of them is dumbe. 11 Except I know  
 then the power of the voyce, I shall be vnto him  
 that speaketh a Barbarian, and he that speaketh,  
 shall be a Barbarian vnto me. 12 Euen so, foras-  
 much as ye couet spirituall gifts, seeke that yee  
 may excell vnto the edifying of the Church.  
 13 Wherefore, let him that speaketh a *strange*  
 tongue, pray, that he may interpret. 14 For if  
 I pray in a *strange* tongue, my spirit prayeth  
 but mine vnderstanding is without fruite.  
 15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit,  
 but I will pray with the vnderstanding also: I  
 will sing with the spirit, but I will sing with the  
 vnderstanding also. 16 Els, when thou blestest  
 with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the  
 room of the vlearned, say, Amen, at thy gi-  
 uing of thanks, seeing hee knoweth not what  
 thou sayest? 17 For thou verely giuest thanks  
 well, but the other is not edified. 18 I thanke  
 my God, I speake languages more then yee all.  
 19 Yet had I rather in the Church to speake  
 few wordes with mine vnderstanding, than I  
 might also instruct others, then tenne thousand  
 words

# I. CORINTHIANS:

wordes in a *strange* tongue. 20 Brethren, be-  
 31at. \* not children in vnderstanding but as concern-  
 28.3. ing maliciouſnelle be children, but in vnder-  
 ſtanding be of a ripe age. 21 In the Law it is  
 7ſay written, \* By men of other tongnes, & by other  
 28.11 languages will I ſpeake vnto this people: yet  
 ſo ſhall they not heare mee, ſayeth the Lord.  
 22 Wherefore *ſtrange* tongues are for a ſigne  
 not to them that beleue, but to them that be-  
 leue not: but prophecyng ſerueth not for them  
 that beleue not, but for them which beleue.  
 23 If therefore when the whole Church is come  
 together in one, and all ſpeake *ſtrange* tongues,  
 there come in they that are vñlearned, or they  
 which beleue not, will they not ſay, that ye are  
 out of your wits? 24 But if all prophecy, and  
 there come in one that beleueth not, or one vñ-  
 learned, he is rebuked of all men, and is ſilenced  
 of all. 25 And ſo are the ſecrets of his heart  
 made manifeſt: and ſo he will fall downe on his  
 face and worſhip God, and ſay plainly, that God  
 is in you in deed. 26 What is to be done, then  
 brethren? when ye come together, let euery  
 one of you hath a *Plaine*, or *Psalm*, or  
*ſtrife*, or hath a tongue, or hath reuelation, or  
 hath interpretation; let all things be done vnto  
 edifying. 27 If any man ſpeake in a *ſtrange*  
 tongue, let it be by two, or at the moſt by three,  
 and that by courſe, & let one interpret. 28 But  
 if there be no interpreter, let him keepe ſilence  
 in the Church, which ſpeaketh languages; and

## C H A P. XV.

Let him speake to himselfe, and to God. 29 Let  
 the Prophets speake two or three, and let the  
 other iudge. 30 And if any thing be reueiled to  
 another that sitteth by, let y first hold his peace.  
 31 For yee may all prophesie one by one, that  
 all may learne, & al may haue comfort. 32 And  
 the spiritues of the Prophets are subiect to the  
 Prophets. 33 For God is not the author of con-  
 fusion but of peace, as we see in all the Churches  
 of the saints. 34 \* Let your women keepe silence  
 in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto  
 them to speake: but they ought to be subiect as  
 also \* the Law saith. 35 And if they will learne  
 any thing, let them aske their husbands at home:  
 for it is a shame for women to speake in the  
 Church. 36 Came the word of God out from  
 you? either came it vnto you onely? 37 If any  
 thinke himselfe to be a Prophet or spirituall, let  
 him acknowledge, that the things, that I write  
 vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord.  
 38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be igno-  
 rant. 39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophe-  
 sie, and forbid not to speake languages. 40 Let  
 all things be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. 15. 3. *The summe of Pa. 1. doctrine.*

**M**oreouer, \* brethren, I declare vnto you  
 the Gospel, which I preached vnto you,  
 which ye haue also receiued, and wherein ye  
 continue: 2 And wherein ye are saued, if yee  
 keepe in memorie, after what maner I prea-  
 ched it vnto you, except yee haue beleued in

Hh

vaine

1. Tim

2. 12.

Gene

3. 16.

Gala

1. 11.



## I. CORINTHIANS.

vaine. 3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you  
that which I receiued, howe that Christ died  
for our finnes, according to the \* Scriptures.  
4 And that he was buried, and that he rose the  
third day according to the \* Scriptures, and  
that he was seene of Cephas, then of y<sup>e</sup> twelve.  
5 After that, he was seene of more then three hun-  
dred brethren at once: whereof many are yet liue  
vnto this present, and some also are asleepe.  
6 After that, he was seene of Iames: then of  
the Apostles. 8 \* And last of all he was shewed  
me, as of one borne out of due time. 9 For I  
am the least of the Apostles, which am not mee-  
to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted  
the Church of God. 10 But by y<sup>e</sup> grace of God  
I am that I am, and his grace which is with me  
is not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly  
then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God  
which is with me. 11 Wherefore, whether it  
were I, or they, so we preach, and so haue we  
beleued. 12 Now if it be preached that Christ  
is risen from the dead, howe say some among  
you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?  
13 For if there be no resurrection of the dead,  
then is Christ not risen. 14 And if Christ be  
risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith  
is also vaine. 15 And wee are found false  
witnesses of God: for we haue testified of God,  
y<sup>e</sup> he hath raised vp Christ, who he hath not  
raised vp: so y<sup>e</sup> dead be not raised. 16 And  
if the dead be not raised, then is Christ not  
raised.

## C H A P. XV.

17 And if Christ bee not rayſed, your faith is  
 vaine ye are yet in your finnes. 8 And ſo they  
 which are aſleepe in Chriſt are periſhed. 19 If  
 in this life onely we haue hope in Chriſt, wee  
 are of all men the moſt miſerable. 20 But now  
 is Chriſt riſen from the dead, and made \* the *Col. 1.*  
 firſt fruites of them that ſlept. 21 For ſince by *18.*  
 mans death, by mans death alſo the reſurre *uent.*  
 ction of the dead. 22 For as in Adam all die, *1. 5.*  
 even ſo in Chriſt ſhall all be made alieue, 23 But *1. The.*  
 every man in his \* owne order: the firſt fruites *4. 23.*  
 Chriſt afterwarde, they that are of Chriſt, at his  
 coming ſhall riſe againe. 24 Then ſhall be the  
 ende, when he hath deliuered vp the kingdome  
 to God euen y<sup>e</sup> Father, when he hath put downe  
 all rule, and all authoritie and power. 25 For  
 he muſt reigne \* till he hath put all his enemies *Pſal.*  
 vnder his feete. 26 The laſt enemy that ſhall be *110. 1.*  
 deſtroyed: death. 27 \* For he hath put downe *act. 2.*  
 all things vnder his feete. (And when he ſaith *30.*  
 that all things are ſubdued *to him*, it is manifeſt *hebr.*  
 that he is excepted, which did put downe all *1. 13.*  
 things vnder him) 28 And when all things ſhall *2. 10.*  
 be ſubdued vnto him, then ſhall the Sonne alſo *13.*  
 himſelfe be ſubieſt vnto him, that did ſubdue all *Pſal.*  
 things vnder him, that God may be all in all. *8. 6.*  
 29 Liſt what ſhall they do which are baptized *hebr.*  
 for dead: if the dead riſe not at al why are they *2. 8.*  
 then baptized for dead? 30 Why are we alſo in  
 jeopardy every houre? 31 By our reioycing  
 which we haue in Chriſt Ieſus our Lorde, I die  
 daily.

## I. CORINTHIANS.

dayly. 32 If I haue fought with beastes at Ephesus after the maner of men, what aduantage is it me, if the dead be not rayfed vp? \* let vs eate  
**Isai.** and drinke: for to morow wee shall die. 33 Be  
**22.13.** not deceived: euill speakings corrupt good  
maners. 34 Awake to *live* righteously, and *live*  
not: for some haue not the knowledge of God.  
I speake this to your shame. 35 But some will  
say, How are the dead rayfed vp? and with  
what body come they forth? 36 O foole, that  
which thou sowest, is not quickened except it  
die: 37 And that which thou sowest, thou sow-  
est not that body that shalbe, but bare come, as  
it falleth, of wheate, or of some other. 38 But  
God giueth it a body at his pleasure, euen to  
euery seede his owne body. 39 All flesh is not  
the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, and  
another flesh of beastes, and another of fishes,  
and another of birdes. 40 There are also hea-  
uenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glory  
of the heauenly is one, and *the glory* of *the* earth-  
ly is another. 41 There is another glory of the  
Sunne, and another glory of the Moone, and  
another glory of the starres: for one starre diffe-  
reth from another starre in glory. 42 So also is  
the resurrection of the dead. *The body* is sown  
in corruption, and is rayfed in incorruption.  
43 It is sown in dishonour, and is raised in glo-  
rie: it is sown in weakenesse, and is rayfed in  
power. 44 It is sown a naturall body, and is  
rayfed a spiritual body: there is a natural body,

## C H A P. XV.

and there is a spirituall body. 45 As it is also written, \* The first man Adam was made a liuing *Gene.*  
soule and the last Adam was made a quickening *2.7.*  
spirit. 46 Howbeit that was not first which is  
spirituall: but that which is naturall, and after-  
ward that which is spirituall. 47 The first man  
is of the earth, earthly: the second man is the  
Lord from heauen. 48 As is the earthly, such are  
they that are earthly: and as is the heauenly, such  
are also they that are heauenly. 49 And as we  
haue borne the image of the earthly, so shall we  
beare the image of the heauenly. 50 This say I,  
brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherite  
the kingdome of God, neither doth corruption  
inherit incorruption. 51 Behold, I shew you a  
secret thing, we shall not all sleepe but we shall  
all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twink-  
ling of an eye at the \* last trumpet: for the trum- *Mat.*  
pet shall blow, and the dead shall be raised vp in. *24.32*  
corruptible, and wee shall be changed. 53 For *1. thes.*  
this corruptible must put on incorruption: and *4.16.*  
this mortall must put on immortalitie 54 So  
when this corruptible hath put on incorrupti-  
on, and this mortall hath put on immortalitie,  
then shall be brought to passe the saying that is  
written \* Death is swallowed vp into victorie. *Ose.*  
55 O death, where is thy sting? O graue, where is thy victorie? *13.14*  
56 The sting of death is sinne: *beb.20*  
and the strength of sinne is the lawe. 57 \* Put *14.*  
thanks be vnto God, which hath giuen vs vi. *1.106.*  
glory through our Lord Iesus Christ. 58 There *5.53*

# I CORINTHIANS.

fare my beloued brethren, be yee stedfast, vn-  
moouable, abundant alwayes in the worke of  
the Lord, forasmuch as ye knowe, that ye labo-  
ur not in vaine in the Lord.

## CHAP. 16. 1. Exhortation to charity.

**C**ONCERNING the gathering for the Saints, as  
I haue ordeined in the Churches of Gal-  
atia, so doe yee also. 2. Euery first day of the  
weeke, let euery one of you put aside by him-  
selfe, and lay vp as God hath prospered him: &  
then there be no gatherings when I come. And  
when I am come, whosoever yee shall allowe  
by letters, them will I send to bring your li-  
beritie vnto Hierusalem. 4. And if it be meete that  
I goe also, they shall goe with me. 5. Now I will  
come vnto you, after I haue gone thorow Ma-  
cedonia (for I will passe through Macedonia)  
6. And it may be that I will abide, yea, or winter  
with you, that yee may bring mee on my way  
whithersoever I goe. 7. For I will not leave you  
nowe in my passage, but I trust to abide a while  
with you, if the Lord permit. 8. And I will cry  
at Ephesus vntill Pentecost. 9. For a great  
doore and effectuall is opened vnto mee, and  
there are many aduersaries. 10. Nowe if Timo-  
theus come, see that he bee without feare with  
you: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, as  
as I doe. 11. Let no man therefore despise him,  
but conuey him forth in peace, that he may  
come vnto mee: for I looke for him with the  
brethren. 12. As touching my brother Apollos,

## C H A P. XVI.

I greatly desired him, to come vnto you with the brethren: but his minde was not at all to come at this time: howbeit he will come when he shall haue convenient time. 13 Watch ye: stand fast in the faith: quere you like men, and be strong. 14 Let all your things bee done in love. 15 Now brethren, I beseech you: ye know the life of Stephanas, that it is the first fruite of Achaia, and that they haue giuen themselves: similar vnto the Saints. 16 That ye be obedient euen vnto such, and to all that helpe with word and labour. 17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you. 18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknowledge therefore such men. 19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla, with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly in the Lord. 20 All the brethren greete you. Greete yee one another with *an Ro* an holy kisse. 21 The salutation of *of* Paul with *16. 1* mine owne hand. 22 If any man loue not the *2. cor* Lord Iesus Christ, let him bee had in execration, *12. 1* our anathema. 23 The grace of our Lord Iesus *1. pe* Christ be with you. 24 My loue be with you all *5. 1* *16. 1* Iesus, AMEN.

¶ The first *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, and sent by Stephanas and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF

Paul to the Corinthians.

CHAP. I. 2 *Gods helpe in afflictions.*



PAUL an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, by the will of God, and our brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with al the Saints, which

are in all Achaia: 2 Grace be with you, & peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus

*Ephe.* Christ. 3 <sup>A</sup> Blessed be God, even the Father of

<sup>x.3.</sup> our Lord Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and

<sup>x. per.</sup> the God of all comfort, 4 Which comforteth

<sup>3.3.</sup> vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to

comfort them which are in any affliction, by the comfort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God. 5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation aboundeth through Christ. 6 And whether we be afflicted,

it is for your consolation and saluation, which is wrought in the induring of the same sufferings,

which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and saluation.

7 And our hope is stedfast concerning you, in as much as we know that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation. 8 For brethren, we would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Asia, howe wee were pressed out of measure passing strength so that we altogether doubted euen of life. 9 Yea, we received the sentence of death in our selues, because we should not trust

in our  
10 W  
doeth  
hereaft  
bour to  
best we  
men by  
cing is  
that in  
in Bethl  
haue ha  
most of  
none of  
or else  
ack: o  
haue ack  
reioicin  
Lord Ie  
minded  
one had  
you into  
of Made  
oward  
as thus  
these th  
tel, that  
ay 18  
ward you  
onne of  
mong v  
ad Teno

## C H A P. I.

in our selues, but in God, which raiseth the dead.  
 10 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, and  
 doeth deliuer vs: in whom wee trust, that yet  
 hereafter he will deliuer vs, 11 \* So that ye la- *Rom.*  
 bour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift *15.30.*  
 bestowen vpon vs for many, thanks may be gi-  
 uen by many persons for vs, 12 For our reioy-  
 cing is this, the testimonie of our conscience,  
 that in simplicitie and godly purpasse, and not  
 in fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God we  
 haue had our conuersation in the world, and  
 most of all to youwards. 13 For wee write  
 none other things vnto you, then that yee reade,  
 or else that ye acknowledge, and I trust ye shall  
 acknowledge vnto the ende. 14 Euen as ye  
 haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your  
 reioycing, euen as ye are ours, in the day of our  
 Lord Iesus. 15 And in this confidence was I  
 minded first to come vnto you, that yee might  
 haue had a double grace, 16 And to passe by  
 you into Macedonia, and to come againe out  
 of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led soorth  
 toward Iudea of you. 17 When I therefore  
 was thus minded, did I vse lightnesse, or minde  
 those things which I minde, according to the  
 will, that with me should be, Yea, yea, and Nay,  
 say? 18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our word to-  
 ward you was not Yea, and nay 19 For the  
 sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached  
 among you by vs, *that is*, by me, and Siluanus,  
 and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay: but in  
 him



## II. CORINTHIANS.

him it was Yea. 20 For all the power of  
God in him. Yea, and are in him. Amen. and  
the glory of God through vs. 21 And he is God  
which stablisheth vs with you in Christ. and  
hath anoynted vs. 22 Who hath also sealed us,  
and hath giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our  
hearts. 23 Now, I call God for a record vnto  
my soule, that to spare you, I cannot not aske  
vnto Corinthus. 24 Not that we haue domi-  
nion ouer your faith, but we are helpers of your  
ioy: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. 2. 6. *To pardon the repentance.*

**B**ut I determined thus in my selfe, & I would  
not come againe to you in heavinesse. 2 For  
if I make you sorry, who is hee then that shall  
make me glad, but the same which is made sorry  
by me? 3 And I wrote this same thing vnto you  
lest when I came, I should take heavinesse from  
of whom I ought to reioyce: this confidence  
haue I in you all, that my ioy is the ioy of you all.  
4 For in great affliction, and anguish of heart  
wrote vnto you with many teares: not that I  
should be made sorry, but that ye might perceive  
the loue which I haue, specially vnto you. 5  
If any hath caused sorrow, the same hath caused  
me sorry, but partly (lest I should more charge  
*him*) you all. 6 It is sufficient vnto the for-  
man, that he was rebuked of many. 7 So that  
nowe contrariwise yee ought rather to comfort  
*him*, and comfort *him*, lest the same should be  
swallowed vp w<sup>th</sup> our much heavinesse. 8 Wherefore

### C H A P. III.

lest, I pray you, that you would confine your  
 love towards him. 9 For this cause also did I  
 write, that I might knowe the prooffe of you,  
 whether you would bee obedient in all things,  
 10 To whom ye forgieue any thing, I *forgieue* al-  
 so: for verely if I forgave any thing, to whom I  
 forgave it, for your sakes *for gave I it* in the sight  
 of Christ, 11 Lest Satan should circumvent  
 us: for wee are not ignorant of his enterprises.  
 12 Furthermore when I came to Troas to *preach*  
 Christs Gospel, and a dore was opened vnto  
 me of the Lord, 13 I had no rest in my spirit, be-  
 cause I found not Titus my brother, but tooke  
 my leave of them, and went away into Macedo-  
 nia. 14 Now thanks *be* vnto God, which al-  
 wayes maketh vs to triumph in Christ, and ma-  
 keth manifest the fauour of his knowledge by  
 vs in every place. 15 For we are vnto God the  
 sweete fauour of Christ, in them that are saved,  
 and in them which perith: 16 To the one wee  
 are the fauour of death vnto death, and to the o-  
 ther the fauour of life vnto life: and who is suf-  
 ficient for these things? 17 \* For we are not as *Chap.*  
 some, which make merchandise of the word of 4.2.  
 God: but as of sinceritie, but as of God in the  
 sight of God, speake we in Christ.

#### CHAP. 3. 8 *The difference of the Law and the Gospel.*

**D**O we begin to praise our selues againe? or  
 need we as some other, Epistles of recom-  
 mendation vnto you, or *letters of recommenda-*  
 tion

## II. CORINTHIANS.

tion from you? 2 Ye are our Epistle written in  
our hearts, which is vnderstood & read of al me,  
3 In that yee are manifest, to bee the epistle  
of Christ, ministred by vs, and written not with  
ynke but with the spirit of the liuing God, not  
in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of y heart.  
4 And such trust haue we through Christ to God:  
5 Not y we are sufficient of our selues: but our sufficiency is  
of God, 6 Who also hath made vs able mini-  
sters of the New Testament, not of the letter, but  
of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the Spirit  
giueth life. - If then the ministration of death  
*written* with letters and ingrauen in stones, was  
glorious, so that the children of Israel could not  
beholde the face of Moses, for the glory of his  
countenance (which *glory* is done away) 8 How  
shall not the ministration of the Spirit be more  
glorious? 9 For if the ministerie of condemna-  
tion was glorious, much more doth the ministra-  
tion of righteousness excede in glory. 10 For  
euen y which was glorified, was not glorified in  
this point, *that is* as touching y exceeding glo-  
ry. 11 For if y which should be abolished, was  
glorious, much more shal that which remaineth,  
be glorious. 12 Seeing then that we haue such  
*Exod.* trust, we vse great boldnes of speech 13 \* And  
34 34. *we are* not as Moses, *which* put a vaile vpon his  
face, that the children of Israel should not looke  
vnto the end of that which should be abolished,  
14 Therefore their minds are hardened for vn-

## C H A P. IIII.

till this day remaineth the same covering vntaken away in the reading of the old Testament, which *vaile* in Christ is put away. 15 But euen vnto this day, when Moses is read, the vaile is layd ouer their hearts. 16 Nevertheless, when their hearts shall be turned to the Lord, the vaile shall be taken away. 17 Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, *John* there is libertie. 18 But wee all behold as in a *4.14.* mirror the glory of the Lord with open face, and are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, as by the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAP. 4. *How easie the Gospell is to be conceiued.*

Therefore, seeing that wee haue this ministerie, as we haue receiued mercy, we faint not, but haue cast from vs the clokes of shame, and walke not in craftinesse, neither handle wee the word of God deceitfully: but in declaration of the truth we approue our selues to euery mans conscience in the sight of God. 3 If our Gospell be then hid, it is hid to them that are lost. 4 In whom the God of this worlde hath blinded the mindes, *that is,* of the infidels, that the light of the glorious Gospell of Christ, which is the image of God, should not shine vnto them. 5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake. 6 \*For God that commaunded the light *Gen. 1.3.* to shine out of darkenesse, *is he* which hath shined in our hearts, to giue the light of the knowledge

## II. CORINTHIANS.

ledge of the glory of God in the face of Iesus Christ. 7 But wee haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellencie of that power might be of God, and not of vs. 8 We are afflicted on euery side, yet are not in distresse: we are in doubt, but yet we despaire not. 9 We are persecuted but not forsaken: cast downe, but wee perish not. 10 Euery where we beare about in our body the dying of the Lorde Iesus, that the life of Iesus might also be made manifest in our bodies. 11 For we which liue, a eale ayes dedicated vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might be made manifest in our mortalitie. 12 So then death worketh in vs, and life in you. 13 And because we haue the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I beleueed, and therefore haue I spoken, we also beleue, and therefore speake, 14 Knowing that hee which hath ray sed vp the Lorde Iesus, shall raise vs vp also by Iesus, & that set vs with you. 15 For all things are for your sakes, that that most plenteous grace by the thanksgiving of many, may redound to the prayse of God. 16 Therefore we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed dayly. 17 For our light affliction which is but for a moment, causeth vnto vs a farre more excellent and an eternal weight of glory. 18 While wee looke not on the things which are seene, but on the things which are not seene: for the things which are seene, are tempo-

Ts. 1.  
x. 6.  
20.

## C H A P. V.

all: but the things which are not seene, are  
eternall.

CHAP. 5. *6 The certaine hope of saluation.*

**F**or we know that if our earthly house of this  
Tabernack be destroyed, we haue a building  
of God, *that is*, an house not made with  
hands, w<sup>ch</sup> is eternal in the heauens. 2 For there-  
fore we sigh, desiring to bee clothed with our  
house which is from heauen: 3 Because that if  
we be clothed, we shall not be found naked. *Rom.*  
4 For indeede wee that are in this tabernacle, *16.15.*  
sigh, and are burdened, becaule wee would not  
be clothed, but would bee clothed vpon, that  
mortallite might be swallowed vp of life. 5 And  
hee hath created vs for this thing, God, who  
also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest of the Spirit.  
6 Therefore we are alway bolde, though wee  
knowe that whiles we are at home in the body,  
we are absent from the Lord. 7 (For we walke  
by faith, and not by sight.) 8 Neuerthelesse, we  
are bold, and lone rather to remoue out of the  
body, and to dwell with the Lord. 9 Where-  
fore wee conet, that both dwelling at home,  
and remouing from home, we may be acceptable  
to him. 10 For we must all appeare before the *Rom.*  
iudgement seate of Christ, that every man may  
receiue the things which are done in his body,  
according to that hee hath done, whether it bee  
good or ill. 11 Knowing therefore y<sup>e</sup> terror  
of the Lord, we perswade men and we are made  
obedient vnto God, and I trust also that wee are  
made

## II. CORINTHIANS.

made manifest in your consciences. 12 For we  
praise not our selues againe vnto you, but giue  
you an occasion to reioyce of vs, that yee may  
haue *to answere* against them, which reioyce in  
the face, & not in the heart. 13 For whether we  
be out of our wit, *we are it* to God: or whether  
wee be in our right minde, *we are it* vnto you.  
14 For that loue of Christ constraineth vs, 5 Be-  
cause we thus iudge, that if one bee dead for all,  
then were all dead, and he died for all, that they  
which liue, should not hencefoorth liue vnto  
themselues, but vnto him which died for them,  
and rose againe. 16 Wherefore hencefoorth  
know we no man after the flesh, yea though we  
had knowen Christ after the flesh, yet now hence-  
forth know we *him* no more. 17 Therefore if  
any man *be* in Christ, *let him be* a newe creature.  
7 say. \* Olde things are passed away: behold, al things  
43. 19. are become new. 18 And al things *are* of God,  
reuel. which hath reconciled vs vnto himselfe by Iesus  
21. 5. Christ, and hath giuen vnto vs the ministerie of  
reconciliation. 19 For God was in Christ, and  
reconciled the world to himselfe, not imputing  
their sinnes vnto them, and hath committed to  
vs the worde of reconciliation. 20 Now then  
are we ambassadours for Christ: as though God  
did beseeche *you* through vs, wee pray you in  
Christes steade, that yee be reconciled to God.  
21 For hee hath made him *to bee* sinne for vs,  
which knewe no sinne, that wee should be made  
the righteousness of God in him,

CHAP.

CHAP. 6. 4. *A paterne of  
Christian life.*

SO we therefore, as workers together beseech  
you, that yee receiue not the grace of God in  
vaine. 2 For he saith, \* I haue heard thee in a *1 say*  
time accepted and in the day of saluation haue I *498.*  
succoured thee: behold now the accepted time,  
beholde now the day of saluation. 3 We giue  
no occasion of offence in any thing, that *our* mi-  
nistry should not be reprehended. 4 But in all  
things we approue our selues as the \* ministers *1. Cor.*  
of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in ne- *4. 2.*  
cessities, in distresses, 5 In stripes, in prisons, in  
tumults, in labours, 6 By watchings, by fastings,  
by puritie, by knowledge, by long suffering, by  
kindnesse by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfeined,  
7 By the word of trueth, by the power of God,  
by the armour of righteousness on the right hand,  
and on the left, 8 By honour, and dishonour, by  
euil report, and good report as deceiuers, and  
yet true: 9 As vnknownen, & yet knownen: as dy-  
ing and beholde, we liue: as chastened, and yet  
not killed: 10 As sorowing, and yet alwayes re-  
ioycing: as poore, & yet make many rich: as ha-  
ving nothing, and yet possessing all things. 11 O  
Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you: our  
heart is made large, 12 Ye are not kept strait  
in vs, but ye are kept strait in your owne bow-  
els. 13 Now for the same recompence, I speake  
as to my children, Be you also enlarged. 14 Bee  
not vnequally yoked with the infidels: \* for *Eccle.*  
what fellowship hath righteousness with vn- *13. 18.*  
righteous.



## II, CORINTHIANS.

rigeteousnesse? and what communion hath light  
 with darkness? 15 And what concord hath Christ  
 with Belial? or what part hath the beleeuers with  
 the infidel? 16 And what agreement hath the  
 Temple of God with idols? \*for ye are the Tem-  
 3.16. ple of the liuing God: as God hath saide, \* I will  
 Leui. dwell among them, and walke there: and I will  
 26.11. bee their God, and they shall be my people.  
 I say 17 \*Wherefore come out from among them,  
 52.11. and separate your selues, saith the Lorde, and  
 touch none vncleane thing, and I will receiue  
 Iere. you 18 \*And I will be a Father vnto you, and  
 31.1. ye shall be my sonnes and daughters, sayeth the  
 Lord Almightye.

### CHAP. 7. 2. Comfort after threatnings.

Seeing then we haue these promises, dearely  
 Sbeloued let vs cleanse our selues from all fil-  
 thines of the flesh and spirit, & finish *our* sancti-  
 fication in the feare of God. 2 Receiue vs: we  
 haue done wrong to no man: we haue corrup-  
 ted no man: we haue defrauded no man. 3  
 Speake it not to *our* condemnation: for I haue  
 said before, that yee are in our hearts, to die and  
 liue together. 4 I vse great boldnesse of speech  
 toward you: I reioyce greatly in you: I am fil-  
 led with comfort, & am exceeding ioyous in al-  
 our tribulation. 5 For when we were come in-  
 to Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we  
 were troubled on euery side, fightings without  
 and terrors within. 6 But God y comforted  
 the abject, comforted vs at the coming of T

## C H A P. VII.

tne: 7 And not by his comming onely, but also  
 by the consolation wherewith hee was comforted  
 of you, when he tolde vs your great desire,  
 your mourning, your seruient mind to me ward,  
 so that I reioyced much more. 8 For though I  
 made you sory w<sup>th</sup> a letter, I repent not though I  
 did repent: for I perceiued that the same epistle  
 made you sory, though ~~it were~~ but for a season.  
 9 I now reioyce, not that ye were sory, but that  
 ye sorowed to repentance: for ye sorowed godly  
 so that in nothing ye were hurt by vs. 10 For  
 godly sorow causeth repentance vnto saluation,  
 not to be repented of: but the worldly sorow  
 causeth death. 11 For behold, this thing that ye  
 haue bene godly sory, what great care it hath  
 wrought in you: yea, what clearing of your  
 selues: yea, *what* indignation: yea, *what* feare:  
 yea, *how* great desire: yea, *what* a zeale: yea, *what*  
 reuenge: in all things ye haue shewed your  
 selues that ye are pure in this matter. 12 Where  
 fore, though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for  
 this cause that had done the wrong, neither for  
 this cause that had the iniurie, but that our care  
 towards you in the sight of God might appeare  
 vnto you. 13 Therefore wee were comforted,  
 because ye were comforted: but rather wee re  
 ioiced much more for the ioy of Titus, because  
 his spirit was refreshed by you all. 14 For if  
 that I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I  
 am not bene ashamed but as I haue spoken vnto  
 you all things in trueth, even so our boasting

## II. CORINTHIANS.

vnto Titus was true. 15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, when he remembreth the obedience of you all, *and how* with feare and trembling ye receiued him. 16 reioyce *therefore* that I may put my confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. 8. 1. *Of liberality to the Saints.*

**W**E do you also to wit, brethrē, of the grace of God bestowed vpon the Churches of Macedonia, 2 Because in great trial of affliction their ioy abounded, and their most extreeme poverty abounded vnto their rich liberality. 3 *For* to *their* power (I beare record), yea, and beyond their power they were willing, 4 And prayed vs with great instance that wee would receive the grace and felowship of the ministring which is toward the Saints. 5 And *that they did*, not as wee looked for: but gaue their owne selves first to the Lord, and *after* vnto vs by the will of God, 6 That we should exhort Titus, that as he had begunne, so hee would also accomplish the same grace among you also. 7 Therefore as ye abound in euery thing, in faith and word and knowledge, and in al diligence, and in your loue towards vs, *even so* see that yee abound in this grace also. 8 This say I not by commandement, but because of the diligence of others: therefore prooue I the naturalnesse of your loue. 9 For ye knowe the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that hee being rich, for your sake became poore, that yee through his povertie

# C H A P. VIII.

might be made rich. 10 And I shew my minde herein: for this is expedient for you, which haue begunne not to doe onely, but also to will a yeere agoe. 11 Nowe therefore performe to doe it also, that as *there was* a readinesse to will, euen so ye may perfourme it of that which yee haue. 12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not. 13 Neither is it that other men should be eased, and you grieved: but vpon like condition, at this time your abundance *supplieth* their lacke: 14 That also their abundance may bee for your lacke, that there may be equalitie: 15 As it is written, *Exod.* *He that gathered much, had nothing ouer, and hee that gathered a little, had not the lesse.* 16 And thanks be vnto God, which hath put in the heart of Titus the same care for you, 17 Because he accepted the exhortion, yea, hee was so careful, that of his owne accord he went vnto you. 18 And wee haue sent with him also the brother, whose praise is in the Gospell throughout all the Churches. 19 (And not so onely, but is also chosen of the Churches to bee a fellowe in our iourney, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glory of the same Lorde, and declaration of your prompt minde) 20 Abstoyding this, that no man should blame vs in this abundance that is ministred by vs, 21 *Pro. Rom.* *Guiding for honest things, not onely before the Lorde, but also before men.* 22 And wee

haue sent with them our brother, whom we haue  
oft times proued to be diligent in many things,  
but now much more diligent, for the great con-  
fidence, which *I haue* in you. 23 Whether any  
doe enquire of Titus, *he is* my fellow & helper to  
youward: or of our brethren, they are messen-  
gers of the Churches, and the glory of Christ.  
24 Wherefore shewe toward them and before  
the Churches the prooffe of your loue, & of the  
reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP. 9. 6. *Of Almes.*

**F**OR as touching the ministring to the Saints,  
it is superfluous for me to write vnto you.  
2 For I know your readinesse of minde, wherof  
I boast my selfe of you vnto them of Macedo-  
nia, and *ja*, that Achaia was prepared a yeare a-  
go, and your zeale hath prouoked many. 3 Now  
haue I sent the brethren, lest our reioycing o-  
uer you should be in vaine in this behalfe, that  
yee (as I haue said) be ready: 4 Lest if they of  
Macedonia come with me and finde you vnpre-  
pared, we (that we may not say, you) should be  
ashamed in this my constant boasting. 5 Where-  
fore, I thought it necessary to exhort the bre-  
thren to come before vnto you, & to finish your  
beneuolence appointed afore, that it might bee  
ready, and come as of beneuolence & not as of  
niggardlinesse. 6 This yet remember, that hee  
which soweth sparingly, shal reape also sparing-  
ly, and he that soweth liberally, shall reape also  
liberally. 7 As euery man wisheth in his heart,

so let him giue, not\* grudgingly, or of necessity: *Rom.*  
 \*for God loueth a cheerefull giuer. 8 And God *12. 8.*  
 is able to make all grace to abound toward *Eccle.*  
 you, that yee alwayes hauing all sufficiency in *35. 10.*  
 all things, may abound in euery good worke,  
 9 \* (As it is written, Hee hath sparfed abroad, *Psal.*  
 and hath ginen to the poore: his beneuolence *112. 9.*  
 remaineth for euer. 10 Also be that findeth seed  
 to the sower, will minister likewise bread for  
 foode, and multiply your seede, and increase the  
 frutes of your beneuolence.) 11 That on all  
 parts yee may bee made rich vnto all liberalitie,  
 which causeth through vs thanksgiuing vnto  
 God 12 For the ministration of this seruice not  
 onely supplieth the necessities of the Saints, but  
 also abundantly causeth many to giue thanks to  
 God, 13 (Which by the experience of this mi-  
 nistration praise God for your voluntarie sub-  
 mission to the Gospel of Christ, and for your li-  
 berall distribution to them, and to all men) 14  
 And in their prayer for you, to long after  
 you greatly, for the abundant grace of God in  
 you. 15 Thanks therefore be vnto God for his  
 vspeakeable gift.

C H A P. 10. *Armor against wicked calillations.*

**N**Owe I Paul my selfe beseech you by the  
 meekenesse, & gentlenesse of Christ, which  
 when I am present among you, am base, but am  
 bolde toward you being absent: 2 And *this* I  
 require you, that I neede not to be bolde when I  
 am present, with that same confidence, wherewith

## II. CORINTHIANS.

I thinke to be bolde againſt ſome, which vs as though we walked according to the rule. 5 Neuertheleſſe, though we walke in the rule, yet we doe not waite after the ſhew of weapons of our warre, for we are not carnally, but mighty through God, to call downe vengeance. 6 Putting downe the imaginations, and every high thing that is exalted againſt the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie every thought to the obedience of Chriſt, 7 And being ready the vengeance againſt all diſobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled. 8 For to be ye on things after the appearance. If any man truſt in himſelfe, that he is Chriſtes, let him conſider this againe of himſelfe, that as he is Chriſt, euen ſo are we Chriſtes. 8 For though I ſhould boaſt ſomewhat more of our authoritie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your deſtruction, I ſhould haue nothing to ſeare you with letters. 9 *This I do* that I may not ſeeme as if I were to ſeare you with letters. 10 For the letters, ſith he, are ſore and ſtrong, but his bodily preſence is weake, and his ſpeech is of no value. 11 Let ſome one thinke this, that ſuch as we are in words by letters, when we are abſent, ſuch will we be indeede, when we are preſent. 12 For we doe not make our ſelues of the number, or to compare our ſelues to them, which praife themſelues, but they vnderſtand not that they treaſure themſelues with themſelues, and compare themſelues with themſelues. 13 But wee will not reſemble

## C H A P. XI.

things, which are not within our measure,  
 according to the measure of the line, is here. *Ephes.*  
 3. 7. attributed vnto vs a measure to at-  
 taine vnto you. 14 For we stretch not our  
 line beyond our measure, as though wee had  
 attained vnto you: for euen to you also haue  
 we *new wine* in the Gospel of Christ,  
 without boasting of things which are without  
 measure: *that is*, of other mens labours:  
 as we hope, when your faith shall increase, to  
 be signified by you according to our line a-  
 bundantly. 16 And to preach the Gospel in  
 those regions which are beyond you: not to re-  
 lye in another mans line, *that is*, in the things  
 that are prepared already. 17 \* But let him that *loves*  
 preacheth, reioyce in the Lord. 18 For he that  
 preacheth himselfe, is not allowed, but hee whom  
 the Lord praiseth. 1. cor. 1. 31.

### CHAP. 11. 5 Of godly boasting.

Would to God, yee could suffer a little my  
 foolishnesse, and indeed, ye suffer me. 2 For  
 I am ielous ouer you, with godly ielousie: for  
 I haue prepared you for one husband, to pre-  
 sent you as a pure virgine to Christ. 3 But I  
 feared lest as the serpent beguiled Eve through  
 his subtiltie, so your mindes should bee corrupt  
 from the simplicity that is in Christ. 4 For if he  
 that preacheth, preacheth another Iesus whom  
 we haue not preached: or if ye receive another  
 Goele whom we haue not receiued: either another  
 Gospel which yee haue not receiued, yee might  
 well



## II. CORINTHIANS.

well haue suffered *m.* 5 Verely I suppose that I was not inferiour to the very chiefe Apostles. 6 And though I be rude in speaking, yet I am not *in* knowledg<sup>e</sup>, but among you wee haue bene made manifest to the vtmost, in all things. 7 Haue I committed an offence, because I abused my selfe, that wee might be exalted, and because I preached to you the Gospel of God freely? 8 I robbed other Churches, and tooke wages of *them* to doe you seruice. 9 And when I *Chap.* was present with you, and had need, I was not *12.13.* slouthfull to the hinderance of any man: for that which was lacking vnto me, the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied, and in all things I kept and wil keepe my selfe, that I should not be grieuous to you. 10 The truth of Christ is in me, that this reioycing shall not be shewd against me in the regions of Achaia. 11 Wherefore? because I loue you not? God knoweth. 12 But what I doe, that wil I doe: that I may cut away occasion from them which desire occasion, that they might be found like vnto vs in that wherein they reioyce. 13 For such false Apostles are deceitful workers, and transforme themselves into the Apostles of Christ. 14 And no maruell: for Satan himselfe is transformed into an Angel of light. 15 Therefore it is no great thing, though his ministers transforme themselves, as though *they were* the ministers of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their works. 16 I say againe, let no man thinke, that

# CHAP. XI.

I am foolish, or else take me euen as a foole that  
 I also may boast my self a litle. 17 That I speake,  
 I speake it not after the Lord: but as it were foo-  
 lishly, in this ~~my~~ great boasting. 18 Seeing that  
 many reioyce after the flesh, I will reioyce also.  
 19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, because that yee  
 are wise. 20 For ye suffer, euen if a man bring  
 you into bondage, if a man deuoure ~~you~~, if a  
 man take ~~your~~ goods, if a man exalt himselfe, if a  
 man smite you on the face. 21 I speake as con-  
 cerning the reproch: as though that wee had  
 bene weake: but wherein any man is bolde (I  
 speake foolishly) I am bolde also. 22 They are  
 Hebrewes, so am I: they are Israelites, so am I: *Phil.*  
 they are the seed of Abraham, so am I: 23 They 3.5.  
 are the ministers of Christ (I speake as a foole)  
 I am more: in labours more abundant: in  
 stripes above measure: in prison more plente-  
 fully: in death oft. 24 Of the Iewes five times  
 received I fourtie *stripes* saue one. 25 I was  
 time \* beaten with rods: I was \* once stoned: *Actes*  
 I was ~~in~~ thrise \* shipwracke: night & day haue 16.23.  
 bene in the deepe sea. 26 In iourneying I was *Actes*  
 often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, 14.19.  
 in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among *Actes*  
 the Gentiles, in perils in the citie, in perils in 27.19  
 wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among  
 false brethren, 27 In wearinesse & painefulnesse,  
 in watching often in hunger & thirst, in fastings  
 often, in colde and in nakednesse. 28 Beside the  
 things which are outward, I am cumbered dayly,  
 and

## II. CORINTHIANS.

and have the care of all the Churches. 29 Who is weake and I am not weaker: who is often hurt, and I burne not? 30 If I must needs reioyce, I will reioyce of mine infirmities. 31 The God, even the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not. *Acts* 9.24. 32 In \*Damascus the gouernour of the people vnder king Aretas, layd watch in the city of the Damascens, and would haue caught me. 33 But at a window was I let downe in a basket thro-  
row the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. 12. 3 *The visions revealed to Paul.*  
**I**T is not expedient for mee no doubt to re-  
ioyce: for I will come to visions and reuelati-  
ons of the Lord. 2 I knowe a man in Christ a-  
boue fourteene yeeres agoe, (wher' er he were  
in the body, I cannot tell, or out of the body, I  
cannot tell: God knoweth) which was taken vp  
into the third heauen. 3 And I knowe such a  
man, (whether in the body, or out of the body,  
I cannot tell: God knoweth) 4 How that hee  
was taken vp into paradise, and heard wordes  
which cannot be spoken, which are not possible  
for man to vtter. 5 Of such a man will I reioyce:  
of my selfe will I not reioyce, except of mine  
infirmities. 6 For though I would re-  
ioyce, I should not be a foole: for I will write  
trueth, but I refraine, lest any man should  
pise of me about that he seeth in me, or that he hea-  
reth of me. 7 And lest I should be exalted out  
of measure through the abundance of reuelati-

## C H A P. XII.

ens, there was giuen vnto mee a pricke in the  
 flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet mee be-  
 cause I should not be exalted out of measure.  
 8 For this thing I berought the Lord thirfe, that  
 might depart from me. 9 And hee sayd vnto  
 me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power  
 is made perfect through weaknesse. Very gladly  
 therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmi-  
 ties, that the power of Christ may dwell in me.  
 10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in  
 reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in an-  
 gish for Christs sake: for when I am weake,  
 then am I strong. 11 I was a foole to boast my  
 selfe: ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue  
 bene commended of you: for in nothing was I  
 inferior vnto the very chiefe Apostles, though  
 I be nothing. 12 The signes of an Apostle were  
 wrought among you with all patience, with  
 signes and wonders, and great works. 13 For  
 what is it, wherein yee were inferiours vnto o-  
 ther churches, \* except that I haue not bene  
 faultful to your hinderance? forgive me this  
 wrong. 14 Behold, the third time I am ready to  
 come vnto you, and yett will I not be slouthfull  
 to your hinderance: for I seeke not yours, but  
 yours for the children ought not to lay vp for the  
 fathers, but the fathers for the children. 15 And  
 I will most gladly bestow, and wil be bestowed  
 for your soules: though the more I loue you,  
 the lesse I am loved. 16 But be it that I charged  
 you not. yett forasmuch as I was crafty, I tooke  
 you

*Chap.*  
*11.9.*

## II. CORINTHIANS.

you with guile. 17 Did I pill you by any of the  
whom I sent vnto you? 18 I haue desired Titus,  
and with him I haue sent a brother: did Titus  
pill you of any thing? walked wee not in the  
selfe same spirit? walked wee not in the same  
steps? 19 Againe, thinke ye that we excuse our  
selues vnto you? wee speake before God in  
Christ. But we do all things, dearly beloued, for  
your edifying. 20 For I feare, lest whē I come,  
I shall not finde you such as I would: and that I  
shall be found vnto you such as ye would not,  
and lest there bee strife, enuying, wrath, conten-  
tions, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, and  
discord. 21 If I feare lest when I come againe,  
my God abase mee among you, and I shall be-  
waile many of them which haue sinned already,  
and haue not repented of the vncleannesse, and  
fornication, and wantonnesse, which they haue  
committed.

CHAP. 13. 2 Paul rebuketh the Corinthians.

**I** Oe this is the third time that I come vnto  
you. In the mouth of two or three witness-  
ses shall euery word stand. 2 I told you before,  
and tell you before: as though I had bene pre-  
sent the second time, so write I now being ab-  
sent to them which heretofore haue sinned, & to  
all others, that if I come againe, I will not spare,  
3 Seeing that ye seeke experience of Christ, that  
he speaketh in me, which toward you is not weak,  
but is mighty in you. 4 For though he was cra-  
cified concerning his infirmities, yet liueth hee  
through

## C H A P. XIII.

through the power of God. And we no doubt  
 are weake in him, but wee shall liue with him,  
 through <sup>e</sup> power of God toward you. 5 \*Proue 1. Cor.  
 your selues whether yee are in the faith: ex- 12. 8.  
 mine your selues: knowe yee not your owne  
 felues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye  
 be reprobates? 6 But I trust that ye shal know  
 that we are not reprobates. 7 Now I pray vn-  
 to God that ye do none euil, not that we should  
 seeme approoued, but that yee should doe that  
 which is honest: though wee be as reprobates.  
 8 For we cannot do any thing against the truth,  
 but for the truerh. 9 For we are glad when we  
 are weake, and that ye are strong: this also wee  
 wish for, ~~our~~ your perfection. 10 Therefore  
 write I these things bring absent, lest when I am  
 present I should vse sharpnesse according to the  
 power which the Lord hath given me to edifica-  
 tion. & not to destruction. 11 Finally brethren,  
 fare ye well: be perfect: be of good comfort:  
 be of one minde: liue in peace, and the God of  
 loue and peace shalbe with you. 12 Greete one  
 another with \* an holy kisse. All the Saints sa- 1. Cor.  
 late you. 13 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, 16. 20.  
 and the loue of God, and the communion of the  
 holy Ghost be with you all, Amen.

¶ The second Epistle to the Corinthians,  
 written from Philippi, a citie in Mace-  
 donia, and sent by Titus and Lucas.

# THE EPISTLE OF THE Apostle Paul to the Galatians.

CHAP. 1. *6. He reprooueth the Galatians  
for revolting from his Gospel.*

*Titus*

*23.*



*Luke*

*24.*

PAUL an Apostle (not of men, neither by man,\* but by Iesus Christ and God the Father which hath raised him from the dead. 2 And all the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia. 3 Grace be with you, and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ, 4 Which gave himselfe for our sinnes, that hee might deliuer vs from this present euill world, according to the will of God euen our father, 5 To whom be glory for euer and euer, Amen. 6 I marvell that ye are so soone remooued away vnto another Gospel, from him that had called you in the grace of Christ, 7 Which is not another Gospel, saue that there be some which trouble you, and intend to peruert the Gospel of Christ. 8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen preach vnto you otherwise, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed. 9 As we sayd before, to say I now againe. If any man preach vnto you otherwise, than that which ye haue receiued, let him be accursed. 10 For now preach I mans doctrine, or Gods? or geat about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the seruant of Christ. 11 No. 12 I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospel which

*1. Cor.*

*25.1.*

*oyed.*

## C H A P. I.

was preached of me, was not after man. 12 For  
 neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught  
 it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ. 13 For  
 ye haue heard of my conuersation in time past,  
 in the Iewish religion, how that I persecuted 43.  
 the Church of God extremely, and wasted it, 9.1.  
 14 And profited in the Iewish religion aboue  
 many of my companions of mine owne nation,  
 and was much more zealous of the traditions  
 of my fathers. 15 But when it pleased God  
 (which had separated mee from my mothers  
 wombe, and called me by his grace) 16 To re-  
 uele his sonne in mee, that I should preach him  
 among the Gentile: immediately I communi- Ephe.  
 cated not with flesh and blood: 17 Neither 3.8.  
 came I againe to Hierusalem to them which  
 were Apostles before me, but I went into Ara-  
 bia and turned againe vnto Damascus. 18 Then  
 after three yeeres I came againe to Hierusalem  
 to visite Peter, & abode with him fifteene daies.  
 19 And none other of the Apostles sawe I, saue  
 Iames the Lordes brother. 20 Nowe the things  
 which I write vnto you, behold, I witness before  
 God, that I lie not. 21 After that I went into  
 the coastes of Syria and Cilicia: for I was vn-  
 known by face vnto the Churches of Iudea,  
 which were in Christ. 22 But they had heard of  
 him. 23 He which persecuted vs in time past,  
 nowe preacheth the faith which before hee de-  
 stroyed, 23 And they glorified God for me.



CHAP. 2. 17. 1844. are freely admitted.

2. pet. gave not place by subiect ion for an hour: the  
 10. 17. the first of y<sup>e</sup> Gosp<sup>l</sup> might continue with you  
 2. cor. 6 But by the n which seemed to be g<sup>o</sup> for a  
 19. 7. *not might* (so that foer they were in this p<sup>l</sup>  
 10. 34. fed, I am nothing the better: y<sup>e</sup> God accep<sup>t</sup> me  
 19. man: person) for the y<sup>e</sup> are the ch<sup>r</sup>re, he add  
 all s nothing to me *of me that I hat*. 7 And contr  
 10. 34 riue, when they saw y<sup>e</sup> the Gosp<sup>l</sup> ouer the ex  
 2. cor. 11. circumcision was committed vnto mee, as the  
 2. 11. *Gosp<sup>l</sup> ouer the Circumcision*, was vnto Peter  
 1. pet. 8 (Ho be that was mighty by Peter in y<sup>e</sup> apo  
 5. 9. fleship ouer the circumcision was al on y<sup>e</sup>  
 coloss. by me towa<sup>r</sup>d the Gentiles) 9 And wh<sup>o</sup> were  
 3. 25. and Cephas, & Iohn knew of the grace g<sup>o</sup> to  
 1. pet. given vnto me, which are c<sup>o</sup>unt<sup>d</sup> to be p<sup>l</sup>at  
 1. 17. they gaue to mee & to Barnabas the right hon<sup>o</sup>

## C H A P. II.

of ship, y<sup>e</sup> we should preach vnto the Gen-  
tles, and they vnto the Circumcision, 10 And  
only that we should remember the poore,  
and be diligent to doe so. And  
when Peter was come to Antiochia, withstood  
him to face: for he was to bee conuicted.  
Before that certaine came from Iames, he  
drew y<sup>e</sup> Gentiles but when they were come,  
he withdrew & separated himselfe, fearing them  
which were of the Circumcision. 13 And the  
other Iewes played y<sup>e</sup> hypocrites likewise with  
him, much that Barnabas was led away with  
them by that their hypocrisie. 14 But when I  
saw, that they went not the right way to the  
truth of the Gospel, I said vnto Peter before al  
repression being a Iewe, much as the Gentiles,  
and as like the Iewes: why constrainest thou  
the Gentiles to do like y<sup>e</sup> Iewes. 15 We which  
are by nature, and not sinners of the Gen-  
tles, do know that a man is not iustified by the  
workes of the Law, but by y<sup>e</sup> faith of Iesus Christ,  
when we (I say) haue beleued in Iesus Christ, that  
we might be iustified by the faith of Christ, and  
not by the workes of y<sup>e</sup> Law, because that by the  
workes of the Lawe no flesh shall bee iustified.

When while we seeke to bee made righte. Rom.  
Christ, we our selues are found sinners, 15  
therefore the minister of sinne: God for-  
d. For if I build againe the things that I  
haue destroyed, I make my selfe a trespasser.  
For I through the Law am dead to the Law,

## TO THE GALATIANS.

that I might liue vnto God. 20 I am crucified  
with Christ but I liue, *102* not I any more but  
Christ liueth in me: and in that that I now liue  
in the flesh, I liue by the faith in the Sonne of  
God, who hath loued me, and given himselfe for  
me. 21 I doe not abrogate the grace of God.  
for if righteousness be by the Lawe, then Christ  
died without a cause.

CHAP. 3. *The Galatians rebuked for  
refusing grace and leaning to the Law.*

**O** Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched  
you, that ye should not obey the truth, to  
whom Iesus Christ before was described in your  
sight, *101* among you crucified? 2 This would I learne of you, Received ye the Spirit  
by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of  
faith *preached*? 3 Are ye so foolish, that after ye  
haue begun in  $\gamma$  Spirit, ye would now be made  
perfect by the flesh? 4 Haue ye suffered so ma-  
ny things in vaine? if so be it be euen in vaine.

5 He therefore that ministrerh to you the Spi-  
rit, and worketh miracles among you, *100* doeth  
through the workes of the Law, or by the hear-  
ing of faith *preached*? 6 Ye rather as Abraham  
beleueed God, and it was\* imputed to him for  
righteousnesse. 7 Know ye therefore that they  
which are of faith the same are the children of  
Abraham. 8 For the Scripture foreseeing, that  
God would iustifie the Gentiles through faith  
*preached* before the Gospel vnto Abraham, *101*  
103. \* In thee shall all the Gentiles bee blessed

Gene.  
25. 6.  
Rom.  
4. 3.  
James  
2. 23.  
Gene.  
22. 3.  
Acts  
3. 25.

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed  
 with faithfull Abraham. 10 For as many as are  
 of the works of the Lawe, are vnder the curse:  
 for it is written, \* Cursed is euery man that con- *Deut.*  
 firmeth not in all things, which are written in *17. 26.*  
 the booke of the Law to doe them. 11 And that  
 no man is iustified by the Lawe in the sight of  
 God: it is euident: \* for the iust shall live by *Hab.*  
 faith. 12 And the Law is not of faith: but the *2. 4.*  
 man that shal do those things, shal live in them. *Leui.*  
 13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the *18. 3.*  
 Law, made a curse for vs (for it is written, \*Cur- *Deut.*  
 sed is euery one that hanged on tree) 14. That *21. 23.*  
 the blessing of Abraham might come on y Gen-  
 tiles through Christ Iesus: that wee might re-  
 ceiue the promise of the Spirit through faith.  
 15 Brethren, I speake as men doe: \* Though it be *Hebr.*  
 but a mans couenant, when it is confirmed, *9. 17.*  
 no man doeth abrogate it, or addeth any thing  
 thereto. 16 Nowe to Abraham and his seede  
 were the promises made. He saith not And to  
 the seedes as *speaking* of many: but, And to thy  
 seede, as of one, which is Christ. 17 And this I  
 say, that the couenant that was confirmed afore-  
 of God in respect of Christ, the Law which was  
 foure hundredeth and thirtie yeeres after, cannot  
 disannull that it should make y promise of none  
 effect. 18 For if the inheritance *of the Law*,  
 is no more by the promise, but God gaue it  
 freely vnto Abraham by promise. 19 Where-  
 fore then *serueth* the Law? It was added because

of the transgressions, till the seed came vnto  
 the which the promise was made and it was or-  
 dained by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.  
 20 Nowe a Mediatour is not a Mediatour of  
 one: but God is one. 21 & the Law then against  
 the promises of God? God forbid for if there  
 had bene a Lawe giuen which could haue giuen  
 life, surely righteousnesse should haue bene by  
 the Law. 22 But the Scripture hath concluded  
 all vnder sinne, that the promise by the faith of  
 Iesus Christ should bee giuen to them that be-  
 lieue. 23 But before faith came, we were kept  
 vnder the Lawe, as vnder a garison, and kept  
 vnto that faith, which should afterward be re-  
 ueiled. 24 Wherefore the Law was our schoole-  
 master to bring vs to Christ, that we might bee  
 made righteous by faith. 25 But after that faith  
 is come, wee are no longer vnder a school-ma-  
 ster. 26 For ye are all the sonnes of God by faith  
 in Christ Iesus. 27 For all ye that are baptised  
 into Christ, haue put on Christ. 28 There is nei-  
 ther Iew nor Grecian: there is neither bond nor  
 free: there is neither male nor female: for we are  
 all one in Christ Iesus. 29 And if ye be of Christ,  
 then are ye Abrahams seed, & heires by promise.

CHAP 4. *Christ hath redeemed vs from  
 the bondage of the Law.*

**T**hen I say, that the heire as long as he is a  
 childe, differeth nothing from a slave, though he be  
 Lord of all, 2 But is vnder tutors and gouernours,  
 vntill the time appointed of the Father.

Father. 3. Euen so, we when we were children,  
were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the  
world. 4 But when the fulnes of time was come,  
God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, &  
made vnder the Law, 5 That he might redeeme  
them which were vnder the Law, \*that we might *Rom.*  
receiue the adoption of the sonnes. 6 And be *8.15.*  
cause ye are sonnes. God hath sent forth the Spi-  
rit of his Sonne into your hearts, which cryeth,  
Abba, Father. 7 Wherefore, thou art no more  
a seruant, but a sonne now if thou be a sonne,  
thou art also the heire of God through Christ.  
8 But euen then, when ye knewe not God, yee  
did seruice vnto them which by nature are not  
gods. 9 But now seeing ye know God yea rather  
are known of God, how turne ye againe vnto  
simplicitie and beggerly rudiments, wherunto  
from the beginning ye will be in bondage againe?  
10 Ye obserue dayes, and moneths, and times,  
and yeeres. 11 I am in feare of you, lest I haue  
bestowed on you labour in vaine. 12 I reue as I  
(for I am euen as you) brethren. I beseech you: ye  
haue not hurt me at all. 13 And ye know, how  
through infirmitie of the flesh I preached the  
Gospel vnto you at the first. 14 And the triall  
of me which was in the flesh, yee despised not,  
neither abhorred: but ye receiued me as an An-  
gel of God, yea as Christ Iesus. 15 What was  
then your felicitie for I beare you record, that  
it had bene possible, yee would haue plucked  
out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them vnto

## TO THE GALATIANS.

me. 16 Am I therefore become your enemies,  
because I tell you the truth? 17 They are jea-  
lous ouer you amisse: yea, they would exclude  
you, y<sup>e</sup> ye should altogether loue them. 18 But  
it is a good thing to loue earnestly alwayes in a  
good thing, and not onely when I am present  
with you. 19 My little children of whom I tra-  
uaile in birth againe, vntill Christ bee formed in  
you. 20 And I would I were with you now, that  
I might change my voyce: for I am in doubt of  
you. 21 Tell me, ye that will be vnder the Lawe,  
doe ye not heare the Law? 22 For it is written

*Gene.* that Abraham had two sonnes, \* one by a ser-

16.15. uant, & \*one by a free woman 23 But he which

*Gene.* was of the seruant, was borne after the flesh and

21.1. he which was of the free woman, was borne by

promises. 24 By the which things another thing

is meant: for these *maters* are the two Testa-

ments, the one which is Agar of mount Sina,

which gendreth vnto bondage. 25 (For Agar &

Sina is a mountaine in Arabia, and it answereth

to Hierusalem which now is) and she is in bon-

dage with her children. 26 But Hierusalem,

which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs

*Jsa.* all 27 For it is written, \* Reioyce thou barren

54.1. that bearest no children: breake forth and crye,

thou that transteist not: for the desolate hath

many more children, then she which hath an hus-

*Rom.* band. 28 \* Therefore brethren, we are after the

8.9. maner of Isaac, children of the promise. 29 But

23 then he that was borne after the flesh, perse-

cutted

## C H A P. V.

cuted him that *was borne* after the spirit, *even*  
*so is now.* 30 But what saith the Scripture?  
 \* Put out the seruante and her sonne. for the *Gene.*  
 sonne of the seruante shall not be heire with the *21.10.*  
 sonne of the free woman. 31 Then brethren,  
 we are not children of the seruante, but of the  
 free woman.

C H A P. 5. *The worthinesse of Christian free-  
 dom, and how we should vs the same &c.*

**S**tand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith  
 Christ hath made vs free, and be not in angled  
 againe with the yoke of bondage. 2 \* Behold, I *Act.*  
 Paul say vnto you, that if yee be circumcised, *15.1.*  
 Christ shall profite you nothing. 3 For I testifie  
 againe to euery man, which is circumcised, that  
 he is bound to keepe the whole Lawe. 4 Ye are  
 \* abolsht: d from Christ who soeuer are iustified *1. Cor.*  
 by the Law, ye are fallen from grace. 5 For we *1. 17.*  
 through the Spirit waite for the hope of righte-  
 ousnes through faith. 6 For in Iesus Christ nei-  
 ther circumcision auaieth any thing, neither vn-  
 circumcision. but faith which worketh by love.  
 \* Ye did runne well: who did let you, that yee  
 did not obey the truth? 8 *It is* not the persua-  
 sion of him that calleth you. 9 \* Alas! leauen *1. Cor.*  
 doth leauen the whole lump. 10 I haue trust in *5. 6.*  
 you through y Lord, that ye wil be none other-  
 wise minded, but he y tro. bleth you, shall beare  
 his condemnation, who soeuer he be. 11 And  
 brethren, if I yet preach ci cumcision, why doe  
 I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slander of  
 the



the crosse abolished: 12 Would to God they  
were euen cut off, which doe disquiet you.  
13 For brethren, ye haue bene called vnto liber-  
tie only vfe not ~~your~~ libertie as an occasion  
to vfe it, but by loue serue one another. 14 For  
all y<sup>e</sup> Law is fulfilled in one word, which is this.

*Leuit.* \* Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. 15 If  
19. 18. ye bite and deuoure one another, take heed lest  
*mat.* ye be consumed one of another. 16 Then say,  
22. 39. \* Walke in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the  
*mark.* lustes of the flesh. 17 For the flesh lusteth against  
12 31. the Spirit, & the Spirit against the flesh: & these  
*rom.* are contrary one to the other, so that ye cannot  
13 9. doe the same things that ye would. 18 And if  
*iames* ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder the Law.  
2. 8. 19 Moreover the workes of the flesh are mani-  
*Ro.* fest which are adultery, fornication, vncleanness,  
13. 14. wantonnesse, 2. Idolatrie, witchcraft hatred, de-  
2. pet. bate, emulations, wrath, contentions, seditions, he-  
2. 11. resies, 21 Enuie, murders, drunkennesse, glotto-  
nie and such like, whereof I tell you before, as I  
also haue tolde you before, that they which doe  
such things, shall not inherite the kingdom of  
God. 22 But the fruite of the Spirit is love, joy,  
peace, long suffering, gentlenesse, goodnes, faith,  
23 Meeknesse temperance: against such there is  
no Law. 24 For they y<sup>e</sup> are Christes, haue cruci-  
fied the flesh with the affections & the lusts.  
25 If we liue in y<sup>e</sup> Spirit, let vs also walke in the  
Spirit. 26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glory  
prouoking one another, enuying one another.

CHAP

all men.

**B**rethren, if a man be suddenly taken in any  
offence, ye which are spirituall, restore such  
one with the spirit of meekenes, considering thy  
selfe, lest thou also be tempted. 2 Beare ye one  
others burden and so fulfill the Law of Christ.  
3 For if any man seeme to himselfe, that hee is  
for newhat, whē he is nothing, he deceiveth him-  
selfe in his imagination. 4 But let every man  
prooofe his owne worke, and then shall he haue  
reioycing in himselfe onely, and not in another.  
5 \* For every man shall beare his owne burden. 1 Cor.  
6 Let him that is taught in the word, make him 3.8.  
that hath taught him, partaker of all his goods. 2 Cor.  
7 He not deceived: God is not mocked: for 2.7.  
whatsoever a man soweth, that shall hee also  
reape. 8 For hee that soweth to his flesh, shall  
of the flesh reape corruption: but he that sow-  
eth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life euer-  
lasting. 9 \* Let vs not therefore be wearie of 2 The.  
well doing: for in due season we shall reape, if 3.13.  
we faint not. 10 While we haue therfore time,  
lets doe good vnto all men, but especially vn-  
to them, which are of the householde of faith.  
11 Yefee how large a letter I haue written vn-  
to you with mine owne hand. 12 As many as  
desire to make a faire shew in v flesh, they con-  
faine you to be circumcised, only because they  
would not suffer persecution for the crosse of  
Christ. 13 For they themselves which are circum-  
cised, keepe not the Law, but desire to haue you  
circumcised,

## TO THE EPHESIANS.

circumcised, y<sup>e</sup> they might reioyce in your flesh.  
 14 But God forbid that I should reioyce, but in  
 the crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, whereby the  
 world is crucified vnto me, & I vnto the world.  
 15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auail-  
 eth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new  
 creature. 16 And as many as walke according  
 to this rule, peace be vpon them, and mer-  
 cie, and vpon the Israel of God. 17 From hence-  
 forth let no man put me to businesse: for I beare  
 in my body the marks of the Lord Iesus. 18 Bre-  
 thren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with  
 your spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL

to the Ephesians.

CHAPTER 1. *Of the free election of God.*



PAUL an Apostle of IESVS  
 CHRIST by the wil of God, to  
 the \* Saints which are at Ephesus,  
 and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus.

2 Grace be with you, and peace  
 from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus  
 Christ. 3 \* Blessed be God, and the Father of our  
 Lord Iesus Christ, which hath blessed vs with all  
 spirituall blessings in heavenly things in Christ.  
 4 As he hath chosen vs in him, before the foun-  
 dation of the world, that we should be holy, and  
 without blame before him in loue: 5 Who  
 hath predestinated vs to bee adopted through

2. Cor.

1.3.

2. Cor.

1.3.

1. pet.

1.3.

Iesu  
 plea  
 in  
 ly a  
 have  
 forgi  
 8. V  
 inall  
 opene  
 ding to  
 fid in  
 fellest  
 in one  
 which  
 shew  
 accordi  
 keth all  
 will. 12  
 should b  
 whom a  
 the wor  
 situation  
 yee were  
 14 Whic  
 the rede  
 the prayse  
 ter that I  
 the Lorde  
 15 Ilea?  
 mention  
 God of o

## C H A P I.

Iesus Christ in himselfe, according to the good  
 pleasure of his wil. 6 To the praise of the glo-  
 ry of his grace wherewith he hath made vs free-  
 ly accepted in *his* beloned, 7 By whome wee  
 haue redemption through his blood, *even* the  
 forgiveness of finnes, according to his grace:  
 8 Whereby hee hath bene abundant toward vs  
 in all wilddome and vnderstanding, 9 And hath  
 opened vnto vs the mysterie of his will accord-  
 ing to his good pleasure which he had purpo-  
 sed in him, 10 That in the dispensation of the  
 fulnesse of the times, hee might gather together  
 in one all things, both which are in heauen, and  
 which are in earth, *even* in Christ: 11 In whom  
 also we are chosen when we were predestinate  
 according to the purpose of him which wor-  
 keth all things after the counsell of his owne  
 wil. 12 That wee, which first trusted in Christ,  
 should be vnto the prayse of his glory: 13 In  
 whom also ye *have* trusted, after that ye heard  
 the word of truth, *even* the Gospell of your  
 salvation, wherein also after that yee beloued,  
 yee were sealed with the holy Spirit of promise,  
 14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for  
 the redemption of that libertie purchased vnto  
 the prayse of his glory. 15 Therefore also af-  
 ter that I heard of the faith, which ye haue in  
 the Lorde Iesus, and loue toward all the Saints,  
 16 I cease not to giue thanks for you, making  
 mention of you in my prayers, 17 That the  
 God of our Lord Iesus Christ, that Father of  
 glory:

## TO THE EPHESIANS.

circumcised, y they might reioyce in your flesh.  
 14 But God forbid that I should reioyce, but in  
 the crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, whereby the  
 world is crucified vnto me, & I vnto the world.  
 15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auail-  
 leth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new  
 creature. 16 And as many as walke according  
 to this rule, peace be vpon them, and mer-  
 cie, and vpon the Israel of God. 17 From hence-  
 forth let no man put me to businesse: for I beare  
 in my body the marks of the Lord Iesus. 18 Bre-  
 thren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with  
 your spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL to the Ephesians.

CHAPTER 1. Of the Election of God.



PAUL an Apostle of IESVS  
 CHRIST by the wil of God, to  
 the \* Saints which are at Ephesus,  
 and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus:

2 Grace be with you, and peace  
 from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus  
 Christ. 3 \* Blessed be God, and the Father of our  
 Lord Iesus Christ, which hath blessed vs with all  
 spirituall blessings in heavenly things in Christ,  
 4 As he hath chosen vs in him, before the foun-  
 dation of the world, that we should be holy, and  
 without blame before him in loue: 5 Who  
 hath predestinated vs to be adopted through

2. Cor.  
 1. 3.

2. Cor.  
 1. 3.  
 1. pet.  
 1. 3.

2. Cor.

Iesus  
 pleas  
 ry of  
 ly acc  
 have  
 forgiv  
 8. W  
 in all v  
 opene  
 ding to  
 fed in h  
 falsesse  
 in one  
 which a  
 also we  
 accordi  
 keth all  
 will. 12  
 should b  
 whom al  
 the wor  
 saluati  
 yee were  
 14. Wh  
 the reden  
 the prayse  
 ter that I  
 the Lorde  
 16. I ceas  
 mention  
 God of o

## C H A P I.

Iesus Christ in himselfe, according to the good  
 pleasure of his wil. 6 To the prailè of the glo-  
 ry of his grace wherewith he hath made vs free-  
 ly accepted in *his* beloued, 7 By whome wee  
 haue redemption through his blood, *even* the  
 forgiveness of finnes, according to his grace:  
 8 Whereby hee hath bene abundant toward vs  
 in all wildome and vnderstanding, 9 And hath  
 opened vnto vs the mysterie of his will accord-  
 ing to his good pleasure which he had purpo-  
 sed in him, 10 That in the dispensation of the  
 fulness of the times, hee might gather together  
 in one all things, both which are in heauen, and  
 which are in earth, *in* Christ: 11 In whom  
 also we are chosen when we were predestinate  
 according to the purpose of him which wor-  
 keth all things after the counsell of his owne  
 will. 12 That wee, which first trusted in Christ,  
 should be vnto the prayse of his glory: 13 In  
 whom also ye *have* trusted, after that ye heard  
 the word of truth, *even* the Gospell of your  
 saluation, wherein also after that yee beleued,  
 yee were sealed with the holy Spirit of promise,  
 14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for  
 the redemption of that libertie purchased vnto  
 the prayse of his glory. 15 Therefore also af-  
 ter that I heard of the faith, which ye haue in  
 the Lorde Iesus, and loue toward all the Saints,  
 16 I cease not to giue thanks for you, making  
 mention of you in my prayers, 17 That the  
 God of our Lord Iesus Christ, that Father of  
 glory:

## TO THE EPHESIANS.

glory, might giue vnto you the Spirit of wisdom, and reuelation through the acknowledging of him, 18 That the eyes of your understanding may be lightened, that ye may know what the hope is of his calling, and what the riches of his glorious inheritance. In the Scriptures, 19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power toward vs, which beleeue, according to the working of his mightie power, 20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his right hande in the heavenly places, 21 Farre above all principallitie, and power, and might, and domination, and euerie Name that is named not in this world onely, but also in that that is to come, 22 And hath made all things subiect vnder his feete, and hath giuen him ouer all things to be the head to the Church, 23 Which is his body, *even* the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all things.

CHAP. 2. 8 *That we are saved by grace.*

**Colos. 2. 13.** **A**ND \*you hath he quickened that were dead in trespasses and sinnes, 2 Wherein in time past yee walked, according to the course of this worlde, *and* after the prince that ruleth in the ayre, *even* the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience. 3 Among whom we also had our conuersation in time past, in the lustes of our flesh, in fulfilling the will of the flesh and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, as well as others. 4 But God

## C H A P. II.

which is rich in mercy, through his great love  
 wherewith he loved vs, 5 Euen when we were  
 dead by sinnes, both quickened vs together in  
 Christ by grace ye are saved, 6 And hath  
 raised vs vp together, and made vs sit together in  
 heavenly places in Christ Iesus, 7 That hee  
 might shew in the ages to come the exceeding  
 riches of his grace, through his kinde will to-  
 wards vs in Christ Iesus 8 For by grace are ye  
 saved through faith, and that not of your selues,  
 but the gift of God, 9 Not of workes, lest any  
 should boast himselfe. 10 For wee are his  
 workmanship created in Christ Iesus vnto good  
 workes, which God hath ordained, that wee  
 should walke in them. 11 Wherefore remember,  
 that ye being in times past Gentiles in the flesh,  
 without circumcision of them, which are cal-  
 led circumcision in the flesh, made with hands,  
 12 that yee were, / first at that time without  
 Christ, were aliens from the common wealth  
 of Israel, were \* strangers from the covenants  
 of promise, and had no hope, and were without  
 God in the world. 13 But now in Christ Iesus ye  
 which once were farre off, are made neere by  
 the blood of Christ 14 For hee is our peace  
 which hath made of both one, and hath broken  
 downe of the partition wall, 15 \* In obroga- *Colos.*  
 tion through his flesh he hated, *but* the law *2.14.*  
 of commandments which stood in ordina-  
 ce to make of twaine one new man in him-  
 selfe, making peace, 16 And that hee might  
 reconcile

*Rom.*

9.4.



## TO THE EPHESIANS.

reconcile both vnto God in one body by his  
crosse, & slay hatred thereby, 17 And came and  
preached peace to you which were as farre off,  
and to them that were neere. 18 For through  
him wee both haue an entrance vnto the Father  
by one Spirit. 19 Now therefore ye are no more  
strangers and forreiners: but citizens with the  
Saints, and of the household of God, 20 And are  
built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and  
Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe  
corner stone, 21 In whom all the building cou-  
pled together, groweth vnto an holy Temple  
in the Lord, 22 In whom ye also are built toge-  
ther, to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.

CHAP. 3. 1. *The cause why the Iewes  
persecuted Paul.*

**F**OR this cause, I Paul am the prisoner of Iesus  
Christ for you Gentiles, 2 If ye haue heard  
of the dispensation of the grace of God, which  
is giuen me to youward, 3 That is, that by  
reuelation hath shewed this mysterie vnto mee  
(as I wrote aboue in few words, 4 Whereby  
when ye reade ye may knowe mine vnderstan-  
ding in the mysterie of Christ) 5 Which in o-  
ther ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of  
men, as it is now reueiled vnto his holy Apo-  
stles & Prophets by the Spirit, 6 That the Gen-  
tiles should be inheriters also, & of the same bo-  
dy, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the  
Gospel, 7 Whereof I am made a minister by  
the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto mee  
through

### C H A P. III.

ough the effectuall working of his power.  
 vnto me the least of al Saints is this grace  
 that I should preach among the Gentiles  
 of不可数able riches of Christ, 9 And to  
 cleare vnto al men what the fellowship of  
 misterie is, which fro the beginning of the  
 world hath bene hid in God, who hath created  
 all things by Iesus Christ, 10 To the intent, that  
 by vnto principalities and powers in heauen-  
 ly places, might bee knowen by the Church the  
 hidden wisdom of God, 11 According to  
 the eternal purpose, which he wrought in Christ  
 before the world: 12 By whom we haue bold-  
 ness and entrance with confidence by faith in  
 him, 13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at  
 tribulations for your sakes, which is your  
 glory, 14 For this cause I bow my knees vnto  
 the Father of our Lorde Iesus Christ, 15 (Of  
 whom is named the whole family in heauen, and  
 earth) 16 That he might graunt you accor-  
 ding to the riches of his glory, that ye may bee  
 strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man,  
 that Christ may dwel in your hearts by faith:  
 17 That ye being rooted & grounded in loue,  
 may be able to comprehend with al Saints what  
 is the breadth, and length, and depth, & height:  
 18 And to know the loue of Christ, which pas-  
 seth all knowledge, that ye may bee filled with all  
 the fulnes of God, 19 Vnto him therefore that is  
 able to doe exceeding abundantly aboue al that  
 we aske or thinke, according to the power that

worketh

worketh

## TO THE EPHESIANS.

worketh in vs, 21 Be prayse in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout al generations for ever, Amen.

CHAP 4. 1. *An exhortation to mutual loue.*

**I** Therefore, being prisoner in the Lorde, pray you that yee walke worthy of the vocation wherunto ye are called, 2 With al humbilities of mind, & meeknes with long suffering supporting one another through loue, 3 Endeavouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace 4 There is one body, and one Spirit, euen as ye are called in one hope of your vocation. 5 There is one Lorde, one Faith, one Baptisme, 6 One God and Father of all, which is aboue al, & through all, and in you al. 7 But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ. 8 Wherefore he saueth, When he ascended vp on high, he leaues captiuitie captiue, and gaue giftes vnto men 9 (Now, in that he ascended, what is it but that he had also descended first into the lowest part of the earth 10 Hee that descended is euen the same that ascended, farre aboue all heauiens, that he might fill all things) 11 He therefore gaue some to be Apostles and some Prophets, and some Euangelists, and some Pastours, and Teachers 12 For the repairing of the Saints, for the worke of the ministry, and for the edification of the body of Christ, 13 Till we all meet together (in the vnitie of faith, and that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfect

# CHAP. IIII.

man, and vnto the measure of the age of the ful-  
 nes of Christ, 14 That we henceforth bee no  
 more children, wauering and caried about with  
 euery wind of doctrine, by the deceit of men, and  
 with craftines, whereby they lay in waite to de-  
 ceine. 15 But let vs follow the truth in loue,  
 and in al things growe vp into him, which is the  
 head, *that is* Christ. 16 By whome all the body  
 being coupled & knit together by euery ioynt,  
 for the furniture *thereof* (according to the effe-  
 ctuall power, *which is* in the measure of euery  
 part) receiueth increase of the body vnto the  
 edifying of it selfe in loue. 17 This I say there-  
 fore and testifie in the Lord, that ye hencefoorth  
 walke not as \*other Gentiles walke in vanitie of  
 the minde, 18 Hauing their vnderstanding  
 darkned & being strangers from the life of God  
 through the ignorance that is in them because  
 of the hardnesse of their heart: 19 Which be-  
 ing past feeling, haue giuen themselues vnto  
 wantonnesse to worke al vncleannesse, *euery* with  
 greedines. 20 But ye haue not so learned Christ,  
 21 Ifso bee yee haue heard him, and haue bene  
 taught by him, as the truth is in Iesus, 22 \* *That*  
 ye cast off, concerning the conuersation  
 in time past, that olde man that is corrupt  
 through the deceineable luses, 23 And be re-  
 newed in the spirit of your minde, 24 And put  
 on the newe man, which after God is created  
 in righteousnes, and true holines. 25 Where-  
 fore cast off lying, and speake euery man truth

Rom.  
1.21.

Col  
3.8

## TO THE EPHESIANS

unto his neighbour: for we are members one of another. 25 Be angry but sinne not let the sunne goe downe vpon your wrath, Neither giue place to the deuill. 26 Let him that stole, steale no more: but let him rather labour, and worke with his handes the thing which is good, that he may haue to giue vnto them that needeth. 27 Let no corrupt communication proceede out of your mouthes: but that which is good to the vse of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers. 28 And let the holy Spirit of God, by whom ye are sealed vnto the day of redemption. 29 Let all bitterness, and anger, and wrath, crying, and railing speaking bee put away from you, with all malicion foule. 30 Bee ye courteous one to another and tender hearted, freely forgiving one another: euen as God for Christs sake freely forgave you.

CHAP. 5. 13 The burden of the lawe is taken away

*John*

13.34.

*Thap.*

3.29.

**B**E vee therefore followers of God as dear children, 2 And walke in loue, as Christ hath loved vs & himselfe giuen himselfe for vs an offering and a sacrifice of a fragrant smelling fauour to God. 3 But fornication, uncleannes or couetousnes leaue not becommed among you as it becometh the Saints. Neither filthie, and enuie, wrath, hatred, railing, which are things of the darknes, giuing of thanks. 5 For this we labour, as for the whoremonger, neither vncleane person

# CHAP. V.

1. Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: *Mat.*  
 2. For such things cometh the wrath of God vpon. *24. 4.*  
 3. The children of disobedience, 7 Be not there-  
 4. fore companions with them. 8. For yee were  
 5. once darkness but are now light in the Lord:  
 6. walke as children of light, 9. (For the fruit of  
 7. the spirit is) in all goodnesse, and righteousness,  
 8. and truth) to Approuing that which is pleasing  
 9. vnto the Lord. 10. And haue no fellowship with the  
 11. unfruitfull workes of darkness, but euen reprove  
 12. them. 12. For it is shaine euen to speake  
 13. of things, which are done of them in secreete.  
 14. All things when they are reprobued of  
 15. the light are manifest: for it is light that maketh  
 16. all things manifest. 17. Wherefore he saith, A-  
 18. wake thou that sleepest, and stand vp from the  
 19. dead: Christ shall giue thee light. 18. Take  
 20. heed therefore that yee walke circumspectly,  
 21. not as fooles, but as <sup>\*</sup> wise. 19. Redeeming the *Colos.*  
 22. season: for the dayes are euill. 20. <sup>\*</sup> Wherefore *4. 5.*  
 23. be not vnwise, but vnderstand what the will *Rom.*  
 24. of the Lord is. 21. And bee not drunken with *12. 2.*  
 25. wine wherein is excesse: but bee fulfilled with *1. thes.*  
 26. the spirit, 22. Speaking vnto your selues in *4. 3.*  
 27. psalms & hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing,  
 28. and making melody to the Lord in your hearts,  
 29. as if ye were singing alwayes for all things vnto  
 30. God euen the Father, in the Name of our Lord  
 31. Iesus Christ, 27. Submitting your selues one to  
 32. another

**Col.** another in the feare of God. 22 \*Wives, submit  
 3.18. your selues vnto your husbands, as vnto  $\gamma$  Lord.  
**1. Cor.** 22 \*For the husband is the wifes head, euen as  
 21.3. Christ is the head of the Church, and the same is  
 the Saviour of his body. 24 Therefore, as the  
 Church is in subiection to Christ, euen so let  
 the wifes be to their husbands in euery thing.  
**Colos.** 25 \*Husbands, loue your wifes, euen as Christ  
 3.12. loved the Church, & gaue himselfe for it. 26 That  
 he might sanctifie it, and cleanse it by the washing  
 of water through the word, 27 That he might  
 make it vnto himselfe a glorious Church, not  
 hauiing spot or wrinkle or any such thing: but that  
 it should be holy and without blame. 28 So  
 ought men to loue their wifes, as their owne  
 bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.  
 29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh,  
 but nourisheth and cheriseth it, euen as the  
 Lord ~~loves~~ the Church. 30 For we are members  
**Gene** of his body, of his flesh, & of his bones. 31 \*For  
 2.24. this cause shall a man leaue father, and mother,  
**mat.** and shall cleaue to his wife, and they twaine shall  
 19.5. be one flesh. 32 This is a great secret, but I speake  
**mark.** concerning Christ, and concerning the Church.  
 20.7. 33 Therefore euery one of you ~~also~~ let eue-  
**1. cor.** ry one loue his wife, euen as himselfe, and as  
 6.16. the wife ~~is~~ that she feare her husband.

CHAP. 6. Duties of children, seruants, and masters.

**Colos.** **C**hildren, \*obey your parents in  $\gamma$  Lord, for  
 3.20. this is right, 2 Honor thy father & mother  
 (which

(which is the first comendement with promise)  
 3 That it may be well with thee, and that thou  
 mayest live long on earth. 4 And ye fathers pro-  
 uoke not your children to wrath but bring the  
 vpon instruction and information of the Lord.  
 5 Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are *Colos.*  
 your masters according to the flesh, with feare 3 22.  
 and trembling in singlenesse of your hearts, as *1. tim.*  
 vnto Christ, 6 Not with seruice to the eye, as 2. 9.  
 men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing *1. pet.*  
 the will of God from the heart, 7 With good 2. 18.  
 will, seruing the Lord and not men 8 And know  
 ye that whatsoever good thing any man doth,  
 that same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether  
 he be bond or free. 9 And ye masters doe the  
 same things vnto them, putting away threatening, *Deut.*  
 and know that euen your master also is in hea- 10. 17.  
 uen, neither is there \* respect of person with 2. *chr.*  
 him. 10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the 11. 7.  
 Lord, and in the power of his might. 11 Put on *1. cor.* 34.  
 the whole armour of God, that ye may be able 19 *act.*  
 to stand against the assaults of the deuill. 12 For 10. 34.  
 we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but a *1. tim.*  
 gainst \* principalities, against powers, & against 2. 11.  
 the worldly gouernours, *the princes* of the darke- *galat.*  
 nesse of this world, against spirituall wickednes- 2 6.  
 ses *which are* in the hid places. 13 For this cause *colos.*  
 take vnto you the whole armour of God, that 3. 25.  
 ye may be able to resist in the euill day, and ha- 1. *pet.*  
 uing furnished all things, stand fast. 14 Stand 1. 17.  
 therefore, and your loines gird about with veri- *Chap.*



## TO THE EPHESIANS.

tie, and hauing on the brest plate of truthfull-  
 nesse, 15 And your seere shod with the eu-  
 ratation of the Gospel of peace. 16 And take  
 the shilde of faith, wherewith ye shall  
 quenche al the fierie darts of the wicked,  
 take the helmet of saluation and the sword  
 of the Spirit, which is the word of God, and  
 pray alwayes with all maner prayer and sup-  
 plication in the Spirit: and watch thereunto  
 with all perseuerance and supplication for all time,  
 19 And for me, that vtterance may be giuen vnto  
 me, that I may open my mouth boldly to pub-  
 lish the secret of the Gospel, 20 Whereof I am  
 the ambassadour in bonds, that in them I may  
 speake boldly, as I ought to speake. 21 But that  
 ye may also know mine affaires, my what I doe,  
 Tychicus my deare brother and faithfull min-  
 ister in the Lord, shall shewe you of all things,  
 22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same  
 purpose, that ye might know mine affaires, and  
 that hee might comfort your hearts. 23 I keepe  
 love with the brethren and loue with faith from  
 God the Father and from the Lord Iesus Christ,  
 24 Grace with all them which loue our Lord  
 Iesus Christ, to their immortallitie, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephe-  
 sians, and sent by Tychicus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL  
to the Philippians.

CHAP. 1. 27 *Exhortation to Unity,*  
*18 and patience.*



PAUL and Timotheus the seruants  
of IESVS CHRIST, to all  
the Saints in Christ Iesus which  
are at Philippi, with the Bishops  
and Deacons: 2 Grace be with  
you, and peace from God our Father, and from  
Iesus Christ. 3 I thank my God, *ha-*  
*u*ing you in perfect memory. 4 (Alwayes in all  
my prayers for all you, praying with gladnesse)  
of the fellowship which yee haue in  
the Gospel, from the first day vnto nowe. 5 And  
I am perswaded of this same thing, that he that  
hath begun *in* good worke in you, will per-  
forme it vntill the day of Iesus Christ, 7 As it  
becometh me so to iudge of you all, because  
I haue you in remembrance, that both in my  
trials, and in *my* defence, and confirmation of  
the Gospel you all were partakers of my grace.  
For God is my record, howe I long after you  
from the very heart roote in Iesus Christ.  
And thus I pray, that your loue may abound,  
and be more in knowledge, and in all  
iudgement. 10 That ye may allow those things  
which are best, that ye may be pure, and without  
foule vntill the day of Christ, 11 Filled with  
the fruits of righteousness, which are by Iesus  
Christ, to the glory and praise of God. 12 I  
would

## TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

would ye vnderstoode, brethren, that the things which *haue come* vnto mee, are turned rather to the furthering of the Gospel, 13 So that my hands in Christ are famous thorowout all the iudgement hall, and in all other place, 14 In so much that many of the brethren in the Lord are boldened through my bandes, and dare more frankly speake the word. 15 Some preach Christ euen through enny and strife, and some al so of good will 16 The one part preacheth Christ of contention *and* not purely, supposing to adde more affliction to my bands 17 But the others of loue, knowing that I am set for  $\gamma$  defence of the Gospel. 18 What then yet Christ is preached al manner wayes, whether *it be* vnder a pretence, or sincerely: and I therein ioy: ye and I will ioy. 19 For I know that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer, and by the helpe of the Spirit of Iesus Christ, 20 As I frequently looke for, & hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all confidence, as alwayes so now Christ shalbe magnified in me body, whether *it be* by life, or by death. 21 For Christ is to me both in life, and in death, advantage. 22 And whether to liue in the flesh *is more* profitable for me, and what to chuse I know not. 23 For I am distressed betwene both, desiring to be loosed and to be with Christ, which is better of all. 24 Neuertheless, to abide in the flesh, is more needefull for you. 25 And this am I sure of, that I shall abide, and with you all continue

## CHAP. II.

for your furtherance. and ioy of your faith,  
 15 That yee may more abundantly reioyce in  
 Iesus Christ for me, by my comming to you a-  
 gaine. 17 Onely let your conuersation be, as it  
 becometh the Gospel of Christ, that whether I  
 come and see you, or els be absent, I may heare  
 of your matters that ye continue in one Spirit,  
 and in one minde fighting together through the  
 faith of the Gospel. 28 And in nothing feare  
 your aduersaries, which is to them a token of  
 perdition, and to you of saluation, and that of  
 God. 29 For vnto you it is given for Christ,  
 that not onely yee should beleue in him, but  
 also suffer for his sake, 30 Having y<sup>e</sup> same fight,  
 which ye saw in me, and now heare to be in me.

### CHAP. 2. 3 *Humilitie commended by Christs example.*

If there be theefore any consolation in Christ,  
 If any comfort of loue, if any fellowship of the  
 Spirit, if any compassion & mercy, 2 Fulfill my  
 ioy, that ye belike minded, having y<sup>e</sup> same loue,  
 being of one accorde, and of one iudgement,  
 3 That nothing be done through contention, or  
 vainglory, but that in meekenesse of minde  
 euery man esteeme other better then himselfe.  
 4 Look not euery man on his owne things, but  
 euery man also on the things of other men.  
 5 Let the same minde bee in you that was enen  
 in Christ Iesus, 6 Who being in the forme of  
 God, thought it no robbery to be equal w<sup>th</sup> God:  
 But hee made himselfe of no reputation, and  
 tooke

## TO THE EPHESIANS.

tooke on him the forme of a seruant, and was made like vnto men, and was found in flesh as a man. 8 He humbled himselfe & became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the Crosse.

9 Wherefore God hath also highly exalted him, & giue him a Name aboue euery name: so that at the Name of Iesus should euery knee bow, both of things in heauen, and things in earth, and things vnder the earth. 11 And that euery tongue should confesse, that Iesus Christ is the Lord vnto the glory of God the Father. 12 Wherefore my beloved, as we haue alwayes obeyed him, not as in my presence onely: but now much more in mine absence, so make an ende of you: of his saluation with feare and trembling. 13 I exhort you God which worketh in you, both the will and the deed, *every* of his good pleyure. 14 Do all

*1. Pet.* things without \* murmuring and reasonings,

*4. 2.* 15 That ye may be blamelesse and pure: the sonnes of God without rebuke in the midst of a naughty and crooked nation, among whom ye shine as \* lights in the world. 16 Holding forth

*Mat.* the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not run in vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine. 17 Yea, and though I be offered vp vp in the sacrifice, and seruaice of your faith, I am glad, & reioyce with you all. 18 For the same cause also be ye glad, and reioyce with me. 19 And I trust in the Lorde Iesus, to send

*Act.* \* Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also may  
*2 Cor.* be of good comfort, when I knowe your state.

### CH A P. III.

25 For I haue no man like minded, who will  
 faithfully care for your matters. 21<sup>st</sup> I or all seeke *1. Cor.*  
 their owne, and not that which is Iesus Christes. *10. 24*  
 22 But ye know y<sup>e</sup> proofe of him, that as a sonne  
 with the father, he hath liued with mee in the  
 Gospel. 23 Him therefore I hope to send as soone  
 as I know how it wil go with me, 24 And trust  
 in the Lord that I also my selfe shal come thort.  
 25 But I supposed it necessary to send my  
 brother Epaphroditus vnto you, my compassion  
 for you, & fellow souldier, even your messen-  
 ger, and he that ministered vnto me such things as  
 I needed. 26 I or he longed after all you, & was  
 full of heavinesse, because y<sup>e</sup> had heard, that he  
 was sicke. 27 And no doubt he was sicke,  
 & nere vnto death: but God had mercy on  
 him, and not on him onely, but on me also: lest  
 I shoulde haue sorow vpon sorow. 28 I sent  
 him therefore the more diligently, that when y<sup>e</sup>  
 shoulde see him againe, yee might reioyce, and I  
 might be the lesse sorowfull. 29 Receiue him  
 therefore in the Lorde with all gladnesse, and  
 make much of such. 30 Because that for the  
 wille of Christ he was nere vnto death, and re-  
 garding his life, to fulfill that seruice which  
 was due vnto you, and for you it is a rare thing.

CHAP. 5. 2 *False apostles confuted.* 10 *The*  
*fruit of the Spirit.*

And neuer my brethren reioyce in the Lord.  
 It grieueth me not to write y<sup>e</sup> same things  
 to you, and for you it is a rare thing. 2 Beware  
 of

## TO THE PHILIPPIANS,

of dogges: Beware of euill workers: beware of the concision. 3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit and reioyce in Christ Iesus, & haue no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that hee hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, much more I.

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, \* an Ebrew of

the Ebrewes, by \* the Law a Pharise. 6 Con-

cerning zeale, I persecuted the Church: touching the righteousness which is in the Law, I

was unbeakeable. 7 But the things that were vantage vnto mee, the same I counted losse for Christes sake. 8 Yea, doubtlesse I thinke all

things but losse for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lord, for whom I haue

couated all things losse, and doe iudge them to be doing, that I might winne Christ, 9 And

might be found in him, *that is* not hauing mine owne righteousness, which is of the Law, but

that which is through the faith of Christ, *that is* the righteousness which is of God through faith.

10 That I may know him, and the vertue of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his afflictions, and be made conformable vnto his death.

11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead: 12 Not as though I had already attained *to it*, either were already

perfect but I follow, if that I may comprehend *that* for whose sake also I am comprehended of

Christ

Christ

## C H A P. IIII.

Christ Iesus. 13 Brethren, I count not my selfe,  
that I haue attained *to it*, but one thing I *doe*: I  
forget that which is behinde, and I endeavour my  
selfe vnto that which is before, 14 And follow  
hard toward the marke, for the prize of the high  
calling of God in Christ Iesus. 15 Let vs there-  
fore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and  
if ye be otherwise minded, God shall reuile e-  
uen the same vnto you. 16 Notwithstanding, *in*  
*that* wherunto we are come, let vs proceed by  
one tale, that we may minde one thing. 17 Bre-  
thren, be followers of mee, and looke on them,  
which walke so, as ye haue vs for an example.  
18 \* For many walke, of whom I haue tolde you *Rom.*  
often and now tell you weeping, *that they are* 16. 17.  
the enemies of the Crosse of Christ 19 Whose  
ende is damnation, whose God is their belly, and  
whose glory is to their shame, which minde  
earthly things. 20 But our conuersation is in  
heauen, from whence also wee looke for the  
\* Saviour, *euen* the Lord Iesus Christ, 21 Who *1. Cor.*  
shall change our vile body, that it may be fashi- *17.*  
oned like vnto his glorious body according to *titus*  
the working, whereby he is able euen to subdue *2. 13.*  
all things vnto himselfe.

## C H A P. 4. 10 *Liberalitie commended.*

**T**herefore, my brethren beloued and longed  
for, my ioy & my crowne, so continue in the  
Lord, ye beloued. 2 I pray Euodias, & beseech  
Syniche. that they be of one accord in y<sup>e</sup> Lord.  
3 Yea, and I beseech thee, faithfull yokefellow,  
helpe



## TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

helpe those *women*, which laboured w<sup>th</sup> me in the  
 Gospel, with Clement also, & with other my fel-  
*Reuel.* low labourers, whose names are in y<sup>e</sup> booke of  
 3.5 & life. 4 Reioyce in the Lord alway againe I say.  
 10.8. reioyce. 5 Let your patient mind be knowne  
 & 21. vnto all men. The Lord is at hand. 6 Be nothing  
 27. carefull, but in all things let your requies bee  
 shewed vnto God in prayer, and supplication w<sup>th</sup>  
 giuing of thanks. 7 And y<sup>e</sup> peace of God which  
 passeth all vnderstanding, shall prelerne your  
 hearts & minds in Christ Iesus. 8 Furthermore,  
 brethren, whatsoeuer things are true, whatsoeuer  
 things are honest, whatsoeuer things are iust,  
 whatsoeuer things are pure, whatsoeuer things  
 are worthy loue, whatsoeuer things are of good  
 report, if there be any vertue, or if there be any  
 praise, thinke on these things, 9 Which ye haue  
 both learned, & receiued, & heard, & seene in me,  
 those things do, & the God of peace shall be w<sup>th</sup>  
 you. 10 Now I reioyce also in the Lord greatly  
 that now at the last your care for me springeth  
 afresh, wherein notwithstanding yee were care-  
 ful, but ye lacked opportunity. 11 I speake not  
 because of want: for I haue learned in whatsoe-  
 uer state I am therewith to be content. 12 And  
 I can be abased, & I can abound: euery where  
 all things I am instructed, both to be full, & to be  
 hungry, & to abound, & to haue want. 13 I am  
 able to doe all things through y<sup>e</sup> helpe of Christ  
 which strengtheneth me. 14 Notwithstanding  
 ye haue well done, that ye did communicate



## C H A P. I.

mine affliction. 15 And yee Philippians know also that in the beginning of the Gospel when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me, concerning the matter of giving and receiuing, but ye onely. 16 For euen when I was in Thessalonica ye sent once & afterward againe for my necessitie, 17 Not that I desire a gift: but I desire the fruite which may further your reckoning. 18 Now I haue receiued all, and haue plenrie: I was euen filled, after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus that which came from you, an odour that smelleth sweete, a sacrifice acceptable and pleasant to God. 19 And my God shall fulfill all your necessities through his riches with glory in Iesus Christ. 20 Vnto God euen our Father, be praise for euermore, Amen. 21 Salute all the Saints in Christ Iesus, The brethren which are with mee, greete you. 22 All the Saints salute you, and most of al they which are of Cæsars household. 23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, be with you all, Amen.

¶ Written to the Philippians from Rome,  
and sent by Epaphroditus.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL to the Colossians.

CHAP. I. 20. *That all the partes of our  
Saluation consist in Christ alone.*



PAUL an Apostle of Iesus Christ,  
by the will of God, & Timotheus  
our brother, 2 To them which are  
at Colosse, Saints & faithfull bre-

Men

thren

## TO THE COLOSSIANS.

brethren in Christ: Grace be w<sup>th</sup> you, and peace from  
 God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.  
 3 We giue thanks to God euen y<sup>e</sup> Father of our  
 Lord Iesus Christ, alwayes praying for you:  
 4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Iesus,  
 and of ~~our~~ loue toward all Saints, 5 For the  
 hopes sake, which is laid vp for you in heauen,  
 whereof ye haue heard before by the word of  
 traueth, ~~which is~~ the Gospel, 6 Which is come  
 vnto you, euen as it is vnto all the world, and is  
 fruitfull as it is also among you, from the day  
 that ye heard & truely knew the grace of God,  
 7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fel-  
 low seruant which is for you a faithful minister  
 of Christ: 8 Who hath also declared vnto vs  
 your loue in the Spirit. 9 For this cause we al-  
 so since y<sup>e</sup> day we heard of it cease not to pray  
 for you, & to desire y<sup>e</sup> ye might be fulfilled with  
 knowledge of his will, in all wise done & spitu-  
 tual vnderstanding. 10 That ye might walk  
 worthy of the Lord, & please him in all things  
 being fruitfull in all good workes, & increasing  
 in the knowledge of God, 11 Strengthened with  
 all might through his glorious power, into pa-  
 tience, and long suffering with ioyfulness

Mat. 12. Gining thanks vnto the Father, which hat  
 8. 17. made vs meete to be partakers of y<sup>e</sup> inheritance  
 17. of the Saints in light, 13 Who hath deliuered  
 5. vs from the power of darknesse, & hath trans-  
 5. 17. lated vs into the kingdome of his deare Sonne  
 17. 14 In whom we haue redemption through his  
 blood

# CHAP. I.

blood, *that is* the forgiuence of sinnes, 15 Who  
 is the \* image of the inuisible God, the first be- *Hebr.*  
 gotten of euery creature. 16 \*I or by him were 1.3.  
 al things created, which are in heauen, & which *Iohn*  
 are in earth, things visible and inuisible: whether 1.3.  
*the* Thrones, or Dominions, or Principalities,  
 or powers, al things were created by him, & for  
 him. 17 And he is before al things, & in him al  
 things consist. 18 And he is y head of the body  
 of the Church: he is the beginning, \*and the first *Reue.*  
 begotten of the dead, that in all things he might 1.5.  
 haue the preeminence. 19 \*For it pleased *the* 1. cor.  
 Father, y in him should al fulnesse dwell, 20 And 15.20  
 through peace made by that blood of that his *chap.*  
 crosse, to reconcile to him selfe through him, 2.9.  
 through him, *(sa)*, all things, both which are in *Iohn*  
 earth, & which are in heauen. 21 And you which 1.14.  
 were in times past strangers & enemies, because  
 your mindes were *(et)* in euill workes, hath hee  
 now also reconciled. 22 In that body of his flesh  
 through death to make you holy, and vnblame-  
 able and without fault in his sight, 23 If ye con-  
 tinue grounded and fastened in the faith, & he  
 not moued away from y hope of the Gospel,  
 whereof ye haue heard, & which hath him prea-  
 ched to euery creature which is vnder heauen,  
 whereof I Paul am a minister. 24 Now reioyce  
 in my sufferings for you, & fulfill the rest of the  
 afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies  
 sake which is the Church, 25 Whereof I am a  
 minister, according to the dispensation of God,  
 which

## TO THE COLOSSIANS.

which is giuen mee vnto youward, to fulfill the  
**Rom.** word of God, 26 *\*Which is the mysterie of*  
**16. 15.** since the world began, & from all ages, but is ex-  
*ephes.* is made manifest to his Saints, 27 To whom  
**3. 9.** God woulde make knownen what is the riches  
**2. tim.** of his glorious mysterie among the Gentiles,  
**1. 10.** which riches is Christ in you, the hope of glory,  
*titus* 28 Whom we preach, admonishing euery man,  
**1. 2.** and teaching euery man in all wisdom, that we  
**1. pet.** may present euery man perfect in Christ Iesus,  
**E. 20. 29** Whereunto I also labour & strive according  
 to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. 2.     16. *Of abstinence from meats,*  
 18. *Of withdrawing of Angels.*

**F**OR I would ye knewe what great fighting I  
 haue for your sakes, & for them of Laodicea,  
 and for as many as haue not seene my person in  
 the flesh, 2 That their hearts might be comfort-  
 ed, & they knit together in love, & in all riches  
 of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to know  
 the mysterie of God, euen the Father, and of  
 Christ: 3 In whom are hid all the treasures of  
 wisdom and knowledge. 4 And this I say lest  
 any man shoulde beguile you with enticing  
 wordes: 5 *\*For though I be absent in the flesh,*  
 yet am I with you in the spirit, reioicing, and  
 beholding your order, and your stedfast faith in  
 Christ. 6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ  
 Iesus the Lord, & walke in him, 7 Rooted and  
 built in him, & established in the faith, as ye haue  
 bene taught, abounding therein with thankes.

**1. Cor.**  
**5. 3.**

## C H A P. II.

8 Beware lest there be any man <sup>y</sup> spoile  
 you through philosophie, and vaine deceite,  
 through the traditions of men according to the  
 rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.  
 9 For in him dwelleth al the fulnesse of <sup>y</sup> God-  
 head bodily. 10 And ye are compl te in him,  
 which is the head of all principalitie & power.  
 11 In whom also ye are \* circumcised with cir- *Rom.*  
 cuncision made without hands, by putting off *2. 29.*  
 the sinful body of the flesh, through the circum-  
 cision of Christ, 12 In that ye \* are buried with *Rom.*  
 him through Baptisme, in whom ye are also rai- *6. 4.*  
 sed vp together through the faith of the opera- *ephes.*  
 tion of God, which raysed him from the dead. *1. 19.*  
 13 \* And you which were dead in finnes, & in the *ephes.*  
 uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened *2. 10.*  
 together with him, forgiving you all <sup>your</sup> tres-  
 passes, 14 And putting out the \* hand writing of *ephes.*  
 ordinances that was against vs which was con- *2. 13.*  
 trary to vs, he euen tooke it out of the way, and  
 fastned it vpon the crosse, 15 And hath spoyled  
 the Principalities, and powers and hath made a  
 shew of them openly, and hath triumphed over  
 them in the same *crosse*. 16 Let no man there-  
 fore condemne you in meate and drinke, or in  
 respect of an holy day, or of the new moone, or  
 of the Sabbath *dayes*, 17 Which are *but* a sha-  
 dowe of things to come but <sup>y</sup> body is in Christ.  
 18 Let no man at his pleasure beare rule ouer  
 you by humblenesse of mind, and worshipping  
 of Angels, aduancing himselfe in those things  
which

## TO THE COLOSSIANS.

which he neuer sawe, rashly putt vp with his  
fleshly minde. 19 And holdeth not the head,  
whereof all the body furnished and knit toge-  
ther by joynts and bandes, increaseth with the  
increasing of God. 20 Wherefore if ye be dead  
with Christ from the ordinances of the world,  
why, as though ye lived in the world, are ye en-  
dened with traditions? 21 *A*, Touch not, Taste  
not, Handle not. 22 Which all perish with the  
vsing, and are after the commandements and do-  
ctrines of men. 23 Which things haue in deede  
a shew of wisdom, in voluntarie religion and  
humbleness of minde, and in not sparing the  
body, which are things of no value, *first* they  
pertaine to the filling of the flesh.

### CHAP. 3. 1. *Of earthly, and of heavenly exercises.*

**I**F ye then bee risen with Christ, seeke those  
things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth at  
the right hand of God. 2 Set your affections on  
things which are aboue, & not on things which  
are on the earth. 3 For ye are dead, and your  
life is hid with Christ in God. 4 When Christ  
which is our life, shall appeare, then shall ye also  
appeare with him in glory. 5 *Mortifie there-  
fore your members which are on the earth, for-  
nication, vncleannesse, the inordinate affection,  
euill concupiscence, and couetousnesse which is  
idolatrie. 6 For the which things sake the wrath  
of God cometh on the children of disobedience,  
7 Wherein ye also walked once, when ye  
lived*

*Sphe*

*3.3.*

### C H A P. III.

lived in them & But now put yee away euē all  
 these things, wrath, anger, maliciouſnesſe, curſed  
 ſpeaking, falſe ſpeaking, out of your mouth.  
 2 Lie not one to another, ſeeing that ye haue  
 put off the olde man, with his workes, 10 And  
 haue put on the new, which is renewed in know-  
 ledge after the image of him that created him,  
 11 Where is neither Grecian nor Iew, circum-  
 ſion nor vncircumciſion, Barbarian, Scythian,  
 bond, free: but Chriſt is all and in all things.  
 12 Now therefore as the elect of God holy and  
 beloued, put on the bowels of mercies, kindnes,  
 humblenes of minde, meekeneſſe long ſuffering:  
 13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one  
 another, if any man haue a quarrell to another,  
 euē as Chriſt forgane, euē ſo doe ye. 14 And  
 aboue all theſe things, *put on* loue, which is the  
 bond of perfectneſſe. 15 And let the peace of  
 God rule in your hearts, to the which ye are cal-  
 led in one body, and be v<sup>r</sup> thankfull. 16 Let  
 the word of Chriſt dwell in you plenteouſly in  
 all wiſedome, teaching and admoniſhing your  
 owne ſelues, in pſalmes, and hymnes and ſpiri-  
 tuall ſongs, ſinging with a grace in your hearts 1. Cor.  
 to the Lord. 17 \* And whatſoeuer ye ſhall doe, 10. 31.  
 in word or deede, doe all in the Name of the Ephe.  
 Lord Ieſus giuing thanks to God euē the Fa- 3. 22.  
 ther by him. 18 \* Wiues, ſubmit your ſelues vnto 1. Pet.  
 your husbands, as it is comely in the Lord. 3. 1.  
 19 \* Husbands, loue your wiues, and be not bit- Ephe.  
 ter vnto them. 20 \* Children, obey your parents 6. 1.



## TO THE COLOSSIANS.

in all things: for that is well pleasing vnto the Lord. 21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged. 22 \* Seruants, bee obedient vnto them that are your masters according to the flesh in all things, not with eye seruice as men please, but in singleness of heart, fearing God. 23 And whatsoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not to men. 24 Knowing that of the Lord yee shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ. 25 But he that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong that hee hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

### CHAP. 4. *Of prayer and gracious speech.*

**Y**E masters, doe vnto your seruants, that which is iust, and equall, knowing that ye also haue a master in heauen. 2 \* Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thankesgiving, 3 \* Praying also for vs, that God may open vnto vs the doore of utterance, to speake the mysterie of Christ: wherefore I am also in bonds, 4 That I may utter it, as it becommeth mee to speake. 5 \* Walke wisely toward them that are without, and redeeme the season. 6 Let your speech be gracious alwayes, and powdered with salt, that yee may knowe howe to answer euery man. 7 Tychicus our beloued brother, and faithfull minister, and fellow seruant in the Lord, shall declare vnto you my whole state, 8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that hee might

### C H A P. IIII.

might know your state, and might comfort your  
 hearts, 9 With Onesimus a faithfull & a beloued  
 brother who is one of you. They shall shew you  
 of all things here. 10 Aristarchus my prison fel-  
 lowe saluteth you, and Marcus, Barnabas cousin  
 (touching whom ye receined commandements,  
 if he come vnto you, receiue him) 11 And Iesus  
 which is called Iesus, which are of the circum-  
 cision. These onely are my worke fellowes vn-  
 to the Kingdome of God. which haue bene vn-  
 to my consolation. 12 Epaphras the seruant of  
 Christ, which is one of you, saluteth you, and  
 desires shrueth for you in prayers that ye may  
 stand perfect, and full in all the will of God.  
 13 For I beare him record, that he hath a great  
 zeale for you, and for them of Laodicea. and  
 them of Hierapolis. 14 \* I like the beloued Phi- 2. Tim  
 sion greeteth you, and Demas. 15 Salute the 4. 11.  
 brethren which are of Laodicea, and Nymphas,  
 and the Church which is in his house. 16 And  
 when this Epistle is read of you, caute that it be  
 read in the Church of the Laodiceans also, and  
 haue likewise read the Epistle written from  
 Laodicea. 17 And say to Archippus, Take heede  
 to the ministratione, that thou hast receiued, in the  
 Lord, that thou fulfill it. 18 The salutation by  
 Paul of mee. Paul. Remember my bandes.  
 Grace with you. Amen

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossi-  
 ans, and sent by Tychicus and O-  
 nesimus.

THE

# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF

Paul to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. 1. 4. *Whatsoever is praesent in any, is of the goodnesse of God, &c.*



**P**aul and Silvanus, and Timothy, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ: Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ. 2 We giue God thanks alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers, 3 Without ceasing, remembring your effectuall faith, and diligent loue, and the patience of your hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God, even our Father, 4 Knowing beloued brethren, that ye are elect of God. 5 For our Gospel was not only to you in word onely, but also in power and in the holy Ghost, & in much assurance, as ye know after what maner wee were among you for your sakes. 6 And ye became followers of vs, and of the Lord, and receiued the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost, 7 So that ye were as ensamples to all that beleue in Macedonia and Achaia. 8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not in Macedonia onely: but your faith also which is toward God, spread abroad in all quarters: so that we neede not to speake any thing. 9 For the themselves shewe of vs what maner of entrance we had vnto you, and how ye turned to God from idoles, to serue the liuing and true God.

## C H A P. II.

2 And to looke for his Sonne from heauen,  
whom he rayſed from the dead, *euen* Ieſus which  
deliuereth vs from that wrath to come.

C H A P. 3. 5 *The preachers muſt neither  
aſſume aſe, nor praife of men.*

**F**or ye your ſelues knowe, brethren, that our  
Entrance in vnto you was not in vaine. 2 But  
euen after that we had ſuffere d be fore, and were  
ſhamefully entreated at \*Philippi (as ye know) *Acts.*  
we were bolde in our God, to ſpeake vnto you *16. 12.*  
the Goſpel of God with much ſtriving. 3 For  
our exhortation was not by deceit, nor by vn-  
cleannes, nor by guile. 4 But as we were allow-  
ed of God, that the Goſpel ſhould be commit-  
ted *vnto vs* ſo we ſpeake, not as they that pleaſe  
men, but God, which approoueth our hearts.  
5 Neither yet did we euer uſe flattering words,  
as we know, nor coloured couetouſnes, God is  
record. 6 Neither ſought we praife of men, nei-  
ther of you, nor of others, when we might haue  
bene chargeable, as the Apoſtles of Chriſt. 7 But  
wee were gentle among you, euen as a nource  
cheriſheth her children. 8 Thus being affection-  
ned towards you, our good will was to haue  
deale vnto you, not y<sup>e</sup> Goſpel of God onely, but *Acts.*  
alſo our owne ſoules becauſe ye were deare vn- *20. 34.*  
to vs. 9 For ye re member, brethren, our labour *1. cor.*  
& trauaile: for we laboured day & night, becauſe *4. 12.*  
wee would not be chargeable vnto any of you, *2. theſ.*  
and preached vnto you the Goſpel of God. *3. 8.*  
10 Ye are witneſſes, & God alſo how holily and  
juſtly

# I. THESSALONIANS.

justly, and vnbla meably we behaued our selves among you that beleue. 11 As ye know how that we exhorted you, and comforted, and besought euery one of you (as a father his children)

*Eph.* 12 That ye would <sup>2</sup> walke worthy of God, who bath called you vnto his kingdome and glory.

*4.1.* *phil.* 13 For this cause also thanke we God without ceasing,

*1.27.* that whē ye receiued the word of God,

*col. 1.* which ye heard of vs, yee receiued it not as the

*10.* word of men, but as it is in deede the worde of

God, which also worketh in you that beleue.

14 For brethren, ye are become folowers of the

Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Christ

Iesus, because yee haue also suffered the same

things of your owne countrey men, euen as they

*haue* of the Iewes, 15 Who both killed the

Lord Iesus and their owne Prophets, and haue

persecuted vs away, & God they please not, and

are contrary to all men, 16 And for this to

preach vnto the Gentiles, that they might be sa

ued, to fulfil their sinnes alwayes: for the wrath

of God is come on them, to the vtmost. 17 For

asmuch brethren, as we were kept from you for

a season, concerning sight, but not in the heart

we enforced the more to see your face w<sup>th</sup> great

desire. 18 Therefore we would haue come vnto

you (I Paul at least once or twise) but Satan

hindred vs. 19 For what is our hope or ioy, or

crowne of reioycing? are not enen you in the

presence of our Lorde Iesus Christ at his com

ing? 20 Yes, ye are our glory and ioy.

CH A P. 3. 6 Pauls ioy for the Thes-  
salonians prosperitie.

Wherefore since wee could no longer for-  
besse, we thought it good to remaine at  
Athen alone, 2 \* And haue sent Timotheus *Acts*  
our brother and minister of God, and our la- 16.1.  
bour fellow in the Gospel of Christ, to establiſh  
you, and to comfort you touching your faith,  
3 That no man should be moued with these af-  
flictions: for ye your selues knowe, that we are  
appointed therunto. 4 For verely when wee  
were with you wee tolde you before that wee  
should suffer tribulations, euen as it came to passe,  
and ye know it. 5 Euen for this cause, when I  
could no longer forbear, I sent him, that I might  
knowe of your faith, lest the tempter had temp-  
ted you in any sort, and that our labour had  
been in vaine. 6 But now lately when Timo-  
theus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs  
good tidings of your faith and loue, and that ye  
haue good remembrance of vs alwayes desiring  
to see vs, as we also doe you, 7 Therefore bre-  
thren wee had consolation in you, in all our af-  
fliction and necessity through your faith. 8 For  
ye are wee aline, if yee stand fast in the Lord.  
9 For what thanks can wee recompense to  
God againe for you, for all the joy wherewith  
he reioyce for your sakes before our God,  
10 Night and day, \* praying exceedingly that *Rom.*  
he might see your face, and might accomplish 1.10.  
that which is lacking in your faith? 11 Now and  
God himselfe, euen our Father, and our Lord 15.23.  
Iesus

# I. THESSALONIANS.

Iesus Christ, guide our iourney vnto you, 12 And the Lord increase you, and make you abound in loue one toward another, and toward all men.

*Chap.* euen as wee doe toward you: 13 \* To make  
 5.23. your hearts stable and vblameable in holinesse  
 1. cor. before God, euen our Father, at the coming of  
 1.8. our Lord Iesus Christ with all his Saints.

CHAP. 4. 9 *Of brotherly loue. 13 Immu-  
 aerate sorow. 15 The resurrection.*

**A**ND furthermore we beseech you, brethren,  
 and exhort you in the Lord Iesus, that yee  
 increase more and more, as yee haue receiued of  
 vs, how yee ought to walke, and to please God.  
 2 For ye know what commandements we gaue  
*Rom.* you by the Lord Iesus. 3 \* For this is the will of  
 12.2. God, *in* your sanctification, *and* that ye should  
*ephes.* abstaine from fornication, 4 That euery one of  
 5.17. you should knowe, how to possesse his vessel in  
 holinesse and honour, 5 *And* not in the lust of  
 1. cor. concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know  
 6.8. not God: 6 \* That no man oppresse or defraude  
 1. cor. his brother in any matter: for the Lord is  
 1.2. uenger of all such things, as we also haue told  
*John* you beforetime, and testified. 7 \* For God hath  
 13.34. not called vs vnto vncleannesse, but vnto hol-  
 15. nesse. 8 He therefore that despiseth *these things*  
 12. despiseth not man, but God who hath euen gi-  
 1. john uen you his holy Spirit. 9 But as touching br-  
 2.8. therly loue, ye neede not that I write vnto you  
 4. \* for ye are taught of God to loue one another  
 2.1. 10 Yea, and that thing verely ye doe vnto all  
 brethren

# CHAP. V.

brethren, which are throughout all Macedonia: 11 But wee beseech you brethren, that yee increase more and more, 12 And that yee studie to bee quiet, and to meddle with your owne businesse, and to worke with your owne handes, as wee commaunded you. 13 That yee may behaue your selues honestly towardes them which are without, and that nothing be lacking vnto you. 14 I would not, brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them which are asleepe, that ye sorrow not euen as other which haue no hope. 15 For if wee beleene that Iesus is dead, and is risen, euen so them which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him. 16 I or this say wee vnto you by the worde of the Lorde, that we which liue, and are remayning in the coming of the Lorde, shall not preuent them which sleepe. 17 For the Lorde himselfe shall descende from heauen with a shoute, \* and with the voyce of 1. Cor. 13.52. the Archangel, and with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 18 Then shall wee which liue and remaine, be caught vp with them also in the clouds, to meete the Lord in the ayre: and so shall wee be euer with the Lord. 19 Wherefore, comfort your selues one another with these wordes.

CHAP. 5. 1 Curious enquiring of Christs coming condemned. 12 Diuers good precepts.

Of the times and seasons, brethren, ye haue no neede that I write vnto you. 2 For yee our selues know perfectly, that the day of the Lord



# I. THESSALONIANS.

Lord shall come, euen as a thiefe in the night.

3 For when they shal say Peace, and safety, then shal come vpon them sudden destruction, as the trauaile vpon a woman with child, & they shal not escape. 4 But ye brethren, are not in darknes, that that day should come on you, as it were a thiefe. 5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, neither of darkenesse. 6 Therefore let vs not sleepe as doe other, but let vs watch and be sober. 7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they that bee drunken, are drunken in the night. 8 But let vs which are of the day, be sober,

*7 say*

*59 17.*

*ephef.*

*6. 17.*

\* putting on the breastplate of faith, and loue, and of the hope of saluation for an helmet.

9 For God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to obtaine saluation by the meanes of our Lord Iesus Christ, 10 Which died for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, we should liue together with him. 11 Wherefore exhort one another, and edifie one another, euen as ye doe.

*Pro.*

*17. 13.*

*Eccl. 20.*

*22.*

*mat.*

*5. 39.*

*rom.*

*12. 17.*

*1. pet.*

*3. 9.*

12 Now we beseech you, brethren, that ye acknowledge them, which labour among you, and

are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you,

13 That ye haue them in singular loue for their workes sake. Be at peace among your selves.

14 Wee desire you, brethren, admonish them that are out of order: comfort the feeble minded:

beare w<sup>th</sup> the weake: be patient toward all men.

15 \* See that none recompence euil for euil vnto any man: but euer solow that which is good.

*both*

## C H A P. I.

both toward your selues, and toward all men.  
 16 Reioyce euermore. 17 <sup>3</sup> Pray continually. *Luke*  
 18 In all things giue thanks: for this is the wil of *18. 8.*  
 God in Christ Iesus toward you. 19 Quench not  
 the Spirit. 20 Despise not prophesying. 21 Try  
 all things, and keepe that which is good. 22 Ab-  
 staine from all appearance of euill. 23 Now the  
 very God of peace sanctifie you throughout:  
 and *1. pray* God that your whole spirit and soule  
 and body may be kept blamelesse vnto the com-  
 ming of our Lord Iesus Christ. 24 <sup>\*</sup> Faithfull is *1. Cor.*  
 hee which calleth you, which will also doe it. *1. 9.*  
 25 Brethren, pray for vs. 26 Greete al the bre-  
 thren with an holy kisse. 27 I charge you in  
 the Lord, that this Epistle be read vnto all the  
 brethren the Saints. 28 The grace of our Lord  
 Iesus Christ be with you, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* vnto the Thessalonians,  
 written from Athens.

## THE SECOND EPISTLE of Paul to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I. *1. Faith, haire, and pati-*  
*ence commended.*



Paul and Siluanus, & Timotheus,  
 vnto the Church of the Thessalo-  
 nians, which is in God our Father,  
 and in the Lorde Iesus Christ:

2 Grace be with you, and peace  
 from God our Father, and from the Lorde Iesus

Na

Christ

## II. THESSALONIANS.

**3. The.** in Christ. **3** \*We ought to thanke God alwayes  
**1. 2.** for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your  
 faith groweth exceedingly, & the loue of euery  
 one of you toward another aboundeth, **4** So  
 that wee our selues reioyce of you in the Churches  
 of God because of your patience and faith  
 in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye  
 suffer. **5** \*It is a manifest token of the righteous  
**Inde** iudgement of God, that ye may be counted  
**6.** worthy of the kingdome of God, for the which  
 ye also suffer. **6** For it is a righteous thing with  
 God. to recompence tribulation to them that  
 trouble you, **7** And to you which are troubled,  
**1. The.** rest with vs, \*when **8** Lord Iesus shall come down  
**9. 16.** selfe from heauen with his mighty Angels, & in  
 flaming fire, rendering vengeance vnto them that  
 doe not know God, & which obey not vnto the  
 Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ, **9** Which shall  
 be punished with everlasting perdition for the  
 presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his  
 power, **10** When he shall come to be glorified  
 in his Saints, and to bee made maruailous in  
 them that beleue (because our testimonie toward  
 you was beleeued) in that day. **11** Wherefore,  
 we also pray alwayes for you, that our God  
 may make you worthy of this calling, and fulfil  
 all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and to  
 worke of faith with power, **12** That the Name  
 of our Lord Iesus Christ may bee glorified  
 in you, and yee in him, according to the grace  
 our God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ.

CHAP. 2. 3. The day of the Lord,  
and Antichrist.

NOW we beseech you brethren by the coming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him, 2 That ye be not suddenly moued from *your* minde, nor troubled, neither by spirit, nor by worde, nor by letter, as *is* more fit vs, as though the day of Christ were at hand. 3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for *that day shal not come* except there come a departing first, & that that man of sinne be disclosed, *namely* the sonne of perdition, 4 Which is an aduersary, and exalteth himselfe against all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doeth sit as God in the Temple of God, thew- ing himselfe that he is God. 5 Remember yee not that when I was yet with you, I tolde you these things? 6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might bee reueiled in his time. 7 For the myserie of iniquitie doeth already worke: onely he which now withholdeth *shall* be taken out of the way. 8 And then shall that wicked man be reueiled, \*whome the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall abolish with the brightnesse of his coming. 9 *Euen him* whose coming is by the effectuall working of Satan, with all power, and signes, and iuing wonders, 10 And in all deceiuefulnesse of vnrightheousnesse among them that perish because they receiued not the loue of the truth, that they might bee saued. 11 And therefore God shall send them strong delusion,

## II. THESSALONIANS.

that they shoulde beleene lyes, 12 That of they might be damned which beleened not y<sup>e</sup> truth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnes. 13 But we ought to giue thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloued of the Lord, because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the spirit, and the faith of truth, 14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospel to obtaine the glory of our Lord Iesus Christ. 15 Therefore brethren, stand fast and keepe the instructions which ye haue bin taught, either by worde, or by our Epistle. 16 Nowe the same Iesus Christ our Lorde, and our God euen the Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation & good hope through grace, 17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in euery word and good worke.

CHAP. 3. 6 Of idle and peruers & profane

*Ephes.* Furthermore, brethren,\* pray for vs, that the  
*6.19.* word of the Lord may haue free passage, and  
*colos.* be glorified, euen as it is with you, 2 And that  
*4.3.* we may be deliuered from vnrasonable men: for all men haue not faith. 3 But the Lord is faithfull, which will stablish you, and keepe you from euill. 4 And wee are perswaded of you through the Lord, that ye both doe and will doe the things which we warne you of. 5 And the Lorde guide your hearts to the loue of God, and the waiting for of Christ. 6 We warne you brethren, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that ye withdrawe your selues from euery bre

### C H A P. III.

ther that walketh inordinately, & not after the instruction, which he receiued of vs. 7 For ye your selues know,\* how ye ought to folow vs: 1. Cor. 11. 7.  
 \*for we behaued not our selues inordinately among you, 8 Neither tooke we bread of any man for nought: but we wrought with labour 1. The. 4. 11.  
 and trauaile night & day, because we would not be chargeable to any of you 9 Not because we haue not authoritie but that we might make our selues an ensample vnto you to folow vs. 10 For euen when we were with you, this wee warned you of that if there were any, which would not worke, that he should not eat. 11 For we heare, that there are some which walke among you inordinately, and worke not at all, but are busie bodies. 12 Therefore them that are such, wee warne and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that they worke with quietnes, and eat their owne bread 13 And ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing. 14 If any man obey not this our saying in this letter, note him, and haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed: 15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as a brother. 16 Now the Lord himselfe of peace giue you peace alwayes by al meanes. The Lord be with you all. 17 The salutation of me Paul, with mine own hand, which is the token in euery epistle: so I write, 18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all, Amen.

¶ The second Epistle to the Thessalonians,  
 written from Athens.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF  
Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. 1. 1 *The true Pastour: & Vaine  
questions.* 12 *The Ministers authoritie.*



Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by  
the commandement of God our  
Saviour, and of our Lord Iesus  
Christ our hope, 2 Vnto Timo-  
theus my naturall sonne in y faith:

Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father,  
and from Christ Iesus our Lord. 3 As I beought  
thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed  
into Macedonia, 4 doe that thou mayest warne  
some, y they teach none other doctrine, 4 Nei-  
ther that they giue heed to fables and genealo-  
gies which are endlesse, which breede questions  
rather then godly edifying which is by faith.

Rom.  
12.10.

5 For the end of the commandement is loue  
out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience,  
and of faith vnfained. 6 From the which things  
some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine  
iangling. 7 They would be doctors of the law,  
and yet vnderstand not what they speake, neither  
whereof they asirme. 8 And we know that the  
Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully, 9 Know-  
ing this, that the Law is not giuen vnto a righte-  
ous man, but vnto the lawlesse and disobedient,  
to the vngodly, and to sinners, to the vnholly,  
and to the prophane, to martherers of fathers  
and mothers, to manslayers, 10 To whore-mo-  
gers, to buggerers, to men-stealers, to liars, to the  
perjured,

# CHAP. I.

perjured, and if there be any other thing, that is  
 contrary to wholesome doctrine, 11 *Which is*  
 according to the glorious Gospel of the blessed  
 God, which is committed vnto me. 12 Therefore  
 I thanke him which hath made me strong, *that*  
 Christ Iesus our Lord: for he counted me faith-  
 full, and put me in *his* seruice: 13 When before  
 I was a blasphemers, and a persecuter, and an op-  
 presser: but I was receiued to mercy: for I did  
 it ignorantly through vnbeliefe. 14 But the  
 grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with  
 faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus. 15 This  
 is a true saying, and by all meanes worthy to be *Matt.*  
 receiued, that \* Christ Iesus came into the world *9. 13.*  
 to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe. 16 Not. *mark*  
 withstanding, for this cause was I receiued to *2. 17.*  
 mercy, that Iesus Christ should first shew on me  
 all long suffering vnto the ensample of them,  
 which shall in time to come beleeue in him vn-  
 to eternall life. 17 Now vnto the King euerla-  
 sting, immortall, inuisible, vnto God onely wise,  
 to honour and glory, for euer, and euer, Amen.  
 18 This commandement commit I vnto thee,  
 sonne Timotheus, according to the prophetes,  
 which went before vpon thee, that thou by them  
 shouldst fight a good fight, 19 Having faith  
 and a good conscience, which some haue put a-  
 way, and as concerning faith, haue made ship-  
 wracke. 20 Of whom is Hymeneus, and Alexan-  
 der, \* whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that *1 Cor.*  
 they might learne not to blaspheme. *3. 5.*



# I. TIMOTHEVS.

CHAP 2. 1 Of prayer. 9 Womens apparell  
and behauour.

**I** Exhort therefore, that first of al supplications,  
prayers, intercessions, and giuing of thanks be  
made for all men, 2 For Kings, and for all that  
are in authoritie, that we may leade a quiet & a  
peaceable life, in al godlinesse & honesty, 3 for  
this is good and acceptable in the sight of God  
our Sauour, 4 Who will that all men should be  
saved, and come vnto the acknowledging of the  
trueth, 5 For there is one God, & one Mediator  
betweene God and man, *whom* the man Christ  
Iesus, 6 Who gaue himselfe a ranfome for all  
men, 7 *to be* testimony in due time, 7 \* Where-  
unto I am ordeined a preacher and an Apostle (I  
speake the trueth in Christ, & lie not) *and* a tea-  
cher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie. 8 I will  
therfore that the men pray, euery where liuing  
vp pure handes without wrath or doubting.  
1. Pet. 9 \* Likewise also the women, *as* at they aray them-  
selves in comely apparell with shamefastnesse &  
modestie, not with broyded haire, or golde, or  
pearles, or costely apparel, 10 But (as becometh  
1. Cor. women that professe the feare of God) w<sup>th</sup> good  
14. 34. works. 11 Let the woman learne in silence w<sup>th</sup>  
Gene. all subiection. 12 \* I permit not a woman to  
1. 27. teach, neither to vsurpe authority ouer the man,  
6. 2. but to be in silence. 13 For \* Adam was first for-  
7, 21. med, then Eue. 14 \* And Adam was not decei-  
Gene. ned, but the woman was deceiued, & was in the  
3. 6. transgression. 15 Notwithstanding, through bea-

### C H A P. III.

ring of children, the shalbe saued, if they continue in faith, and loue, & holinesse with modesty.

C H A P. 3. 2 *Of Bishops and Deacons.*

12 *Their wiues, children, and families.*

**T**His is a true saying, if any man desire the office of a Bishop he desireth a worthy worke.

1 \* A Bishop therefore must be vnreprocheable, *Titus* the husband of one wife, watching, temperate, 2 & modest, harberous, apt to teach, 3 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre, but gentle, no fighter, not couetous 4 One that can rule his owne house honestly, hauing children vnder obedience with all honesty. 5 For if any can not rule his owne house, howe shall he care for the Church of God? 6 He may not be a yong scholer, lest hee being puffed vp fall into the condemnation of the deuill. 7 He must also bee well reported of, euen of them which are without, lest hee fall into rebuke, and the snare of the deuill. 8 Likewise *must* Deacons be graue, not double tongued, not giuen vnto much wine, neither to filthy lucre, 9 \* Having *Chap.* the mystery of y<sup>e</sup> faith in pure conscience. 10 And *1.19.* let them first be proued: then let them minister, if they be found blamelesse. 11 Likewise their wiues *must* be honest, not euill speakers, *but* sober and faithfull in all things. 12 Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, and such as can rule their children wel, and their owne households: 13 For they y<sup>e</sup> haue ministred wel, get themselves a good degree, and great liberty in the faith, which is in Christ

## I. TIMOTHEVS.

Christ Iesus 14 These things write I vnto thee, trusting to come very shortly vnto thee. 15 But if I tary long, that thou mayest yet knowe, how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ground of trueth. 16 And without controuersie great is the mystery of godlinesse, *which is*, God is manifested in the flesh, justified in the Spirit scene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleued on in the world, and receiued vp in glory.

CHAP. 4. *Of Christ and exercises.*

**N**OW the Spirit speaketh evidently, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, and shal giue heede vnto Spirits of error, and doctrines of deuils, 2 Which speake lyes through hypocrisie, and haue their consciences burned w<sup>th</sup> an hote yron, 3 Forbidding to marry, and *commanding* to abstaine from meats which God hath created to bee receined with giuing thanks of them which beleeue & knowe the truth. 4 For euery creature of God is good, and nothing ought to be refused, if it be receiued with thanksgiuing. 5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer. 6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt bee a good minister of Iesus Christ, which hath bene nourished vp in the words of faith and of good doctrine, which thou hast continually followed. 7 But cast away prophane, and old wises fables, and exercise thy selfe vnto godlinesse. 8 For

Lodily

## C H A P. V.

bodily exercise profiteth little: but godlinesse is profitable vnto all things, which hath the promise of  $\bar{y}$  life present, & of that that is to come. 9 This is a true saying, and by all meanes worthy to be receiued. 10 For therefore we labour and are rebuked, because we trust in the living God, which is the Saviour of all men, specially of those  $\bar{y}$  beleene. 11 These things warne and teach. 12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be vnto them that beleene, an ensample, in word, in conversation in loue, in spirit, in faith, & in purenesse. 13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, and to doctrine. 14 Despise not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee by prophesie with the laying on of the handes of the company of the Eldership. 15 These things exercise, and giue thy selfe vnto them, that it may bee seene how thou profitest among all men. 16 Take heede vnto thy selfe, and vnto learning, continue therein: for in doing this thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

### CHAP. 5. 5 *Of widowes and Elders.*

**D**ebuke not an Elder, but exhort him as a father, & the yonger men as brethren, 2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters, with all purenesse. 3 Honour widowes, which are widowes indeed. 4 But if any widow haue children or nephewes, let the learne first to shew godlinesse toward their owne house, and to recompense their kinred: for  $\bar{y}$  is an honest thing,  
and

## I. TIMOTHEVS.

and acceptable before God. 5 And sh<sup>e</sup> that is a widow indeede, and left alone, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications & prayers night and day. 6 But she y<sup>e</sup> liueth in pleasure, is dead, while she liueth. 7 These things therfore warne *them* of, that they may be blamelesse. 8 If there be any y<sup>e</sup> prouideth not for his owne, and namely for them of his household, he denieth the faith, and is worse then an infidel. 9 Let not a widow be taken into the number vnder threescore yere olde, that hath bene the wife of one husband, 10 And well reported of for good works: if she haue nourished her children, if she haue lodged the strangers, if she haue washed the Saints feet, if she haue ministered vnto them which were in aduersity, if thee were continually giuen vnto euery good worke. 11 But re use the yonger widowes: for whē they haue begun to waxe wanton against Christ, they will marry, 12 Having damnation, because they haue broken the first faith. 13 And likewise also being idle they learne to goe about from house to house: yea, they are not onely idle, but also praters, and busibodies speaking things which are not comely. 14 I will therefore that the yonger women marry, and beare children, and gouerne the house, and giue none occasion to the aduersary to speake euill. 15 For certaine are already turned backe after Satan. 16 If any faithful man, or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them minister vnto them & let not the Church be charged, that there ma

## C H A P. VI.

be sufficient for them that are widowes indeede.

17 The Elders that rule wel, let them be had in double honour, specially they which labour in the word & doctrine. 18 For the Scripture saith,

\* Thou shalt not moucell the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corne: and, \* The labourer

is worthy of his wages. 19 Against an Elder receive none accusation, but vnder two or three

witneses. 20 Them that sinne, rebuke openly, that yett also may feare. 21 \* I charge thee be-

fore God & the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou obserue these things without

preferring one to another, and do nothing partially. 22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, nei-

ther be partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe thy selfe pure. 23 Drinke no longer water, but

use a litle wine for thy stomacks sake, and thine often infirmities. 24 Some mens sinnes are o-

pen beforehand, & goe before vnto iudgement: but some mens follow after. 25 Likewise also

the good workes are manifest before hand, and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

**C H A P. 6.** 10 *Of Couetousnes, 13 of rich men,*

**I**te as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their masters worthy of all honor, that

the Name of God, and his doctrine be not euill spoken of. 2 And they which haue beleeuing

masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren but rather do seruice, because they

are faithfull, and beloued, and partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort. 3 If any

*Deut.*

*25.4.*

*Matt.*

*10.10.*

*luke*

*10.7.*

*Chap.*

*6.13.*

## I. TIMOTHEVS

man teach otherwise, and consenteth not to the whole some words of our Lord Iesus Christ, and to the doctrine, which is according to godlines.

4 He is pult vp and knoweth nothing, but docteth about questions & strife of words, whereof cometh enuie, strife, railings, euill surmings,

5 Froward disputations of men of corrupt minds and destitute of the truerh, which thinke godlines is godlines, from such separatethy selfe.

6 But godlinesse is great gaue, if a man be content w<sup>th</sup> that he hath.

7 For wee brought nothing into the world, and it is certaine, that we can carry nothing out.

8 Therefore when we haue food and raiment, let vs therewith be content.

9 For they that will be rich, fall into temptation & snares and into many foolish and noysome lustes,

which drowne men in perdition & destruction. 10 For the desire of mony is the roote of all euill, which while some lusted after, they erred frō the faith,

and pearced themselues thorow with many sorowes.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, & folow after righteousness, godly reuerence, faith, loue, patience, & meekenesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay holde of eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses,

*Chap.* 13 \* I charge thee in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Iesus Christ,

*Mat.* vnder Pontius Pilate \* witnessed a good confession, 14 That thou keepe this commandment

without spot, & vnbukeable, vntill the appea-

## C H A P. I.

ring of our Lord Iesus Christ, 15 Which in due  
 time he shall shew, that is \* blessed and Prince *(Iha. 1.11.*  
 only, the King of kings, and Lord of Lords, *1.11.*  
 16 Who onely hath immortalitie, & dwelleth in *1.11.*  
 the light & none can attaine vnto, \* whom neuer *17.14.*  
 man saw, neither can see, vnto whom be honour *John*  
 and power euerlasting, Amen. 17 Charge them *1.18.*  
 that are rich in this world, that they be not he  
 minded, and & they \* trust not in vncertaine ri- *Mark.*  
 ches, but in \* liuing God (which giueth vs abund- *4.19.*  
 dantly all things to enioy) 18 That they do good, *luke*  
 and be rich in good works, and ready to distri- *1.15.*  
 bute & communicate, 19 \* Laying vp in store for *Mat.*  
 themselves a good foundation against the time *6.3.*  
 to come, that they may obtaine eternal life. 20 O  
 Timothy, keepe that which is committed vnto  
 thee, & auoid prophane & vaine babblings, and  
 oppositions of science falsely so called, 21 Which  
 while some profess, they have erred concerning  
 the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to Timothy written  
 from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city  
 of Phrygia Pacaciana.

## THE SECOND EPISTLE OF Paul to Timothy.

C H A P. I. 5 Timothy's faith commended.



Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by  
 the will of God, according to the  
 promise of life which is in Christ  
 Iesus, 2 To Timothy my be-  
 loved



## II. TIMOTHEVS.

ned sonne : Grace, mercy *and* peace from God  
 the Father, and *from* Iesus Christ our Lord. 3 I  
 22.3. thank God, \* whom I serue from *mine* elders  
 with pure conscience, that without ceasing I  
 haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night  
 and day, 4 Desiring to see thee, mindful of thy  
 teares, that I may be filled with joy: 5 When I  
 call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is  
 in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother  
 Lois, and in thy mother Eunice, and am assured  
 that *it dwelleth* in thee also. 6 Wherefore, I  
 put thee in remembrance that thou stirre vp the  
 gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on  
 of mine hands. 7 For God hath not given  
 to vs the Spirit of feare, but of power, and of  
 loue, and of a sound minde. 8 Bee not there-  
 fore ashamed of the testimonie of our Lord,  
 neither of me his prisoner: but bee partaker of  
 the afflictions of the Gospel, according to the  
 2. Cor. power of God, 9 Who hath saued vs, and  
 1.2. called vs with an \* holy calling, not accord-  
 Titus ding to our \* works, but according to his owne  
 3.5. purpose and grace, which was given to vs  
 Rom. through Christ Iesus before the \* world was  
 16.25. 10 But is now made manifest by that appea-  
 ephes. ring of our Sauour Iesus Christ, who hath abo-  
 1.4. lished death and hath brought life and immorta-  
 colos. litie vnto light through the Gospel, 11 \* Where-  
 1.26. unto I am appointed a preacher, and Apostle  
 1. Tim and a teacher of the Gentiles 12 For the which  
 3.7. cause I also suffer these things, but I am not  
 ashamed

## C H A P. II.

shamed: for I knowe whom I haue beleueed,  
 & am perswaded that he is able to keepe that  
 which I haue comitted to him against that day.  
 13 Keepe the true patterne of the wholesome  
 words, which thou hast heard of me in faith and  
 loue which is in Christ Iesus. 14 That worthy  
 thing, which was committed to thee, keepe  
 through the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in vs.  
 15 This thou knowest, that all they which are  
 in Asia, be turned from mee: of which sort are  
 Phygellus & Hermogenes. 16 The Lord gaue  
 merce vnto the house of Onesiphorus: for he  
 refreshed mee, and was not ashamed of my  
 chaine, 17 But when he was at Rome, he sought  
 me out very diligently, and found me. 18 The  
 Lord graunt vnto him, that he may finde mercy  
 with the Lorde at that day, and in howe many  
 times hee hath ministered vnto mee at Ephesus,  
 thou knowest very well.

### C H A P. 2. Of perseuerance in Christian warfare.

**T**Hou therefore my sonne, be strong in the  
 grace that is in Christ Iesus. 2 And what  
 things thou hast heard of me by many witnesses,  
 the same deliuer to faithful men, which shal be  
 able to teach other also. 3 Thou therefore suffer  
 affliction as a good souldier of Iesus Christ.  
 A Roman y warreth, entangleth himself w<sup>th</sup> the  
 affairs of this life, because he would please him  
 that hath chosen him to be a souldier. 5 And if  
 any man also strue for a matter, he is not crown-

## II. TIMOTHEVS.

red, except he strine as he ought to do. 6 The husbandman must labour before he receiue the fruits. 7 Consider what I say, & the Lord giue thee vnderstanding in al things. 8 Remember that Iesus Christ made of the seed of David was raised again frō the dead according to my Gospel. 9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil doer, euen vnto bonds: but the word of God is not bound. 10 Therefore I suffer al things, for y<sup>e</sup> elects sake, that they might also obtaine the saluation which is in Christ Iesus with eternal glory. 11 As a true saying, I or if we bee \* dead together with *Rom.* *him*, we also shall liue together *6.5.* *with him*: if we suffer, we shall also reigne together *with him*. *Mat.* \* If we deny *him*, he also will deny vs. *13.* *13.* *10.33.* he that belieueth not, & abideth he faithfull: he cannot deny himselfe. 14 Of these things put them in remembrance, & protest before the Lord, y<sup>e</sup> they *mark.* strine not about words, which is to no profite, *8.28.* *Pom.* but to the peruertering of the hearers. 15 Study *3.3.* *2.6.* to shew thy self approved vnto God, a worlde-  
man y<sup>e</sup> needeth not to be ashamed, discharging the word of truth aright. 16 Stay prophane and vaine babblings: for they shall increate vnto more vngodlinesse. 17 And their word shall fret as a canker: of which sort is Hymanus & Philetus, 18 Which as concerning the truth haue erred frō the marke, saying y<sup>e</sup> the resurrection is past already, & do destroy y<sup>e</sup> faith of some. 19 But the foundation of God standeth sure, & hath his seale, The Lord knoweth what

ne his: and, Let euery one that calleth on the Name of Christ, depart from iniquity. 20 Notwithstanding in a great house are not only vessels of golde and of silver, but also of wood & of earth,\* and some for honour, and some vnto dishonour. 21 If any man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shalbe a vessel vnto honour, sanctified, & meet for the Lord, and prepared vnto euery good worke. 22 I flee also from the lusts of youth and followe after righteousness, faith, loue, and peace, with them that \* call on the Lord with pure heart, 23 \* And put away foolish and vnlearned questions, knowing that they ingender strife. 24 But the servant of the Lord must not strue, but *must* be gentle toward all men, apt to teach, suffering the euill, 25 Instructing them with meekenesse that are contrary minded, *proouing* if God at any time will giue them repentance, that they may acknowledge the truth, 26 And come to amendment out of the snare of the deuill, of whome they are taken prisoners, to doe his will

Rom  
9, 21.

1. Cor.  
1. 2.  
1. Tim  
1. 4. &  
4. 7.  
Titus  
3. 9.

CHAP. 3. 1 *The dangers of the last dayes.*

**T**His know also, that in the\* last dayes shall come perilous times. 2 For men shall be louers of their owne selues, conetous, boasters, proud, cursed speakers, disobedient to parents, vnthankfull, vnholly, 3 Without naturall affection, truce breakers, falsse accusers, intemperate, fierce, no louers at all of them which are good, 4 Traitors, heady, hie minded, louers of pleasures

1. Tim  
4. 1.  
2. pet.  
3. 3.  
inde.  
18.

## II. TIMOTHEVS.

pleasures more then louers of God, 5 Having  
a thew of godliuells, but haue denied the pow-  
er thereof: turne away therefore from such.  
6 For of this sort are they which creepe into  
houses, and leade captiue simple women laden  
with sinnes & led with diuers lusts, 7 *Which*  
*women are ener learning, and are neuer able to*  
*Exod* come to y<sup>e</sup> acknowledging of the truth. 8 And  
*7.11.* as Iannes and Iambres withstood Moses, so doe  
these also resist the truth, men of corrupt minds,  
reprobate concerning the faith. 9 But they  
shall preuaile no longer: for their madnesse  
shalbe euident vnto all men, as theirs also was.  
10 But thou hast fully knowen my doctrine,  
maner of liuing, purpose, faith, long suffering,  
loue, patience, 11 Persecutions, and afflictions  
which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium,  
and at Lystra: which persecutions I suffered, but  
from them all the Lord deliuered me. 12 Yea,  
and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus, shall  
suffer persecution. 13 But the euill men & de-  
ceiuers, shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing  
& being deceiued. 14 But continue thou in the  
things which thou hast learned, and which are  
committed vnto thee, knowing of whom thou  
hast learned *them*: 15 And that thou hast kno-  
wen the holy Scriptures of a childe, which are  
able to make thee wise vnto saluation through  
*2. Pet.* the faith which is in Christ Iesus. 16 \* For the  
*2.20.* whois Scripture is giuen by inspiration of  
God, and is profitable to teach, to counsaile, to  
correct,

## C H A P. IIII.

correct, and instruct in righteousness, 17 That the man of God may be absolute, being made perfect vnto all good works.

C H A P. 4    1. *He chargeth Timothy  
to preach diligently.*

**I** Charge thee therefore before God, and before the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall iudge the quicke and dead at that his appearing & in his kingdome, 2 Preach the word: be instant, in season & out of season to reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine. 3 For the time wil come, when they wil not suffer wholesome doctrine but hauing their eares itching, shal after their own lusts get them an heape of teachers, 4 And shal turne their eares from the trueth, and shal be ginen vnto fables. 5 But watch thou in all things: suffer aduersitie: do the worke of an Euangelist: cause thy ministry to be thoroughly liked of. 6 For I am now ready to be offered, & the time of my departing is at hand. 7 I haue fought a good fight, & haue finished my course: I haue kept the faith. 8 For henceforth is layd vp for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous Iudge shall giue me at that day, and not to me onely, but vnto all them also that loue that his appearing. 9 Make speed to come vnto me at once: 10 For Demas hath forsaken me, & hath embraced this present world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica. Crescens is gone to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia. 11 \*Only 4. is with me. Take Marke and bring him with 14.

## II. TIMOTHEVS.

E

7.

Chap.

1.16.

thee: for he is profitable vnto mee to minister. 12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus. 13 The cloake that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the bookes, but specially the parchments. 14 Alexander the coppersmith hath done me much euill: the Lord rewarde him according to his workes. 15 Of whom be thou ware also: for he withstoode our preaching sore. 16 At my first answering no man assisted me, but all forsooke me: I pray God, that it may not be layd to their charge. 17 Notwithstanding the Lord assisted me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully beleued, and that all the Gentiles should heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon. 18 And the Lord will deliuer me from euery euill worke, and will preserue mee vnto his heauenly kingdome to whom be praise for euer and euer, Amen. 19 Salute Prisca, and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus. 20 Erastus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletum sicke. 21 Make speed to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren. 22 The Lord Iesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you, AMEN

¶ The second *Epistle* written from Rome vnto Timotheus, the first Bishop elected of the Church of Ephesus whē Paul was presented the second time before the Emperour Nero.

THE

# THE EPISTLE OF

Paul to Titus.

CHAP. I. 1. *What kind of men ought  
to be chosen Ministers.*



Paul a servant of God, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, according to the faith of Gods elect, & the acknowledging of the truth, which is according to godlines, 2 Vnto the hope of eternal life, in Iehou God that cannot lye, hath promised before \* the worlde began. 3 But hath made his worde manifest in due time through the preaching which is \* cō-  
mited vnto me, according to the cōmandement of God our Saviour. 4 To Titus my nat-  
roll sonne according to the cōmon faith, Grace, mercy & peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ our Saviour. 5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest continue to redresse the things that remaine, & shouldest ordeine Elders in every citie, as I appointed thee, 6 \* If any be vnreprouable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not slandered of riot, neither are disobedient 7 For a Bishop must be vnreprouable, as Gods steward, not froward, not angry, not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre, 8 But harborours, one that loueth goodnesse wise, righteous, holy, temperate, 9 Holding fast that faithfull worde according to doctrine, that he also may be able to exhort with wholesome doctrine, and conuince them

Rom.

16.25.

1. cor.

3.9.

1. cor.

1.28.

2. cor.

1.9.

1. pet.

1.20.

Gala.

1.1.

1. Tim.

3.20.



## TO TITVS.

that say against it. 10 For there are many disobedient & vaine talkers & deceiue of mindes, chiefly they of the circumcision, 11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, which subuert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucrees sake. 12 One of themselves, *even* one of their own prophets said, The Cre- tians are alwaies lyars, euill beastes, slowe bel- lies. 13 This witnes is true: wherefore con- uince them sharply, that they may be found in the faith, 14 And not taking heed to <sup>14</sup> Jewish fables and commandements of men, that turne from the truth. 15 Vnto the pure <sup>15</sup> are all things pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vnb- leening, a nothing pure, but euen their mindes and consciences are defiled. 16 They proude that they know God, but by worke: they denie *him*, and are abominable and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate.

CHAP. 2. 2 The duties of diuers degrees described.

**B**Vt speake thou the things which became whose some doctrine, 2 That the older men be watchful, graue, temperat, sound in the faith, in loue, and in patience. 3 The elder women likewise that they be in such behauiour, as be- commeth holines, not false accusers, not subject to much wine, *but* teachers of honest things, 4 That they may instruct the young women to be sober minded that they loue their husbands, that they loue their children, 5 That they be temperate,

8. Tim.

14.

Rom.

14 15

### CHAP. III.

temperate, chaste, keeping at home, good, \* and *Eph. 5. 23.*  
 subject vnto their husbands, y the word of God  
 be not euill spoken of. 6 Exhort young men  
 likewise, that they be sober minded. 7 In all  
 things shewe thy selfe an ensample of good  
 works, with vncorrupt doctrine, with grauitie,  
 integritie, 8 And with the whollsonne worde,  
 which cannot be condemned, y he which with-  
 standeth, may be ashamed, hauing nothing con-  
 taining you to speake euil of. 9 \* Let seruants *Eph. 6. 5.*  
 be subject to their masters, and please *them* in al  
 things, not answering againe, 10 Neither pi-  
 eties, but that they shew al good faithfulness, that  
 they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sa-  
 uour in all things. 11 \* For that grace of God, *colos. 3. 22.*  
 that bringeth saluatiō vnto al men, hath appea-  
 red, 12 And teacheth vs that we should denie  
 our selfe, and worldly lustes, & that we should  
 soberly and righteously, and godly in this  
 present world, 13 Looking for y blessed hope,  
 appearing of that glory of that mighty God,  
 of our Saviour Iesus Christ, 14 Who gaue  
 himselfe for vs, that he might redeeme vs fro all  
 iniquitie, & purge vs to be a peculiar people vn-  
 defiled, zealous of good works. 15 These  
 things speake and exhort, and conuince with all  
 homilie. See that no man despise thee.

CHAP. 3. 1. To reuerence superiours.

2. To reuill vaine bablers.

*Rom.*

With them in remembrance that they be sub  
 iect to the Principalitie, and powers, and  
 that

*15. 1.*

*1. pet.*

*2. 23.*

# T O T I T V S.

that they be obedient, *and* ready to euery good worke, 2 That they speake euill of no man, that they bee no fighters, *but* soft, shewing all meekenes vnto all men. 3 \* For we our selues also were in times past vnwise, disobedient, deceined, seruing the lusts and diuers pleasures, liuing in malicioufnes and enuie, hatefull, *and* hating one another 4 But when that bountifullnes & that loue of God our Sauior toward man appeared, 5 \* Not by the works of righteousness, which we had done, but according to his mercy he saued vs, by the washing of the new birth, & the reuening of y<sup>e</sup> holy Ghost, 6 Which he shed on vs abundantly, through Iesus Christ our Sauior, 7 That wee, being iustified by his grace, should be made heires according to the hope of eternall life 8 This is a true saying & these things I wil thou shouldst affirm that they which haue beleueed in God might be careful to shew forth good works These things are good & profitable vnto men. 9 \* But it is foolish questions, & genealogies, and contentions, and braulings about the Law: for they are vnprofitable and vaine 10 Reiect him that is an heretike, after once or twike admonition 11 Knowing that he that is such, is peruerse and sinneth, being damned of his owne felicitie 12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Phileas, be diligent to come to me vnto Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter 13 Bring Zenas the expounder of the Law

1. Cor.

6. 11.

2. Tim.

1. 9.

1. Tim.

1. 4.

and 4.

7. 2.

tim. 2.

23.

Apo

## CHAP. I.

Apollas on their iourney diligently, that they  
lack nothing. 14 And let ours also learne to  
do forth good works for necessary vses, that  
they be not vnfruitfull. 15 All that are with  
me, salute thee. Greete them that loue vs in the  
truth. Grace be with you all, Amen.

To Titus, elect the first Bishop of the  
Church of the Cretians, written from  
Nicompolis in Macedonia.

## THE EPISTLE OF Paul to Philemon.

CHAP. I. 8. *Paul entreateth for Onesimus.*

**P**AUL a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and  
our brother Timotheus, vnto Phi-  
lemon our deare friend, & fellow  
helper, 2 And to our deare sister  
Apphia, and to Archippus our fel-  
low souldier, and to the Church that is in thine  
house: 3 Grace be with you, and peace from  
God our Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ.  
4 I giue thanks to my God, making mention 1. The.  
of thee in my prayers, 5 (When I 1. 2.  
re of thy loue and faith, which thou hast to- 2. the s.  
warde the Lorde Iesus, and towarde all Saints) 1. 3.  
That the fellowship of thy faith may be made  
equal, and whatloeuere good thing is in you  
through Christ Iesus, may be knowen. 7 For  
I haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue,  
because by thee, brother, the Saints bowels are  
comforted. 8 Wherefore, though I be very  
bold

# TO PHILEMON

bold in Christ to commaund thee that which is  
conuenient, 9 Yet for loues sake I rather be-  
seech thee, though I be as I am, euen Paul aged  
and euen now a prisoner for Iesus Christ. 10  
Colos. beseech thee for my sonne \* Onesimus, whom  
4.9. haue begotten in my bonds, 11 Which in time  
past was to thee vnprofitable, but now profit-  
able both to thee & to me, 12 Whom I haue  
sent againe; thou therefore receiue him, that is  
mine owne bowels 13 Whom I would haue  
retained w<sup>th</sup> me, that in thy stead hee might haue  
ministered vnto me in the bondes of the Gospell  
14 But without thy mind would I do nothing  
that thy benefite should not be as it were of ne-  
cessitie, but willingly. 15 It may be that he  
therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest  
receiue him for euer, 16 Not now as a  
seruant, but aboue a seruāt, *euen as* a brother be-  
loued specially to me: how much more then wilt  
thou doo to mee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord? 17  
Therefore thou count our things common, receiue  
him as my selfe. 18 If he haue hurt thee, I  
oweth thee ought, that put on mine account  
19 I Paule haue written *this* with mine owne  
hand I wil recompense it, albeit I do not say  
thee, that thou owest moreouer vnto me euen  
thine owne selfe. 20 Yea, brother, let me ob-  
taine this pleasure of thee in the Lord: com-  
mit my bowels in the Lord. 21 Trusting in thy  
obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou  
wilt do euen more then I say. 22 Moreouer

## CHAP. I.

prepare me lodging: for I trust through your  
prayers I shalbe freely giuen vnto you 2; There  
salute thee Epaphras my fellowe prisoner in  
Christ Iesus, 2; Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas  
3. Luke my fellow helpers 25 The grace of  
our Lord Iesus Christ be with your spirit, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, and  
sent by Onesimus a seruant.

## THE EPISTLE TO THE Hebrewes.

CHAP. I. 1. *Of Christs incomparable  
excellencie. &c.*

**A**T sundrie times and in diuers ma-  
ners God spake in the old time to  
our Fathers by the Prophets: in  
these last daies he hath spoken va-  
to vs by his Sonne, 2 Whom he  
made heire of all things, by whom also he  
made the worlds. 3 \* Who being the bright- *Colos.*  
nesse of the glory, and the ingraued forme of his *1. 15.*  
person, and bearing vp al things by his mightie  
word, hath by himselfe purged our finnes, and  
sat at the right hande of the Maiettie in the *Chap.*  
heavens, 4 And is made so much more *5. 5.*  
excellent then the Angels, in as much as he hath *psal.*  
obtained a more excellent Name then they. *2. 7.*  
For vnto which of the Angels saide he at any *2. 5.*  
time, \* I thou art my Son, this day begate I thee? *7. 14.*  
And againe, \* I will be his Father, and he shalbe *1. chr.*  
his Sonne? 6 And againe, when he bringeth *22. 12.*

# TO THE HEBREWES.

in his first begotten Sonne into the worlde,

**Psal.** saith,\* And let al y Angels of God worship him

97. 7. 7 And of the Angels he saith,\* He maketh

**Psal.** Spirits his messengers, and his ministers a flar

101. 4. of fire. 8 But vnto the Sonne he saith,\* O God

**Psal.** thy throne is for euer & euer: the scepter of

45. 7. kingdom is a scepter of righteousness. 9 Thou

hast loued righteousness, and hated iniquitie

Wherefore God, *euen* thy God, hath anoynted

thee with y oyle of gladnes aboue thy fellows

**Psal.** 10 And,\* Thou, Lord in the beginning hast crea

112. 2. blished the earth, and the heauens are the wor

135. of thine hands: 11 They shall perish, but thou

dost remaine: and they al shall waxe old as

a garment, 12 And as a vesture shalt thou

them vp, and they shall be changed: but thou

the same, and thy yeres shall not faile 13 V

which also of the Angels sayd he at any ti

**Psal.** \* Sit at my right hand, till I make thine ene

110. 1. thy footestoolle? 14 Are they not all mi

1. 60. string spirites, sent forth to minister, for a

15. 25. sakes, which shall be heires of saluation?

CHAP. 2. 9. *That we ought to giue ou*  
*selues wholly vnto Christ.*

**W**Herfore we ought diligently to giue

to the things which we haue heard,

any time we runne out 2 For if the word

ken by Angels was stedfast, & euey trans

on & disobedience receiued a iust recomp

of reward, 3 How shall we escape, if we

lect so great saluatiō, which at the first beg

## C H A P. II.

be preached by the Lord, & afterward was con-  
 firmed vnto vs by them y heard him, 4 \* God *Mar.*  
 bearing witnes thereto both with signes & won- *16. 20.*  
 ders and with miracles, and g ftes of the holy  
 Ghost, according to his own wil<sup>d</sup> 5 For he hath  
 not put in subiectiō vnto the Angels the world  
 to come, whereof we speake. 6 But \* one in a *Psal.*  
 cer ane place witnessed, saying, What is man, *8. 6.*  
 that thou shouldest be mindfull of him? or the  
 sonne of man, that thou wouldest consider him?  
 \* Thou madest him a litle inferiour to the An-  
 gels: thou crownedst him with glory & honor,  
 & hast set him aboue the works of thine hands.  
 8 \* Thou hast put all things in subiection vnder *1 Cor.*  
 his feet. And in that he hath put al things in sub *15. 27.*  
 iection vnder him, he left nothing y should not  
 be subiect vnto him. But we yet see not al things  
 finished vnto him, 9 But we see Iesus crow-  
 ned with glory and honor, \* which was made a *Phil.*  
 litle inferiour to the Angels, through the suffe *2. 8.*  
 ring of death, that by Gods grace he might taste  
 death for all men. 10 For it became him, for  
 whom are all these things, and by whom are all  
 these things, seeing that he brought many chil-  
 dren vnto glory, that he should consecrate the  
 Prince of their saluation through afflictions.  
 11 For he that sanctifieth, & they which are san-  
 ctified, are all of one: wherefore he is not asha-  
 med to call them brethren, 12 Saying, \* I will *Psal.*  
 declare thy Name vnto my brethren. in the *22. 25.*  
 middes of the Church wyl I sing praises to thee.



## TO THE HEBREWES.

**Psal.** 13 And againe, \* I wil put my trust in him And  
**18. 2.** againe, \* Behold, here am I, & the childre, which  
**Esa.** God hath giuen me. 14 Forasmuch then as the  
**8. 18.** children are partakers of flesh and blood, he  
**Hos.** also himself likewise tooke part with them, that  
**13. 14.** he might destroy \* through death, him *y* had the  
**1 Cor.** power of death, *y* is the deuill, 15 And to *y* he  
**25. 55.** might deliuer al them, which for feare of death  
were all their life time subiect to bondage.  
**16** For he in no sort tooke on *him* the Angels  
*nature*, but he tooke on *him* the seede of Abra-  
ham. 17 Wherefore in all things it behoued  
him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he  
might be mercifull, and a faithfull high Priest in  
things concerning God, that hee might make  
reconciliation for the finnes of the people.  
**18** For in that he suffered, and was tempted, he  
is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP 3. 1. *Moses and Christ compared.*

**T**herefore holy brethren, partakers of *y* hea-  
uently vocation, consider the Apostle & high  
Priest of our profession, Christ Iesus: 2 Who  
was faithfull to him *y* hath appointed him, euen  
**Num.** \* as Moses was in al his house. 3 For this man  
**12. 7.** is counted worthy of more glory then Moses,  
as much as hee which hath builded the house  
hath more honour then the house. 4 For eu-  
ry house is builded of some man, & he that hat  
built all things, is God. 5 Now Moses ver-  
ly was faithfull in all his house, as a seruant  
& witnesse of the things which should be spe

# CHAP. III.

ken after. 6 But Christ as the Sonne, ouer his  
 owne house, whose house we are, if we hold fast  
 that confidence and that reioycing of that hope  
 vnto the end. 7 Wherefore, as the holy Ghost  
 saith, \* To day if ye wil heare his voice, 8 Har- *(Cap. 4.7. psal. 95 8.*  
 den not your hearts, as in the prouocation, ac-  
 cording to the day of the temptation in the wil-  
 derness, 9 Where your father tempted me,  
 proued me, and saw my works fourtie yeeres  
 long. 10 Wherefore I was grieved with that  
 generation, and said, They came euer in *their*  
 heart, neither haue they knowen my wayes.  
 11 Therefore I sware in my wrath, if they shal  
 enter into my rest. 12 Take heede, brethren,  
 lest at any time there be in any of you an euill  
 heart, and vnfaithfull, to depart away from the  
 living God. 13 But exhort one another daily,  
 while it is called, To day, lest any of you be  
 hardened through the deceitfulness of sinne.  
 14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we  
 keepe sure vnto the end that beginning, where-  
 with we are vpholden, 15 So long as it is said,  
 To day if ye heare his voyce, harden not your  
 hearts, as in the prouocation. 16 For some  
 when they heard, prouoked him to anger:  
 howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by  
 Moyses. 17 But with whom was hee displeased  
 fourtie yeeres? \* Was hee not displeased with  
 them that sinned, \* whose carkeises fell in the *Num. 14. 37.*  
 wilderness? 18 And to whom sware hee that  
 they should not enter into his rest, but vnto the

## TO THE HEBREWS.

that obeyed not: 19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbeliefe.

CHAP. 4.    3 *Of the eternall rest.*

**L**et vs feare therefore, lest at any time by forsaking the promise of entering into his rest, any of you should seeme to bee deprivileged.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as also vnto them: but the word that they heard, profited not them, because it was not mixed with faith in those that heard it. 3 For wee which haue beleued, doe enter into rest, as he said so

*the vsuer,* \* As I haue sworne in my wrath, if

*Psal.* they shall enter into my rest: although *95.16.* my works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For hee spake in a certaine place of the seventh day on this wise, \* And God did rest the

*Gen. 2* seventh day from all his works. 5 And in that *2. ac.* place againe, If they shall enter into my rest.

*5.14.* 6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entered not therein for vnbeliefs sake.

7 Againe he appointed in Dauid a certaine day by To day, after so long a time, saying, as it

*Chap.* sayd, \* This day, if ye heare his voyce, harden *2.7.* not your hearts. 8 For if Iesus had giue them

rest, then would he not after this day haue spoken of another day. 9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God. 10 For he that

is entered into his rest, hath also ceased from his

owne workes, as God did from his. 11 Let vs studie therefore to enter into that rest, lest

## CHAP. V.

any man fall after the same ensample of disobedience. 12 For the word of God is liuely, and mighty in operation, and sharper then any two edged sword, and entreth through euon vnto the diuiding asunder of the soule and the spirit, and of the ioynts, and the marow & is a discerner of the thoughts, & the intents of the heart. 13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and open vnto his eyes, with whom we haue to doe. 14 Seing then that wee haue a great high Priest, which is entred into heauen, euen Iesus the Sonne of God, let vs holde fast our profession. 15 For we haue not an hie Priest, which can not bee touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted in like sort, yet without sinne. 16 Let vs therefore goe boldly vnto the throne of grace, that we may receiue mercy, and finde grace to helpe in time of neede.

### CHAP. 5. 5 *Christ is our high Priest*

FOR euery high Priest is taken from among men, and is ordeined for men, in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes. 2 Which is able sufficiently to haue compassion on them that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, because that he also is compassed with infirmitie, 3 And 1. *Chr.* for the saimes sake he is bound to offer for sinnes, 13. 10. as well for his owne part, as for the peoples. and 4 \* And no man taketh this honour vnto him. 23. 13.

# TO THE HERREWES.

selfe, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron,  
 & So likewise Christ tooke not to himselfe this  
 honour, to be made the high Priest, but he that  
*Chap.* said vnto him, \* Thou art my Sonne, this day  
*x. 5.* begate I thee, *gaue it him* 6 As he also in an-  
*psal.* other place speaketh, \* Thou art a Priest for e-  
*2. 7.* uer, after the order of Melchi-sedec. 7 Who  
*Chap.* in the daies of his flesh did offer vp prayers  
*7. 17.* and supplications, with strong crying & teares  
*psal.* vnto him, that was able to saue him from death,  
*110. 3.* and was also heard in that which he feared,  
 8 And though hee were the Sonne, yet learned  
 he obedience, by the things which he suffered,  
 9 And being consecrate, was made the author  
 of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey  
 him: 10 And is called of God the high Priest  
 after the order of Melchi-sedec. 11 Of whom  
 we haue many things to say, which are hard to  
 be vttered, be cause yee are dull of hearing.  
 12 For when as concerning the time ye ought  
 to be teachers, yet haue yee neede againe that  
 wee teach you what are the first principles of  
 the word of God: and are become such as haue  
 need of milke & not of strong meate: 13 For euery  
 one that vseth milke is inexperienced in the word of  
 righteousnesse: for he is a babe. 14 But strong  
 meate belongeth to them that are of age, which  
 through long custome haue their wits exerci-  
 sed, to discerne both good and euill.

CHAP.

CHAP. 6. 4. *Slouthfulnesse threatened.*

¶ Herfore, leaning the doctrine of the beginning of Christ, let vs bee led forward vnto perfection, not laying againe the foundation of repentance from dead works, & of faith toward God, 2 Of the doctrine of baptisines, and laying on of hands, & of the resurrection from the dead, & of eternall iudgement. 3 And this will we doe, if God permit. 4 \* For it is impossible that they which were once lightened, and haue tasted of the heavenly gift, & were made partakers of the holy Ghost, 5 And haue tasted of the good word of God, and of the power of the world to come, 6 If they fall away, should be renewed againe by repentance: seeing they crucifie againe to themselves the Sonne of God, and make a mocke of him. 7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that cometh oft vpon it, & bringeth forth herbs meete for them by whom it is dressed, receaith blessing of God. 8 But that which beareth thornes and bryars, is reprobued, & is nere vnto cursing, whose end is to be burned. 9 But beloved, we haue perswaded our selues better things of you, and such as accompany saluation, though yet it is speake. 10 For God is not vnrighteous, that he should forget your worke, & labour of love, which ye shewed toward his Name, in that ye haue ministered vnto the Saints, and yet minister. 11 And wee desire that euery one of you shewe the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the end. 12 That ye be not

(hap.  
10. 26.  
mass.  
12. 45.  
2. per.  
1. 20.

## TO THE HERREWES.

Mouthfull, but followers of them, which through  
 faith and patience, inherite the promises. 13 For  
 when God made the promises to Abraham, be-  
 cause he had no greater to sweare by, he sweare  
*Gene.* by himselfe. 14 Saying, \* Surely I will aboun-  
 12. 2. dantly blesse thee, & multiply thee marvellous-  
 17. ly. 15 And so after that he had taried patiently,  
 4. and hee enjoyed the promise. 16 For men verely  
 32. 17. sweare by him that is greater *then themselves*,  
 and an othe for confirmation is among them in  
 ende of all strife. 17 So God willing more abun-  
 dantly to shewe vnto the heires of promise the  
 stablenesse of his counsell, bound himselfe by an  
 othe, 18 That by two immutable things, where-  
 in it is vnpossible that God should lie, wee  
 might haue strong consolation, which haue our  
 refuge to lay holde vpon y<sup>e</sup> hope that is set be-  
 fore vs, 19 Which hope we haue, as an ancre  
 of the soule, both sure & stedfast, and it entrench  
 into that which is within the vaile, 20 Whither  
 the forerunner is for vs entered in, *euen Iesus*,  
 that is made an hie Priest for euer, after the or-  
 deer of Melchisedec.

CHAP 7. *Christ compared with Melchisedec*

*Gene.* 14. 18. **F**OR this Melchisedec \* was king of Salem,  
 the Priest of the most hie God, who mette  
 Abraham, as hee returned from the slaughter of  
 the Kings, and blessed him: To whom also A-  
 braham gaue the tithe of all things: who first is  
 by interpretation King of righteoutnesse: after  
 that, he is also King of Salem, that is, King of  
 peace,

## C H A P. VII.

peace, 3 Without father, without mother,  
 without kindred, and hath neither beginning of our  
 dayes, neither ende of life: but is likened vnto  
 y<sup>e</sup> sonne of God, & continueth a priest for euer.  
 4 Now consider how great this man was vnto  
 whom euen the Patriarke Abraham gave the  
 title of the spoiles. 5 For verely they which  
 are the childre of Leui, which receiue the office  
 of the Priesthood, haue a \* commaundement to  
 take according to the Law, titles of the people  
 (that is, of their brethren) though they came out  
 of the loynes of Abraham. 6 But hee whose kin-  
 red is not counted among them, receiued tithes  
 of Abraham, & blessed him that had the promi-  
 ses. 7 And without all contradiction the lesse  
 is blessed of the greater. 8 And here men that  
 die receiue tithes, but there he receiveth them,  
 of whom it is witnessed that he liueth. 9 And  
 to say as the thing is, Leui also which receiveth  
 tithes, paid tithes in Abraham. 10 For he was  
 yet in the loynes of his father *Abraham*, when  
 Melchisedec met him. 11 If therefore perfectiō  
 had bene by the Priesthood of the Leuites (for  
 vnder it the Law was established to the people)  
 what needed it furthermore, y<sup>e</sup> another Priest  
 should rise after y<sup>e</sup> order of Melchisedec & not  
 to be called after the order of Aaron? 12 For  
 if the Priesthood be changed, then of necessity  
 must there be a change of the Law. 13 For he of  
 whom the se things are spoken, pertaineth vnto  
 another tribe, wherof no man serued at y<sup>e</sup> altar.

Num.  
 18.21.



## TO THE HERREWES.

**14** For it is euident, that our Lord spring out  
 of Iuda, concerning the which tribe Moses spake  
 nothing touching the Priesthood. **15** And it is  
 yet a more euident thing because that after the  
 similitude of Melchi sedec there is risen up an-  
 other Priest, **16** Which is not made *Priest* after  
 the Law of the carnall cōmandement, but after  
 the power of the endlesse life. **17** For he testi-  
 fieth thus. **6** Thou art a Priest for ever after the  
 order of Melchi sedec. **18** For the commande-  
 ment *y* went afore is disanulled, because of the  
 weaknes thereof, & vnprofitablenesse. **19** For  
 the Law made nothing perfect, but *y* bringing  
 in of a better hope *made perfect*, whereby we  
 draw nere vnto God. **20** And forasmuch as it  
 is not without an othe (for these are made priests  
 without an othe: **21** But this *a man* with an  
 othe by him that said vnto him, \*I he Lord haue  
 sworne, & wil not repent, Thou art a Priest for  
 ever, after the order of Melchi sedec) **22** In so  
 much is Iesus made a suretie of a better Testa-  
 ment. **23** And among them many were made  
 priests, because they were not suſtred to endure,  
 by the reason of death. **24** But this man be-  
 cause he endureth ever, hath a priesthood, which  
 cannot passe from one to another. **25** Where-  
 fore, he is able also perfectly to saue them that  
 come vnto God by him, seeing he ever liueth  
 to make intercession for them. **26** For such an  
 hie Priest it became vs to haue, *which* is hol-  
 harmlesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and  
 made

Chap.

56.

psal

110.4

Psal.

110.4

## C H A P. VIII.

made higher then  $\gamma$  beauen: 27 Which needeth not daily as those hie Priests to offer vp sacrifice, \* first for his owne sinnes, and then for the peoples; for that did he once, when he offered vp himselfe. 28 For the Law maketh men high Priests which haue infirmity: but the word of the othe that was since the Lawe, *maketh* the Sonne, who is consecrated for euermore.

C H A P. 8. 1. *That the ceremonies of the Lawe are ended.*

**N**Owe of the things which we haue spoken, *this is the summe*, that we haue such an hie Priest, that sitteth at the right hand of the throne of the Maiestie in heauen, 2 And is a Minister of the Sanctuarie, and of that true Tabernacle which the Lord pight, & not man. 3 For euery high Priest is ordeined to offer both gistes and sacrifices: wherefore it was of necessitie, that this man shoulde haue somewhat also to offer. 4 For he were not a Priest, if he were on the earth, seeing there are Priestes that according to the Law offer gistes, 5 Who serue vnto the paterne and shadowe of heavenly things, as Moses was warned by God, when he was about to build the Tabernacle \*See. said he, that thou make all things according to  $\gamma$  paterne, shewed to thee in the mount. 6 But nowe our high Priest hath obtained a more excellent office, in such as hee is the Mediatour of a better Testament, which is established vpon better promises. 7 For if that first Testament had bin vnblaucable,

*Leui.*  
*16.11.*

*Exod.*  
*25.40*  
*high altes*  
*7.44.*

## T O T H E H E B R E W E S .

blameable, no place should haue bene sought  
for y<sup>e</sup> second. 8 For in rebuking them he saith,  
*Ecclap.* \* Behold, the dayes will come, saith the Lorde,  
*10. 16* when I shall make with the house of Israel, and  
*iere.* with the house of Iuda a new Testament, 9 Not  
*31. 31,* like the Testament that I made with their fa-  
*32. 33,* thers, in the day that I tooke them by the hand,  
*34.* to leade them out of y<sup>e</sup> land of Egypt: for they  
*rom.* continued not in my Testament, and I regarded  
*31. 27* them not, saith the Lord. 10 For this is the Te-  
stament that I will make with the house of Isra-  
el, After these dayes, saith the Lord, I will put  
my Lawes in their mind, and in their heart I will  
write them, and I will bee their God, and they  
shal be my people, 11 And they shal not teach  
euery man his neighbour, and euery man his  
brother, saying, Knowe the Lorde: for all shall  
knowe me, from the least of them, to the great-  
est of them. 12 For I wil be mercifull to their  
vnrightheousnesse, and I will remember their  
sinnes and their iniquities no more. 13 In that  
he saith a new Testament, he hath abrogare the  
olde. now that which is disanulled, and was  
olde, is ready to vanish away.

C H A P 9. 2. *The Law compared with Christ*

**T**Hen the first Testament had also ordina-  
ces of religion, and a worldly Sanctuary  
2 For the first Tabernacle was made, where  
in was the candlestick, and the table, and the  
shew bread, which Tabernacle is called the ho-  
ly places. 3 And after the second vaile of the  
tabernacle

# CH A P. IX.

tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all,  
 4 Which had the golden censer, and the Arke  
 of the Testament overlayed round about with  
 gold, wherein the golden pot which had Man-  
 na, *Num.* and \* Aarons rodde that had budded, *Num.*  
 and the \* tables of the Testament, 5 \* And ouer *17.10.*  
 the Arke were the glorious Cherubins, sha- *1.Kin.*  
 dowing the mercie seate: of which things wee *8.9.*  
 will not now speake particularly. 6 Now *Exod.*  
 when these things were thus ordeined, the *25.22.*  
 Priestes went alwayes into the first tabernacle,  
 and accomplished the seruice. 7 But into the  
 second went the \* hie Priest alone, once euery *Exod.*  
 yeere, not without blood which he offered for *30.10.*  
 himselfe, and for the ignorances of the people. *Leuit.*  
 8 Whereby the holy Ghost this signified, that *16.2.*  
 the way into the Holiest of all was not yet ope-  
 ned, while as yet the first tabernacle was stan-  
 ding, 9 Which was a figure for that presente  
 time wherein were offered giftes and sacrific-  
 es that coul not make holy, concerning the  
 conscience him that did the seruice, 10 Which  
 continually stood in meates and drinckes, and diners  
 washings, and carnall rites, which were injoy-  
 ed, vntill the time of reformation. 11 But  
 Christ being come an high Priest of good  
 things to come, by a greater and a more per-  
 fect Tabernacle, not made with handes, that is,  
 not of this building, 12 Neither by the blood  
 of goats & calves: but by his owne blood en-  
 tred he in once into the holy place, and obtai-  
 ned

## TO THE HEBREWES.

*Heb.* ned eternall redemption *for vs.* 13 \* For if the  
 13 14. blood of buls & of goates, and the ashes of an  
*num.* heifer, sprinkling them y are vncleane, sanctifi-  
 19 4. eth as touching y purifying of y flesh, 14 How  
 1. *Pet.* much more shall the \* blood of Christ, which  
 3. 19 through the eternal Spirit offered himselfe with-  
 1. *Ioh.* out fault to God, \* purge your conscience from  
 1. 7. dead workes, to serue the living God? 15 And  
 for this cause is hee the Mediatour of the new  
*Rom.* Testament, that through \* death which was for  
 5 6. the redemption of the transgressions *that were*  
 in the former Testament, they which were cal-  
 led, might receiue the promise of eternall inhe-  
 rittance. 16 For where a Testament is, there  
 must be the death of him y made y Testament.  
*Gala.* 17 \* For the Testament is confirmed when men  
 3. 15. are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as hee  
 that made it, is alieue. 18 Wherefore neither  
 was the first ordeined without blood. 19 For  
 when Moses had spoken euery precept to the  
 people, according to the Lawe, hee tooke the  
 blood of calves, and of goates, with water and  
 purple wooll and hyssope, and sprinkled both  
*Exod.* the booke & all the people, 20 \* Saying, This  
 24. 8. is the blood of the Testament, which God hath  
 appointed vnto you. 21 Moreouer, he sprink-  
 led likewise the Tabernacle w blood also, & all  
 the ministring vessels 22 And almost all thinges  
 are by the Law purged with blood, and with-  
 out shedding of blood is no remission. 23  
 It was then necessarie, that the similitudes of hea-

## C H A P. X.

earthly things should be purified w<sup>th</sup> such things:  
 but the heavenly things themselves *are purified*  
 with better sacrifices then are these. 24 For  
 Christ is not entred into the holy places *y<sup>e</sup>* are  
 made with hands, which are similitudes of the  
 true *Sanctuarie*: but *is entred* into very hea-  
 ven, to appeare now in the sight of God for vs,  
 25 Not that hee should offer himselfe often, as  
 the hie Priest entred into the Holy place euery  
 yeere with other blood. 26 (For then must he  
 haue often suffered since the foundation of the  
 world) but now in the end of the world hath he  
 bene made manifest, once to put away sinne, by  
 the sacrifice of himselfe. 27 And as it is ap-  
 pointed vnto men that they shall once die, and  
 after *y<sup>e</sup>* *commeth* the iudgement: 28 So \*Christ  
 was once offered to take away the sinnes of ma-  
 ny, and vnto them that looke for him, (shall hee  
 appeare the second time without sinne vnto  
 glorification

Rom.  
 5. 8.  
 1. pet.  
 3. 18.

CH A P. 10.    *5 Christ but once offered, though  
 a perpetuall sacrifice.*

For the Lawe hauing the shadow of good  
 things to come, and not the very image of  
 the things, can neuer with those sacrifices, which  
 they offer yeere by yeere continually, sanctifie  
 the conuersers thereunto. 2 For would they not  
 then haue ceased to haue bene offered, because  
 that the offerers once purged, should haue had  
 no more conscience of sinnes. 3 But in those  
 sacrifices there is a remembrance againe of sinnes  
euery

## TO THE HERREWES.

every yeere. 4 For it is vnpossible that the blood of buls & goats should take away sins.

*Psal.* 5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, \* Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not: but a body hast thou ordeined me. 6 In

burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou hast had no pleasure. 7 Then I said, Lo, I come (in the beginning of the booke it is written of me) that I should do thy will, O God. 8 Above, when he said, Sacrifice & offering, and burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou wouldst not haue, neither hadst pleasure *therin* (which are offered by the Law,) 9 Then said he Lo, I come to do thy wil, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may stablish the second. 10 By the which wil we are sanctified, *nam* by the offering of y body of Ie us Christ once *made*. 11 And euery Prielt standeth daily ministring, & oft times offereth one manner of offering, which can neuer take away finnes.

*Chap.* 12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for finnes, sitteth for euer at the right hand

*Psal.* of God, 13 And from henceforth saith \* till

*110.* his enemies be made his footestool. 14 For with one offering hath he consecrated for euer

*15.15* them that are sanctified. 15 I or the holy Ghost

*Chap.* also beareth vs record for after he had said before, 16 \* This is the Testamēt that I wil make

*1ere.* vnto them, After those dayes, saith the Lorde, 31.53. wil put my lawes in their heart, & in their mind

*107.* I wil write them, 17 And their finnes and iniquities will I remember no more, 18 Now

when

# CHAP. X.

where remission of these things is, there is no more offering for sinne. 19 Seeing therefore, brethren, that by the blood of Iesus we may be bold to enter into the Holy place, 20 By the new and living way, which hee hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, y<sup>e</sup> is, his flesh. 21 *And seeing wee haue an hie Priest, which is ouer the house of God,* 22 Let vs draw neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our heartes being pure from an euil conscience, 23 And washed in our bodies with pure water, let vs keepe the profession of our hope without waivering, (for he is faithfull that promised) 24 And let vs consider one another to prouoke vnto loue, and to good works, 25 Not forsaking the fellowship that we haue among our selues as the manner of some is: but let vs exhort *one another*, and that so much the more, because yee see that the day draweth neere. 26 \* For if wee siane willingly after that wee haue receiued and acknowledged y<sup>e</sup> truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for finnes, 27 But a feareful looking for of iudgement, & violent fire, which shal deuoure the aduersaries. 28 Hee that despiseth Moyses Lawe, dieth without mercie \* vnder two or three witnessers: 29 Of how much sorer punishment suppose ye shall he be worthie, which treadeth vnder foot the Sonne of God, & counteth the blood of the Testament as an vnholy thing, wherewith he was sanctified, and doeth despite the Spirit of grace? 30 For we know him

(chap.  
6.30

Deut.  
19.15.  
mat.  
18.16.  
john  
8.17.



## TO THE HEBREWES.

*Deut.* him, that hath said, \* Vengeance *belong* *11. vn.*  
*52 35.* to me: I will recompense, saith the Lord. And  
*rom.* againe, The Lord shall iudge his people. *31. 18.*  
*22. 19.* is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the  
 liuing God. *32* Now call to remembrance the  
 dayes that are passed, in the which, after that ye  
 had receiued light, yee endured a great fight in  
 afflictions, *33* Partly while yee were made a  
 gazing stocke both by reproches & a fictions,  
 and partly while yee became companions of  
 them which were so tossed to and fro. *34* For  
 both ye sorowed with mee for my bonds, and  
 suffered with ioy the spoyling of your goods  
 knowing in your selues how that yee haue in  
 heauen a better, and an enduring substance.  
*35* Cast not away therefore your confidence  
 which hath great recompense of reward. *36* For  
 ye haue neede of patience, that after yee haue  
 done the wil of God ye might receiue the pro  
 mise. *37* For yet a very litle while, and he that  
 shall come, wil come, & wil not tary. *38* \* Now  
 the iust shall liue by faith. but if *20.* withdraw  
 himselfe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him.  
*39* But wee are not they which withdraw ou  
 selues vnto perdition, but *follow* faith vnto the  
 conseruation of the soule.

*Hab.*  
*2. 4.*  
*rom.*  
*1. 17.*  
*galat.*  
*3. 11.*

C H A P. II. 1 *That all the fathers were  
 saved onely by faith.*

**N**OW faith is the ground of things which  
 are hoped for, and the euidence of things  
 which are not seene, 2 For by it *our* elders were

# C H A P. XI.

well reported of. 3 \* Through faith we vnder- *Gene.*  
stand that the world was ordeined by *y* word 1.1.  
of God, so that *y* things which we see, are not *1ohn*  
made of things which did appeare. 4 By faith 1.10.  
Abel \* offered vnto God a greater sacrifice then *Gene.*  
Cain, by \* the which he obtained witness that 4 4.  
he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: by *Matt.*  
the which *faith* also he being dead, yet spea- 23.35.  
ke h. 5 By faith was \* Enoch translated, that *Gene.*  
he should not see death, neither was he found: 5. 24.  
for God had translated him: for before he was  
translated, he was reported of that he had plea-  
sed God. 6 But without faith it is vnpossible  
to please *him*: for he that cometh to God,  
must beleue that *God* is, and that hee is a re-  
warder of them that seeke him. 7 By faith  
\* Noe being warned of God of *y* things which *Gene.*  
were as yet not seene, moued with reuerence, 6.15.  
prepared the Arke to *y* sauing of his houthold,  
through the which *Arke* hee condemned the  
world, and was made heire of the righteousnes  
which is by faith. 8 By faith \* Abraham, when *Gene.*  
he was called, obeyed *God*, to goe out into a 12.40  
place, which he should afterwarde receiue for  
inheritance, and he went out, not knowing  
whither he went. 9 By faith he abode in the  
land of promise, as in a strange countrey, as  
one that dwelt in tents with Isaac and Iacob.  
Hee receiued with him of the same promise. 10 For  
he looked for a citie hauing a foundation,  
whose builder and maker is *God*, 11 Through  
faith

**Gen.** faith \* Sara also receiued strength to conceiue  
**7.19.** see de, and was deliuered of a childe when she  
**and** was past age, because she iudged him faithfull  
**31.3.** which had promised. 12 And therefore sprang  
there of one, euen of one which was dead. *as*  
*many* as the starres of the skie in multitude,  
and as the sand of the sea shore which is innu-  
merable. 13 All these died in faith, & receiued  
not the promises, but sawe them as farre off, and  
beleueed *them* and receiued *them* thankfully,  
and confessed that they were strangers and pil-  
grims on the earth. 14 For they that say such  
things declare plainely that they seeke a coun-  
trei, 15 And if they had bene mindful of that  
countrey, from whence they came out, they  
had leisure to haue returned. 16 But now they

**Gen.** desire a better, that is an heauenly: wherefore

**23.10.** God is not ashamed of them to bee called their

**Gen.** God: for hee hath prepared for them a citie.

**21.12.** 17 By faith \* Abraham offered vp Isaac, when he

**10.7.** was tried, and he that had receiued the promi-

**9.7.** ses offered his onely begotten Sonne. 18 (To

**Gen.** whom it was sayd, \* In Isaac shall thy see de be

**27.28.** called) 19 For he considered that God was able

**29.** to raise *him* vp euen frō the dead: from whence

**Gen.** he receiued him also after a sort. 20 By faith \* Is-

**18.15.**aac blessed Jacob & Esau, concerning things to

**Gen.** come. 21 By faith \* Jacob whē he was a dying,

**4.31.** blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph, and \* leaning

**Gen.** on y end of his staffe, worshippd God. 22 By

**Gen.** 25. faith \* Ioseph when he dyed, made mention of

the departing of the children of Israel, & gaue  
 commaundement of his bones. 23 \* By faith *Exod.*  
 Moses when he was borne, was hid three mo- 2.2.  
 neths of his parents, because they sawe he was  
 a proper childe, neither feared they the \* Kings *Exod.*  
 commaundement. 24 By faith \* Moses when 1.16.  
 hee was come to age, refused to bee called the *Exod.*  
 sonne of Pharaohs daughter, 25 And chose ra- 2.11.  
 ther to suffer aduersitie with y<sup>e</sup> people of God,  
 then to enioy the pleasures of sinnes for a sea-  
 son, 26 Esteeming the rebuke of Christ grea-  
 ter riches then the treasures of Egypt: for hee  
 had respect vnto the recompence of the reward.  
 27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, and feared not *Exod.*  
 the fiercenes of the king: for he endured, as he 12.22.  
 that saw him which is inuisible. 28 Through *Exod.*  
 faith he ordeined the \* Pascheouer, and the effu- 14.22.  
 sion of blood, lest he that destroyed the first *Josh.*  
 borne should touch them 29 By faith they 6.20.  
 \* passed through the red sea as by drie land, *Josh.*  
 which when the Egyptians had assayed to doe, 6.23.  
 they were swallowed vp. 30 By faith the *Josh.*  
 \* walles of Iericho fell downe, after they were 2.1.  
 compassed about seuen dayes. 31 By faith the *Judg.*  
 barlot \* Rahab: perished not with them which 6.11.  
 obeyed not, when \* she had receiued the spies *Judg.*  
 peaceably. 32 And what shall I more say? for 4.6.  
 the time would be too short for me to tell of *Judg.*  
 \* Gedeon, of \* Barac, and of \* Sampson, and of 13.24.  
 \* Iephthe, also of Dauid, and Samuel, and of the *Judg.*  
 Prophets: 33 Which through faith subdued 11.10  
 Q 2 kingdomes,

## TO THE HERREWES.

kingdomes wrought righteousness, obtained the promises, stopped the mouthes of lions, 34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, of weak were made strong, waxed valiant in battell, turned to flight the armies of the alians. 35 The women receiued their dead raised to life: other also were racked, & would not be deliuered that they might receiue a better resurrection. 36 And others haue benetried by mockings and scourgings, yea, moreouer by bondes and prisonment. 37 They were stoned, they were hewed asunder, they were tempted they were slayne with the sword, they wandred vp and downe in sheepes skinnes, & in goates skinnes, being destitute, afflicted, and tormented: 38 Whom the world was not worthy of they wandred in wildernesses, and mountaines and denues, and caues of the earth. 39 And these all through faith obtained good report, and receiued not the promise, 40 God providing a better thing for vs, that they without vs should not be made perfecte.

CHAP. 12.    1. *Exhortation to patience and constancie.*

*Rom.*

1.4. **W**herefore, \* let vs also, seeing that we are  
*coloff.* compassed with so great a cloud of wit-  
 1.8. nesses, cast away euery thing y preleth downe,  
*1. phes.* and y sinne that hangeth so fast on: let vs runne  
 1.24. with patience the race that is set before vs,  
*1. per.* 2 Looking vnto Iesus the authour and finisher  
 1.24. of our faith, who for the ioy that was set be-  
 fore him

## C H A P. XII.

fore him endured the crosse, and despised the shame, and <sup>v</sup> set at the right hand of the throne of God. 3 Consider therefore him that endured such speaking against of sinners least ye should be wearied & faint in your minds. 4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood, striving against sinne. 5 And ye haue forgotten the consolation, which speaketh vnto you as vnto childre, \* My sonne, despise not the chastening of the Prom. 7-11. Lord neither faint when thou art rebuked of him: 6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chasteneth: and he scourgeth euery sonne that he receiueth: 7 If ye endure chastening, God offe-  
 reth himselfe vnto you as vnto sonnes: for what sonne is it whom <sup>y</sup> father chasteneth not? 8 If therefore ye be without correction, wherof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes. 9 Moreouer we haue had <sup>y</sup> fathers of our bodies which corrected vs and we gaue them reuerence, should we not much rather be in subiection vnto the Father of spirits that wee might liue? 10 For they verily for a few dayes chastened vs after their owne pleasure: but he *chasteneth vs* for our profite, that we might be partakers of his holinesse. 11 Now no chastising for the present seemeth to be ioyous, but grievous: but afterward it bringeth the quiet fruite of righteousness, vnto them which are thereby exercised. 12 Wherefore lift vp *your* hands which hang down, & *your* weake knees, 13 And make straight steps vnto your feet, lest <sup>y</sup> which

## TO THE HEBREWES.

is halting, be turned out of the way. but let it rather be healed. 14 \* Follow peace with all men, 12.18. and holines, without  $\bar{y}$  which no man shall see the Lord. 15 Take heed that no man fall away from the grace of God: let no root of bitterness spring vp and trouble you, least thereby many be defiled. 16 Let there be no fornicator, or **Gene.** prophane person, as \* Esau, which for a portion 25.33. of meate sold his birthright. 17 \* For ye know **Gene.** how that after ward also when he would haue 27.38. inherited the blessing. he was reiected: for he found no place to repētaunce, though he sought *that blessing* w<sup>th</sup> teares. 18 For ye are not come **Exod.** vnto the \* mount that might be touched, nor vnto 19.16. burning fire, nor to blacknes, & darknes, and tempest, 19 Neither vnto  $\bar{y}$  sound of a trumpet, and the voice of wordes, which they that **Exod.** heard it, excused themselues, \* that the worde 20.19 should not be spoken to the any more, 20 (For they were not able to abide that which was **Exod.** commanded, \* Yea, though a beast touch the 29.12. mountaine, it shalbe stoned, or thrust through with a dart: 21 And so terrible was the sight which appeared, that Moses sayde, I feare and quake) 22 But ye are come vnto  $\bar{y}$  mount **Si-** on, and to the citie of the liuing God the celesti- all Ierusalem, & to the company of innumera- ble Angels, 23 And to the assembly and con- gregation of the first borne, which are written in heauen, & to God the Iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust and perisite men, 24 And to Iesus  
the

## C H A P. XIII.

the Mediatour of y<sup>e</sup> new Testament, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaketh better thing: then that of Abel. 25 See that ye despise not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not, which refused him, that spake on earth: much more shal we *not escape*, if we turne away from him, that speaketh frō heauen. 26 Whose voice then shooke the earth, and now hath declared, saying, \* Yet once more will I shake not the *Age* earth only, but also heauen. 27 And this word, 28 Yet once more, signifieth the remouing of those things, which are shaken, as of those things, which are made *with hands*, that the things which are not shaken, may remaine. 28 Wherefore seeing we receiue a kingdome, which cannot be shaken, let vs haue grace, whereby wee may so serue God, that we may please him with reuerence and feare. 29 For \* euen our God *Deus* is a consuming fire. 4.24.

### C H A P. I., Precepts both of manners and doctrine.

**I** Et \* brotherly loue continue. 2 \* Bee not *Rom* forgetful to entertaine strangers: for there. 11 10. by some haue \* receiued Angels into their lou. 1. Pet. ses vnawares 3 Remember them that are in 4.9. bonds, as though ye were bound with them; *Gene* and them that are in affliction, as if ye were al- 18.3. so *afflicted* in the body 4 Marriage is honou- & 39. rable among all, and the bedde vndefiled: but 3. whoremongers and adulterers God will iudge. 5 Let your cōuersation be without couetousnes.



## TO THE HEBREWES.

and be content with those things that ye haue:  
*Heb.* for he hath said, 6 \* I will not faile thee, nei-  
 1.5. ther forsake thee: 7 So that we may boldly  
*Psal.* say, \* The Lorde is my helper, neither will I  
 118.6. feare what man can do vnto me. 8 Remember  
 them which haue the ouersight of you, which  
 haue declared vnto you the worde of God:  
 whose faith follow, considering what hath bin  
 the end of their conuersation. Iesus Christ ye-  
 sterday, and to day, the same also is for ever.  
 9 Be not caried about with diuers and strange  
 doctrines: for it is a good thing that y heart be  
 stablished with grace, & not with meats, which  
 haue not profited them that haue bene occupi-  
 ed therein 10 We haue an altar whereof they  
 haue no authority to eate which serue in the  
*Leui.* Tabernacle. 11 \* For the bodies of those beasts  
 4.11. whose blood is brought into the Holy place by  
 and 6. the hie Priest for sinne, are burnt without the  
 30. campe 12 Therefore euen Iesus that he might  
 & 16. sanctifie y people w his own blood, suffered w-  
 27. out the gate. 13 Let vs go forth to him therefore  
*Mich.* out of the campe bearing his reproch. 14 \* For  
 2.10. here haue we no continuing citie, but we seeke  
 one to come. 15 Let vs therefore by him offer  
 the sacrifice of praise alwaies to God, that is,  
*Hose.* the \* fruite of the lippes, which confesse his  
 24.5. Name. 16 To do good, and to distribute for-  
 get not: for with such sacrifices God is pleased.  
 17 Obey them that haue the ouersight of you,  
 and submit your selues: for they watch for your  
 soules,

## C H A P. XIII.

soules, as they that must giue accounts, that they  
 may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for  
 that is vnprofitable for you. 18 Pray for vs :  
 for we are assured that we haue a good consci-  
 ence in all things, desiring to liue honestly.  
 19 And I desire you somewhat the more ear-  
 nestly, that ye so doe, that I may bee restored  
 to you more quickly. 20 The God of peace  
 that brought againe from the dead our Lorde  
 Iesus, the great shepheard of y<sup>e</sup> sheepe, through  
 the blood of y<sup>e</sup> euerlasting Couenant, 21 Make  
 you perfect in all good workes, to doe his wil,  
 working in you that which is pleasant in his  
 sight through Iesus Christ, to whom be praise  
 neuer and euer, Amen. 22 I beseeche you  
 ye brethren, suffer the wordes of exhorta-  
 tion: for I haue written vnto you in fewe  
 wordes 23 Know that our brother Timotheus  
 is deliuered, with whome (if he come shortly)  
 will see you 24 Salute all them that haue the  
 oversight of you, and all the saints. They of  
 Italy salute you. 25 Grace be with you all,  
 AMEN.

Written to the Hebrewes from Italie,  
 and sent by Timotheus.

THE

# THE GENERAL EPISTLE

of Iames.

CHAP. I. 6. Of patience, faith, and hope.

13. Of temptations.



Ames the seruante of God, and  
the Lord Iesus Christ, to y<sup>e</sup> wel  
tribes, which are scattered abro  
salutation. 2 My brethren, com  
it exceeding ioy, when ye fall

*Rom.* to diuers tentations, 3 \* Knowing that the  
5.7. ing of your sayth bringeth forth patience

4 And let patience haue her perfect wor  
that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking  
thing. 5 If any of you lacke wisdom, let  
aske of God, which giueth to all men liberall  
and reprocheth no man, and it shall be gi  
him.

*Matt.* him. 6 \* But let him aske in faith, and wa  
7.7. not: for he that wauereth, is like a waue of

*marke* sea, tost of the winde, and caried away. 7 N  
ther let that man thinke that he shall recei

*luke* ny thing of the Lord. 8 A double minded  
man is unstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of loue degree reioyce in that hee is exalted

14.13. 10 Againe, he y<sup>e</sup> is rich, in that he is made low

*Isai.* for as the flower of the grasse, shall hee \* vani

40.6. way. 11 For as when y<sup>e</sup> sunne riseth with

1. pet. then the grasse withereth, and his floure fall

1.34. away, & the goodly thape of it perissheth: so

so shall y<sup>e</sup> rich man wither away in his w

*Iob* 12 \* Blessed is the man that endureth tempta

5.17. for when he is tried, he shall receiue the crowne

of life, which the Lord hath promised to

# CHAP. I.

that loue him. 13 Let no man say when hee is  
tempted, I am tempted of God: for God can-  
not be tempted with euill, neither tempteth hee  
any man. 14 But euery man is tempted, when  
he is drawen away by his own concupiscence,  
and is entised. 15 Then when lust hath concei-  
ued it bringeth forth sinne and sinne when it is  
finished, bringeth forth death. 16 Erre not, my  
deare brethren. 17 Euery good giuing, and  
euery perfect gift is from above, and commeth  
down from the Father of lights, with whom  
is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning.  
18 Of his owne will begate hee vs with the  
word of trueth, that wee should bee as the first  
fruits of his creatures. 19 Wherefore my  
deare brethren, let euery man be swift to *Prou.*  
heare, slow to speake, slow to wrath. 20 For 17.27.  
the wrath of man doeth not accomplish the  
righteousnes of God. 21 Wherefore lay apart  
all filthinesse and all profane of malitiousnesse,  
and receiue with meekenesse the worde that  
is grafted in you, which is able to saue your  
soules. 22 And be ye doers of the worde, and *Matth.*  
not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues. 7.21.  
23 For, if any heare the worde, and doe it not, 7.22.  
it is like vnto a man that beholdeth his natu- 2.13.  
all face in a glasse. 24 For when he hath con-  
sidered himselfe, he goeth his way, and forget-  
teth immediately what maner of one hee was.  
25 But who so looketh in the perfect Lawe of  
liberty, and continueth therein, hee not being a  
forgetfull

# I A M E S.

forgetful hearer, but a doer of the worke, shalt be blessed in his deed. 26 If any man among you seemeth religious, & refraineth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this mans religion is vaine. 27 Pure religion and undefiled before God euen the father, is this to visite the fatherlesse, and widowes in their aduersitie, and to keepe himselfe vnspotted of the world.

CHAP. 2. 1. *Of partialitie.* 14 *True faith cannot be voyde of good workes.*

**Leuit.** **M**Y brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Iesus Christ in \* respect of persons. 19. 15. sons. 2 For if there come into your company a man with a gold ring, and in goodly apparel. **Leuit.** 1. 17. and there come in also a poore man in vile raiment, 3 And ye haue a respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, & say vnto him, Sit thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto the poore man. **Leuit.** 19. 24. 23. Stande thou there, or sit here vnder my footstoole, 4 Are ye not partial in your selues, and are become iudges of euil thoughts? 5 Heauenly Father, my beloued brethren, Hath not God chosen the poore of this world, *that they should be rich in faith, and heires of the kingdome which he hath promised to them that loue him?* 6 But ye haue despised the poore. Doe not the rich oppress you by tyrannie, and do not they draw you before the iudgement seats? 7 Doe not they blaspheme the worthy Name after which yee are named? 8 But if yee fulfill the royall Law, according to the Scripture, *which saith,*

Th

## C H A P. II.

Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye  
 doe well. 9 But if ye regard the persons, ye  
 commit sinne, and are rebuked of the Lawe, as  
 transgressors. 10 For whosoever shall keepe  
 the whole Lawe, and yet faileth in one point,  
 he is guiltie of all. 11 For he that sayd, Thou  
 shalt not commit adulterie, said also, Thou shalt  
 not kil. Now though thou doest none adulterie,  
 yet if thou killest, thou art a transgressor of  
 the Lawe. 12 So speake ye, and so doe as they  
 shall be iudged by the Lawe of libertie,  
 For there shalbe cōdemnation mercilesse to  
 him that sheweth not mercy, and mercie reioy.  
 against condemnation. 14 What auaieth  
 my brethren, though a mā saith he hath faith,  
 when he hath no works? can that faith saue him?  
 For if a brother or siter be naked, and de-  
 stitute of dayly foode, 15 And one of you say  
 to them, Depart in peace: warme your selues,  
 fill your bellies: notwithstanding ye giue  
 them not those things which are needfull to  
 the body, what helpeth it? 17 Even so the  
 faith, if it haue no workes, is dead in it selfe:  
 But some man might say, Thou hast the faith,  
 I haue workes: shewe mee thy faith out of  
 thy workes, and I will shewe thee my faith by  
 my workes. 19 Thou beleuest that there is  
 one God: thou doest well: the deuils also be-  
 leue it, and tremble. 20 But wilt thou vnder-  
 stand, O thou vaine man, that the faith which  
 is without workes, is dead? 21 Was not  
 Abraham

Abraham our father iustified through worke  
**Gene.** \* when he offered Isaac his sonne vpon the a  
**22. 10.** tar? 22 Seest thou not that the faith wrought  
with his workes? and through the workes was  
the faith made perfect. 23 And the Scriptur  
**Gene.** was fulfilled, which saith, \* Abraham beleue  
**15. 6.** God, and it was imputed to him for righteou  
**rom.** nesse: and hee was called the friende of God  
**4. 3.** 24 Yee see then howe that of workes a man  
**galat.** iustified, and not of faith onely. 25 Likewi  
**3. 6.** also was not \* Rahab the harlot iustified through  
**Iosh.** workes, when she had receiued the messengers  
**2. 1.** and sent them out another way? 26 For as the  
body without the spirit is dead, euen so the faith  
without workes is dead.

**CHAP. 3.** 3. *Of moderation of the tongue*  
15. *And how much mans wisdom is diminished  
from heauenly.*

**M**Y brethren be not many masters, knowing  
that we shall receiue the greater condem  
nation. 2 For in many things we sinne al. If  
ny man sinne not in word, he is a perfect man  
and able to bridle all the body. 3 Behold, we  
put bittes into the horses mouthes that they  
should obey vs, and we turne about al their be  
die. 4 Behold also the shippes, which though  
they be so great, and are driuen of fierce wind  
yet are they turned about with a very small  
rudder, whithersoener the gouernour listeth  
5 Euen so the tongue is a litle member, and  
boasteth of great things: behold, how great

ing a litle fire kindleth. 6 And the tongue  
is fire, yea, a worlde of wickednesse: so is the  
tongue set among our members, that it defileth  
the whole bodie, and setteth on fire the course  
of nature, and it is set on fire of hell. 7 For the  
whole nature of beastes, and of birdes, and of  
creeping things, and things of the sea is tamed,  
and hath bin tamed of the nature of man. 8 But  
the tongue can no mā tame, *It is* an vnruely euil,  
full of deadly poyson. 9 Therewith blesse wee  
God euen the Father, and therewith curse wee  
men, which are made after the similitude of  
God. 10 Out of one mouth proceedeth bles-  
sing & cursing; my brethren, these things ought  
not so to be. 11 Doth a fountaine send forth  
of one place sweete water & bitter? 12 Can the  
fig tree, my brethren, bring forth oliues, either  
vine figs? so can no fountaine make both salt  
water and sweete. 13 Who is a wise man, and  
instructed with knowledge among you? let him  
showe by good conuersation his workes in  
the meekenes of wisdom. 14 But if ye haue bitter  
envying, and strife in your hearts, reioyce not,  
neither be liars against the trueth. 15 This wis-  
dome descēdeth not from aboue, but is earthly,  
sensual, & deuilish. 16 For where enuying and  
strife is, there is sedition and all maner of euill  
workes. 17 But the wisdom that is from a-  
booue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie  
to be entreated, full of mercie and good fruits,  
without iudging and without hypocrisie.

18 And



# I A M E S.

18 And the fruite of righteousness is sowen in peace, of them that make peace.

CHAP. 4. 1. *Of the workes of the flesh.*  
7 He exhorteth to humilitie, 8 and to  
purge the heart 9 from pride, &c.

**F**ROM whence are warres, & contentions among you? are they not hence, *even* of your pleasures that fight in your members? 2 Ye lust, and haue not: ye enuie, and desire immoderately, and cannot obtaine: ye fight and warre, & get nothing, because ye aske not. 3 Ye aske, and receiue not, because ye aske amisse, that ye might lay the same out on your pleasures. 4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the amicitie of the world is *ye* enimity of God? Whosoever therefore wil be a friend of the world, maketh himselfe the enemy of God. 5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture sayeth in vaine, The spirit that dwelleth in vs, lusteth after enuie? 6 But the Scriptures offereth more grace, and therefore saith, \* God resisteth the proude, and giveth grace to the humble. 7 \* Submit yourselves to God: resist the deuill, and he will flee from you. 8 Draw neere to God, & he wil draw neere to you. Clense your hands ye sinners, and 9 purge your hearts, ye wauering minded: suffer afflictions, and sorow ye, & weepe: let your laughter bee turned into mourning, and your ioye into heauinesse. 10 \* Cast downe yourselves before the Lord, and he will lift you vp. 11 Speake not euill one of another, brethren.

Pro.

3. 34.

1. pet.

5. 5.

Ephes.

4. 27.

1. Pet.

5. 6.

He t  
cōde  
and  
nest  
Law,  
which  
thou  
ye tha  
into s  
bye an  
not ce  
your l  
aliato  
11. 10  
& if w  
ye reio  
is euil  
to do v

C. I  
GO  
G for  
2 Your  
are mo  
and the  
and tha  
heaped  
the hire  
your tie  
fraud, c  
heaped  
hostes

## C H A P. V.

He that speaketh euill of his brother, or he that  
 condemneth his brother, speaketh euill of <sup>the</sup> Law,  
 and condemneth the Law: and if thou condem-  
 nest the Lawe, thou art not an obseruer of the  
 Law, but a iudge. 12 There is one Lawgiuer,  
 which is able to saue, and to destroy. \* Who art Rom.  
 thou that iudgeth another man? 13 Goe to nowe 14. 4.  
 ye that say, To day or to morow wee will goe  
 into such a citie, and continue there a yere, and  
 bye and sell, and get gaine, 14 ( And yet ye can  
 not tell what *shall be* to morowe. For what is  
 your life? It is eue a vapour that appeareth for  
 a little time, and afterward vanisheth away )  
 15 For that ye ought to say, \* If the Lord wil, 1. Cor.  
 & if we liue, we wil do this or that. 16 But now 4. 13.  
 ye reioyce in your boastings: al such reioycing  
 is euill. 17 Therefore, to him that knoweth how  
 to do well, and doeth it not, to him it is sione.

### CHAP. 5. 1. Against cruell rich men.

**G**O to now, ye rich men: weepe, and howle  
 for your miseries that shall come vpon you.  
 2 Your riches art corrupt: and your garments  
 are motheaten 3 Your gold & siluer is cankred,  
 and the rust of them shalbe a witnes against you  
 and shall eate your flesh, as it were fire. Ye haue  
 heaped vp treasure for the last dayes. 4 Behold,  
 the hire of the labourers, which haue reaped  
 your fieldes ( which is of you kept backe by  
 fraud ) crieth, and the cries of them which haue  
 reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of  
 hostes: 5 Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth,

and in wantonnesse. Yee haue nourished your  
 hearts, as in a day of slaughter. 6 Ye haue con-  
 demned and haue killed the iust, & he hath not  
 resisted you. 7 Be patient therefore, brethren,  
 vnto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the hus-  
 bandman waiteth for the precious fruite of the  
 earth and hath long patience for it, vntill he re-  
 ceive the former, and the latter raine. 8 Bee ye  
 also patient therefore and settle your hearts  
 for the coming of the Lord draweth neere.  
 9 Grudge not one against another, brethren,  
 lest ye be condemned: behold, the iudge stand-  
 eth before the doore. 10 Take, my brethren,  
 the Prophet for an ensample of suffering aduer-  
 sity, and of long patience, which haue spoken in  
 the Name of the Lord. 11 Behold, we count them  
 blessed which endure. Yee haue heard of the pa-  
 tience of Iob, and haue knowen what end the  
 Lord made. For the Lord is very pitifull & mer-  
 cifull. 12 But before all things, my brethren,  
 \* sweare not, neither by heauen, nor by earth  
 nor by any other othe: but let your yea, be yea  
 and your nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation.  
 13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is  
 any merie? let him sing. 14 Is any sicke among  
 you? let him call for the Elders of the Church  
 and let them pray for him, and anoynt him with  
 \* oyle in the Name of the Lord. 15 And the pray-  
 er of faith shal saue the sicke, and the Lord shal  
 raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes  
 they shall be forgiven him. 16 Acknowledg  
 you

Mat.

5.34.

Mar.

6.13.

you  
 othe  
 nigh  
 27  
 as  
 not  
 yeere  
 gain  
 brow  
 you  
 hath  
 which  
 fray  
 death

T  
 CH



forekn  
 fication  
 sprinkl  
 and pea  
 see God  
 Christ,  
 hath

your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: for the prayer of a righteous man availeth much, if it bee seruent.  
17 \* Helias was a man subiect to like passions *1. King.*  
as we are, and he pray'd earnestly that it might *17. 1.*  
not raine, & it rained not on the earth for three *or 18.*  
yeeres and sixe moneths. 18 And he prayed a- *45.*  
gaine, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth *like*  
brought forth her fruit. 19 Brethren, \*if any of *4. 23.*  
you hath erred from the trueth, and some man *Mat.*  
hath conuerted him, 20 Let him know that he *18. 15.*  
which hath conuerted the sinner from going a-  
stray out of his way, shall saue a soule from  
death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

## THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of Peter.

CHAP. I. 1. Gods mercie in Iesus Christ.

12 Exhortation to godly conuersation.



ETER an Apostle of IESVS  
Christ, to the strangers that dwell  
here and there throughout Pon-  
tus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and  
Bithynia, 2 Elect according to the  
foreknowledge of God the Father vnto sancti-  
fication of the Spirit, through obedience and  
sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace  
and peace bee multiplied vnto you. 3 Blessed  
be God, even the Father of our Lord Iesus  
Christ, which according to his abundant mer-  
cy hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope

## I. PETER.

by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the  
dead, 4 To an inheritance immortal & vnder-  
led, and that withereth not, reserved in heauen  
for vs, 5 Which are kept by the power of God  
through faith vnto saluation, which is prepared  
to be shewed in the last time. 6 Wherin ye re-  
ioyce, though now for a season (if need require)  
ye are in heaviness, through manifold tentations,  
7 That the trial of your faith being much more  
precious then gold that perisheth (though it be  
tried with fire) might be found vnto your praise,  
and honour and glory at the appearing of Ie-  
sus Christ: 8 Whom ye haue not seene and yet  
loue him, in whom nowe, though yee see him  
not, yet doe you beleue, and reioyce with ioy  
vnspeakeable and glorious, 9 Receiuing the  
ende of your faith, *even* the saluation of your  
soules. 10 Of the which saluation the Prophets  
haue inquired and searched, which prophesied  
of the grace that shoulde come vnto you.  
11 Searching when or what time the Spirit  
which testified before of Christ which was in  
them, should declare the sufferings *that shoulde*  
*come* vnto Christ, and the glory that should fol-  
low, 12 Vnto whom it was reueiled, that not  
vnto themselves, but vnto vs they should in-  
minister the things which are nowe shewed vnto  
you by them which haue preached vnto you  
the Gospel by the holy Ghost sent downe from  
heauen, the which things the Angels desired  
behold. 13 Wherefore, gird vp the loynes

# C H A P. I.

of your minde: be sober, and trust perfectly on  
that grace y<sup>e</sup> is brought vnto you, in the reuelation  
of Iesus Christ, 14 As obedient childre, not  
fashioning your selues vnto the former lusts of  
your ignorance: 15 But as he which hath called  
you, is holy, so be ye holy in \* all maner of con- *Luke*  
uersation, 16 Because it is written, \* Be ye ho- *1.75.*  
ly, for I am holy. 17 And if ye call him Father, *Leuit.*  
which without \* respect of persons iudgeth ac- *11.44.*  
cording to euery mans worke, passe the time of *Deus.*  
your dwelling here in feare, 18 Knowing that *10.17.*  
ye were not redeemed with corruptible things,  
as siluer & gold, from your vaine conuersation,  
received by y<sup>e</sup> traditions of the fathers, 19 \* But *1. Cor*  
with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lambe *6.10.*  
undefiled, & without spot. 20 Which was \* or. *Rom.*  
dained before the foundation of the world, but *16.25.*  
was declared in the last times for your sakes,  
21 Which by his meanes do beleene in God that  
raised him from the dead, & gaue him glory, that  
your faith & hope might be in God, 22 Hauing  
purified your soules in obeying y<sup>e</sup> truth, through  
the Spirit to \* loue brotherly without faining, *Chap.*  
leae one another with a pure heart seruently, *2. 17.*  
23 Being borne anew not of mortall seede, but  
of immortal, by the word of God, who liueth &  
endureth for euer 24 For all \* flesh is as grasse, *Isai.*  
and al the glory of man is as the flower of grasse. *40.6.*  
The grasse withereth, & the flower falleth away. *James*  
25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: & *2.10.*  
this is the word which is preached among you.

**L P E T E R.**  
**CHAP. 2.** *1. Holinesse of life and obedience  
to Magistrates.*

**Rom.** **W**herefore, \*laying aside all maliciouſnes &  
**6.4.** all guile and diſſimulation, & enuie, and  
**epheſ.** all euil ſpeaking, 2 As newborne babes deſire  
**4.23.** y ſincere milke of the word, that ye may grow  
**colof.** therby, 3 B cauſe ye haue taſted that the Lorde  
**3.8.** is bountifull. 4 To whom comming as vnto a  
**bebr.** liuing ſtone diſallowed of men, but choſen of  
**12.1.** God, and precious, 5 Ye alſo as liuely ſtones,  
**Rue.** be made a ſpirituall houſe, an holy \*Priethood  
**2.6.** to offer vp ſpirituall ſacrifices acceptable to  
God by Ieſus Chriſt. 6 Wherefore alſo it is  
**Iſai.** contained in the Scripture, \* Beholde, I put in  
**28.16** Sion a chiefe corner ſtone, elect & precious and  
he that beleeueth therein, (hall not be aſhamed.  
7 Vnto you therefore which beleene, it is pre-  
**Pſal.** cious: but vnto the which be diſobedient, \* the  
**118.22** ſtone which the builders diſallowed, the ſame  
**Iſai.** is made v head of the corner, 8 And a \* ſtone  
**8.14.** to ſtumble at, & a rocke of offence, euen to them  
**rom.** which ſtumble at the worde being diſobedient,  
**9.33.** vnto the which thing they were euen ordeined.  
9 But yee are a choſen generation, a royall  
**Exod.** \* Priethood, an holy nation, a people ſet at li-  
**19.6.** bertie, that ye ſhould ſhew forth the vertues of  
him that hath called you out of darkeneſſe into  
**Hoſe.** his marueilous light, 10 \* Which in time paſt  
**2.23.** were not a people, yet are nowe the people of  
**rom.** God: which in time paſt were not vnder mercy:  
**9.25.** but now haue obtained mercy. 11 Dearly be-  
loved

# CHAP. -L

loved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims,  
 \* abstaine from fleshly lusts, which fight against  
 the soule, 12 \* And haue your conuersation ho-  
 nest among the Gentiles, that they which speake  
 euil of you as of euil doers, may by your good  
 works which they shal see, glorifie God in the  
 day of visitation 13 \* Submitte your selues  
 vnto all maner ordinance of man for the Lords  
 sake, whether it be vnto the king, as vnto the  
 superiour, 14 Or, vnto gouernours, as vnto  
 them that are sent of him, for the punishment of  
 euill doers, and for the praise of them that doe  
 well. 15 For so is the will of God, that by wel  
 doing yee may put to silence the ignorance of  
 the foolish men, 16 As free, and not as hauing  
 the libertie for a cloake of malicioufnesse, but  
 as the seruants of God. 17 Honour all men:  
 \* loue brotherly fellow shipp: feare God: honour  
 the king. 18 \* Seruants be subiect to your ma-  
 sters with all feare, not onely to the good and  
 courteous, but also to the froward. 19 \* For  
 this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience  
 toward God endure grieue suffering wrongtul-  
 ly. 20 For what praise is it if when ye be buf-  
 feted for your faults, yee take it patiently: but  
 and if when ye doe well, ye suffer wrong & take  
 it patiently, this is acceptable to God 21 For  
 hereunto ye are called: for Christ also suffered  
 for you, leauing you an ensample that ye should  
 follow his steps. 22 \* Yet he did no sinne, neither  
 was there guile found in his mouth. 23 Who  
 when

Rom.

13. 14

galat.

5. 16.

Chap.

3. 16.

Matt.

5. 16.

Rom.

13. 10.

Chap.

1. 12.

Rom.

12. 10.

Ephes.

5. 6.

colos.

3. 22.

2. Cor.

7. 10.

Isai.

53. 9.

1. ioh.

3. 5.



# I. P E T E R.

when he was reuiled, reuiled not againe: when he suffered, he threatned not, but committed it to him that iudgeth righteously. 24 \* Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on the tree, that wee beeing dead to sinne, should liue in righteoulines: by whose stripes ye were healed. 25 For ye were as sheepe going astray: but are now returned vnto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

CHAP 2. 1. *P. keeps for wine & husbands.*

*Gal. 3. 18.* **L**ikewise \* let the wines bee subiect to their husbands, that euen they which obey not the word, may without the word be wonne by the conuersion of the wines, 2 While they behold your pure conuersation, which is with feare. 3 \* Whose apparelling let it not be outward, with breided haire, & golde put about, or in putting on of apparell: 4 But let it be the hid man of the heart, which consisteth in the incorruption of a meeke & quiet spirit, which is before God a thing much set by. 5 For euen after this manner in time past did the holy women which trusted in God, tye themselves, and were subiect to their husbands. 6 As Sara obeyed Abraham, and \* called him Sir: whose daughters ye are, whiles ye doe well, not being afraid of any terror. 7 \* Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them as men of knowledge, giuing honour vnto the woman, as vnto the church vessel, euen as they which are heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers bee not interrupted.

# CH A P. III.

corrupted. 8 Finally, be ye all of one minde:  
 one suffer with another: loue as brethren: be  
 spirituell: be courteous, 9 \* Not rendring euill *Prov.*  
 for euill, neither rebuke for rebuke: but con- 17.15.  
 trariwise blesse, knowing that ye are thereun-  
 to called, that ye should be heires of blessing.  
 10 \* For if any man long after life, and to see *Psal.*  
 good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from e- 34.13  
 uill, and his lippes that they speake no guile.  
 11 \* Let him eschew euill, and do good: let him *1/a.1.*  
 seeke peace, & follow after it. 12 For the eyes 16.  
 of the Lord are ouer the righteous, & his eares  
 are open vnto their prayers: and the face of the  
 Lord is against the that doe euill. 13 And who  
 is it that will harme you, if ye follow that which  
 is good? 14 \* Notwithstanding blessed are ye, *Mat.*  
 if ye suffer for righteousness sake. \* Ye feare 9.10.  
 not their feare, neither be troubled. 15 But san- *1/a.1.*  
 ctifie the Lord God in your hearts and be rea- 8.12.  
 de aduises to giue an answer to every man 15.  
 that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in  
 you, with meeknes and reuerence, 16 Having  
 a good conscience, that when they speake euill  
 of you as of euill doers, they may be ashamed,  
 which slander your good conversation in Christ.  
 17 For it is better (if the wil of God be so) that  
 ye suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.  
 18 For Christ also hath once suffered for *Rom.*  
 us, the iust for the unjust, that hee might 5.6.  
 bring vs to God, and was put to death concer- *1/a.1.*  
 ning the flesh, but was quickened by the spirit. 9.15.

By

## I P E T E R.

19 By the which hee also went, and preached vnto the spirits that are in prison. 20 Which were in time past disobedient, when once the long suffering of God abode in the dayes of  
 Ger. \* Noc, while the Arke was preparing, wherein  
 6. 14. fewe, that is eight soules were saued in the wa-  
 matt. ter. 21 Wherof the Baptisme *that now is*, an-  
 24 30 swering that figure (*which is* not a putting a-  
 luke way of the filth of the flesh, but a confident de-  
 17. 26 manding which a good conscience maketh to  
 God) saueth vs also by the resurrection of Iesus  
 Christ, 22 Which is at the right hand of God,  
 gone into heauen, to whome the Angels, and  
 powers, and might are subject.

C H A P. 4. *Of mortification, charitie, and  
 patience.*

**F**orasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs  
 in the flesh, aune your selues likewise with  
 the same minde, *which is*, that he which he hath  
 suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne.  
 2 That he henceforward should liue (as much  
 time as remaineth in the flesh) not after the lust  
 of men, but after the wil of God. 3 \* For it is  
 sufficient for vs that we haue spent the time past  
 of the life, after the lust of the Gentiles, walking  
 in wantonnesse, lustes, drunkennesse, in gluti-  
 ony, drinkings, and in abominable idolatries.  
 4 Wherein it seemeth to them strange that ye  
 run not with them vnto the same excesse of riot:  
 therefore speak they euill of you. 5 Which  
 shall giue accounts to him, that is ready to iudge  
 quick

Ephes.  
 4. 22.

# C H A P. IIII.

quicke & dead 6 For vnto this purpose was  
 the Gospel preached also vnto the dead, y they  
 might be condemned, according to men in the  
 flesh, but might liue according to God, in the  
 spirit. 7 Now the end of all things is at hand.  
 Be ye therefore sober, and watching in prayer.  
 8 But aboue al things haue seruent loue among  
 you: \* for loue shal couer the multitude of sins. *1 Prou.*  
 9 \* Be ye harborous one to another without *10.12.*  
 grudging. 10 \* Let euery man as he hath re- *Rom.*  
 ceived the gift, minister the same one to ano- *12.13*  
 ther, as good disposers of the manifold grace of *hebr.*  
 God. 11 If any man speake, *let him speake as* *13.2.*  
 the words of God. If any man minister, *let him* *Rom.*  
*doe it as of the abilitie which God ministreth,* *12.6.*  
 that God in al things may be glorified through *phil.*  
 Iesus Christ, to whom is praise & dominion for *2.13.*  
 ever, & euer. Amen 12 Dearly beloued, thinke  
 not strange concerning the fire triall, which  
 is among you to prooue you, as though some  
 strange thing were come vnto you: 13 Put re-  
 ioyce, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christes  
 sufferings, that when his glorie shal appeare, ye  
 may be glad & reioyce. 14 \* If ye be railed vpon *Matt.*  
 for the Name of Christ, blessed are ye: for the *5.10.*  
 spirit of glory, & of God resteth vpon you. *which*  
*on their part is euill spoken of: but on your*  
*part is glorified.* 15 But let none of you suffer  
 as a murderer, or as a thiefe, or an euil doer, or  
 as a busie body in other mens matters. 16 But if  
 any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be a-  
 shamed:

# I. P E T E R.

Shamed: but let him glorifie God in this behalfe.  
 17 For the time is come, that iudgement must be-  
 gin at y<sup>e</sup> house of God. If it first begin at vs, what  
 shall the end be of the which obey not the Gos-  
 pel of God? 18 \* And if the righteous scarce-  
 ly be saved, where shall the vngodly and the sinners  
 appeare? 19 Wherefore let them that suffer ac-  
 cording to the wil of God commit their soules  
 to him in wel doing, as vnto a faithful Creator.

CHAP. 5. Duties of Elders, 5 and youn-  
 ger.

**T**He Elders which are among you, I beseech  
 which am also an Elder, and a witness of  
 the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the  
 glory that shall be reueiled, 2 Feed the flocke of  
 God, which dependeth vpon you caring for it  
 not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy  
 incre, but of a ready minde: 3 Not as though

*Rom.* 12. 10 ye were lords ouer Gods heritage, but that ye  
*1 Cor.* 4. 6. may be ensamples to the flocke. 4 And when  
*James* 4. 10. the chiefe Shepheard shall appeare, ye shall re-  
*P. 31.* ceiue an incorruptible crown of glory. 5 Like-  
*55. 23.* wise ye yonger, submit your selues vnto the El-  
*mat.* ders, and submit your selues euery man one to  
 6. 25. another: 6 decke your selues inwardly in low-  
*Luk.* 23. lineffe of minde: for God resisteth the proud  
*Luke* 23. 31. and giueth grace to the humble. 6 \* Humble  
 your selues therefore vnder the mightie hand  
 of God, that hee may exalt you in due time  
 7 Cast \* all your care on him: for hee careth  
 for you. 8 Be sober and watch: for your ad-  
 uersari

cor  
bou  
refi  
affi  
whi  
grac  
glor  
a li  
and  
hior  
afai  
writ  
that  
stand  
toget  
my  
\* kis  
in Ch  
  
C  
2 G  
the le  
3 A  
vaco


## C H A P. I.

curserie the deuill as a roaring lion walketh a-  
 bout seeking whom he may deuoure: 9 Who  
 resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same  
 afflictions are accomplished in your brethren  
 which are in the world. 10 And the God of all  
 grace, which hath called vs vnto his eternall  
 glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered  
 a litle, make you perfect, confirme, strengthen,  
 and stablish you. 11 To him be glory & domi-  
 nion for euer and euer, Amen. 12 By Siluanns  
 a faithful brother vnto you, as I suppose, haue I  
 written briefly, exhorting and testifying how  
 that this is the true grace of God, wherein yee  
 stand. 13 *The Church* that is at Babylon elected  
 together with you, saluteth you, and Marcus  
 my sonne. 14 Greete ye one another with the  
 kisse of loue. Peace be with you all which are  
 in Christ Iesus, A M E N.

*Rom.*  
 16.16.

## THE SECOND EPISTLE generall of Peter.

CHAP. I. *Exhortation to holinesse of life.*


 mon Peter a seruant & an Apo-  
 cle of Iesus Christ, to you which  
 haue obtained like precious faith  
 with vs by the righteousnesse of  
 our God & Saniour Iesus Christ:  
 2 Grace & peace be multiplied to you through  
 the knowledge of God and of Iesus our Lord.  
 3 According as his diuine power hath giuen  
 vnto vs all things that pertain vnto life & god-  
 lineſſe,

kinde, through the knowledge of him that  
hath called vs vnto glory, & vertue. 4 Where-  
by most great and precious promises are giuen  
vnto vs, that by them yee should be partakers  
of the diuine nature, in that yee flee the cor-  
ruption, which is in the world through lust.  
5 Therefore giue euen all diligence thereun-  
to: ioyne moreouer vertue with your faith:  
and with vertue, knowledge: 6 And with  
knowledge, temperance: and with temperance,  
patience: and with patience, godlinesse:  
7 And with godlinesse, brotherly kindenesse:  
and with brotherly kindenesse, loue. 8 For if  
these things be among you, and abound, they  
wil make you y<sup>e</sup> neither shall be idle, nor vn-  
fruitful in y<sup>e</sup> acknowledging of our Lord Iesus  
Christ. 9 For he that hath not these things, is  
blinde, and cannot see farre off, and hath for-  
gotten that he was purged from his old sinnes.  
10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather diligence  
to make your calling and election sure: for if  
ye doe these things ye shall neuer fall. 11 For  
by this meanes an entrance shalbe ministred vn-  
to you abundantly into the euerlasting king-  
dome of our Lorde and Saniour Iesus Christ.  
12 Wherefore, I wil not be negligēt to put you  
alwayes in remēbrance of these things though  
that ye haue knowledge, and be stablished in  
the present trueth. 13 For I thinke it meete as  
long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp  
by putting you in remembrance, 14 Seeing I  
know

know  
down  
sus Ch  
there  
haue  
partin  
fables  
comm  
eyes v  
of Go  
came  
glory,  
am we  
when  
the ho  
word  
that ye  
a dark  
starre  
know  
is of a  
proph  
man:  
moued  
C  
Bvt  
Bpec  
mong  
nable  
bought  
daminat

know that the time is at hande that I must lay  
downe this my tabernacle, euen so our Lord Je-  
sus Christ hath shewed me. 15 I wil endenour *Iohn*  
therefore alwayes, that yee also may be able to 21. 18.  
haue remembrance of these things after my de-  
parting. 16 \* For we folowed not deceiueable *1 Cor.*  
fables when we opened vnto you y power, and 1. 17.  
comming of our Lord Iesus Christ but with our *and 2.*  
eyes we saw his maiestie: 17 For he receiued  
of God the Father honour & glory, when there  
came such a voyce to him from that excellent  
glory, \* This is my beloued Sonne in whom I *Matt.*  
am well pleased. 18 And this voyce we heard 17. 5.  
when it came from heauen, being with him in  
the holy mount. 19 VVe haue also a most sure  
word of the Prophets, to the which ye doe well  
that ye take heed, as vnto a light that shineth in  
a darke place, vntil the day dawne and the day  
starre arise in your hearts 20 \* So that ye first *2. Tim*  
know this, that no prophecie of the Scripture 3. 16.  
is of any priuate interpretation. 21 For the  
prophecie came not in olde time by the will of  
man: but holy men of God spake as they were  
moued by the holy Ghost.

CHAP. 2. = 1 *Of the false teachers.*

**B**ut there were false prophets also among the  
people, euen as there shall be false teachers  
among you: which priuily shall bring in dam-  
nable heresies, euen denying the Lord, that hath  
bought them, and bring vpon themselves swife  
damnation, 2 And many shall follow their  
destructions;



## II. PETER.

destructions, by whom the way of trueth shall be euill spoken of, 3 And through couetounes shall they with fained words make marchandise of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, and their destruction slumbreth not. 4 For

**John.** if God spared not the \* Angels that had sinned

**4. 18.** but cast them downe into hel, & deliuered them into chaines of darkenesse, to be kept vnto damnation: 5 Neither hath spared the olde world

**6.** but saued \* Noe the eight person, a preacher of

**Gene.** righteousness, & brought in the flood vpon the

**7. 1.** world of the vngodly, 6 \* And turned the ci-

**Gene.** ties of Sodome & Gomorrhe into ashes, con-

**19. 13,** demned them and ouerthrewe them, and made

**24.** them an ensample vnto them that after shoulde

liue vngodly, 7 And deliuered iust Lot vexed

with the vncleanly cōuersation of the wicked

8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among

them, in seeing & hearing, vexed his righteous

soule from day to day with their vnlawful

deedes) 9 The Lorde knoweth to deliuer the

godly out of temptation, & to reserue the vniu-

vnto the day of iudgement vnder punishment

10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh

in the lust of vncleannesse, and despise govern-

ment, which are bold, and stand in their own

conceite, and feare not to speake euill of them

that are in dignitie. 11 Whereas the Ange-

which are greater both in power and might

giue not railing iudgement against them before

the Lord. 12 But these, as natural bruite beasts

led w  
detr  
they l  
owne  
wage  
it ple  
are an  
ceiun  
full of  
begni  
exce  
dren  
way h  
Palaa  
wages  
baked  
spea  
nes of  
out w  
tempe  
ned fo  
words  
throug  
deane  
error,  
are the  
of a ho  
ylame  
they ha  
throug  
the Sau

## C H A P. II.

led with sensuallitie, and made to bee taken and  
dettroyed, speake euill of those things which  
they know not, and shal perish through their  
owne corruption, 13 And shall receiue the  
wages of vnrighteousnesse as they which count  
it pleasure dayly to liue deliciously. Spots they  
are and blottes, delighting themselues in their de-  
ceiuing, in feasting with you, 14 Having eyes  
full of adulterie, and that cannot cease to sinne,  
beguiling vnitabie soules: they haue hearts ex-  
ercised with couetousnesse, they are the chil-  
dren of curse: 15 Which forsaking the right  
way haue gone astray, following the way \* of *Nam.*  
*Balaam*, the sonne of Beker, which loued the 23.23  
wages of vnrighteousnesse. 16 But he was re-  
buked for his iniquitie: or the diuine beast  
speaking with mans voyce, forbade the foolish-  
nes of the Prophet. 17 \* These are welles with. *Iude*  
out water, and cloudes caried about with a 12.  
tempest, to whom the blacke darkenesse is refer-  
red for enter. 18 For in speaking swelling  
words of vanitie, they beguile with wantonnes  
through the lustes of the flesh them that were  
cleane escaped fro them which are wrapped in  
error, 19 Promising vnto them libertie, and  
are themselues the \* seruants of corruption: for *Iohn*  
of whom soeuer a man is overcome, euen vnto 8.34  
yslave is he in bondage. 20 \* For if they, after *Mat.*  
they haue escaped from y<sup>e</sup> filthines of the world, 12.45  
through y<sup>e</sup> acknowledging of the Lord, and of *hebr.*  
the Sauiour Iesus Christ, are yet tangled againe 6.4.

## II. PETER.

therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them then the beginning. 21 For it had bin better for them not to haue acknowledged the way of righteousness, then after they haue acknowledged it, to turne from the holy commandement giuen vnto them. 22 But it is come vnto them according to a true prouerbe, \* The dogge is returned to his owne vomite: and, The sowe that was washed, to the wallowing in the myre.

CHAP 3. 8. *To waite for the day of the Lord.*

**T**His second Epistle I nowe write vnto you,

I beloued, wherewith I stirre vp, and wane your pure mindes, 2 To call to remembrance the wordes which weretold before of the holy Prophets, and also the commandement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour. 3 \* That first vnderstand, that there shall come in the last dayes, mockers, which will walke after their lustes, 4 And say, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers died all things continue alike from the beginning of the creation. 5 For this they willingly know not, that the heauens were of old, and the earth that was of the water, & by the water, by the word of God. 6 Wherefore y world that then was, perished, overflowed with the water. 7 But the heauens and earth, which are nowe, are kept by the same worde in store, and reserved vnto fire against the day of condemnation, and of the destruction of vngodly men. 8 Dearly beloued,

*Prou.*  
*26.11*

*1. Tim.*  
*4.1.*  
*2. Tim.*  
*3.1.*  
*2. Pet.*  
*18.*

beloued, bee not ignorant of this one thing,  
that one day is with the Lorde \* as a thousand  
yeeres, & a thousand yeres as one day. 9 The  
Lord of that promise is not slacke (as some men  
count slacknes) but is patient toward vs, \* and  
would haue no man to perish, but would all men  
to come to repentance. 10 But the day of the Lord  
will come as a thiefe in the night, in the which  
the heauens shall all passe away with a noyse, and  
the elements shall melt with heate, and the earth  
with the workes that are therein shall be burnt  
vp. 11 Seeing therefore that all these things  
must be dissolued, what manner persons ought  
ye to be in holy conuersation and godlinesse,  
12 Looking for, and hasting vnto the coming  
of that day of God, by the which the heauens  
being on fire shall be dissolued, and the elements  
shall melt with heate? 13 But we looke for  
\* newe heauens and a newe earth, according to  
his promise, where indwelleth righteousness.  
14 Wherefore beloued, seeing that yee looke  
for such things, be diligent that yee may be found  
of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.  
15 \* And suppose that the long suffering of  
our Lord is saluation euen as our beloued bro-  
ther Paul according to the wisdom given vn-  
to him wrote to you, 16 As one that in all his  
Epistles speaketh of these things: among the  
which some things are hard to be vnderstood,  
which they that are vnlearned & vnstable wrest,  
as they doe also other Scriptures vnto their

*Psal.*

*90. 4.*

*Ezek.*

*18. 32*

*Mat.*

*24. 44*

*1. 16. 17.*

*5. 2.*

*2. 16.*

*3. 3.*

*and 16*

*15.*

*1. 17.*

*5. 17.*

*and*

*6. 23*

*Rom.*

*2. 4.*

# I. IOH N.

owne destruction. 17 Ye therefore beloved,  
seeing yee knowe these things before, be care,  
leaſt ye bee alſo plucked away with the error  
of the wicked, and fall from your owne right  
neſſe. 18 But grow in grace and in the know  
ledge of our Lorde and Saviour Ieſus Chriſt to  
him be glory both now & for ever more, Amen.

## THE FIRST EPISTLE

generall of him

CHAP. 1. 9. *Goto where to the first*



That which was from the begin  
ning, which we haue heard, which  
we haue ſeene with theſe our eyes,  
which we hane looked vpon, and  
theſe hands of ours haue handled  
of that Worde of life, 2 (For that life was  
made manifeſt, and we haue ſeene it, and haue  
written ſe, as I haue vnto you that eternall life,  
which was with the Father, and was made ma  
niſeſt vnto vs) 3 That, I ſay, which wee haue  
ſeene and heard, declare wee vnto you, that ye  
alſo may haue fellowſhip with vs, and that our  
fellowſhip alſo may be with the Father, & with  
his Sonne Ieſus Chriſt. 4 And theſe things  
wrote we vnto you, that your ioy may bee full.  
5 This then is the meſſage, which wee haue  
heard of him, and declare vnto you, that God  
is light, and in him is no darkeneſſe. 6 If wee  
ſay that we haue fellowſhip with him, & walke  
in darkeneſſe, we lie, and doe not truly. 7 Our

Iohn

3. 12.

## C H A P. II.

if we walke in the light, as he is in the light,  
we haue fellowship one with another,\* and the *Hebr.*  
blood of Iesus Christ his sonne cleanseth vs from 9. 28.  
all sinne. 8 \* If we say that we haue no sinne, 1. *per*  
wee deceiue our selues, and truth is not in vs. 1. 19.  
9 If we acknowledge our finnes, he is faithful 1. *kin*  
and iust to forgive vs our finnes, and to cleanse 8. 46.  
vs from all vnrightheousnesse. 10 If we say we 2. *chr*  
haue not sinned, wee make him a liar, and his 6. 33.  
word is not in vs.

(H A P. 2. 1. *That Christ is our Mediator.*

**M**Y litle children, these things write I vnto  
you, that ye sinne not: & if any man sinne,  
wee haue an advocate with the Father, Iesus  
Christ, the Iust. 2 And hee is the reconciliation  
for our finnes: and not for ours onely, but also  
for the finnes of the whole world. 3 And here-  
by we are sure that wee know him, if wee keepe  
his commandements. 4 He that saith, I knowe  
him, and keepeth not his commandements, is  
a liar, and the truth is not in him. 5 But hee  
that keepeth his worde, in him is the loue of  
God perfect in deede: hereby we knowe that  
ye are in him. 6 He that saith hee remaineth  
in him, ought euen so to walke, as he hath wal-  
ked. 7 Brethren, I write no newe commande-  
ment vnto you: but an olde commandement,  
which ye haue had from the beginning: this old  
commandement is that worde, which yet haue  
heard from the beginning. 8 Againe, a newe  
commandement I write vnto you, that which

# I. I O H N.

Chap.  
4.14.

is true in him, and also in you: for the darknesse is past, and that true light now shineth. 9 He that saith that he is in that light, and hateth his brother is in darkenesse vntill this time. 10 He that loueth his brother abideth in that light and there is no occasion of euill in him. 11 But he that hateth his brother is in darknesse, and walketh in darkenesse, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkenesse hath blinded his eyes. 12 Little children, I write vnto you, because your finnes are forgiven you for his names sake. 13 I write vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you, yong men, because yee haue overcome that wicked one. I write vnto you, little children, because ye haue knowen the Father. 14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I haue written vnto you, yong men, because yee are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and yee haue overcome that wicked one. 15 Loue not this world, neither the things that are in this world. If any man loue this world, the loue of the Father is not in him. 16 For all that is in the world (is the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this world. 17 And this world passeth away, and the lust therof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth euer. 18 Little children, it is the last time, and as yee haue heard that Antichrist shall come, euen now

are there many Antichrists: whereby we know that it is the last time. 19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had bin of vs, they should haue continued with vs. But this *cometh to passe*, that it might appeare, that they are not all of vs. 20 But yee haue an oymntment from that Holy one, and knowe all things. 21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye knowe not the trueth: but because ye know it, & that no lie is of the trueth. 22 Who is a liar, but he that denieth that Iesus is *y* Christe the same is that Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Sonne. 23 Whosoever denieth *y* Sonne, the same hath not the Father. 24 Let therefore abide in you *y* same which ye haue heard from the beginning. If that which ye haue heard from the beginning shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the Sonne, & in the Father. 25 And this is the promise that he hath promised vs, *uen* that eternall life. 26 These things haue I written vnto you, concerning them that deceiue you. 27 But that anoynting which yee receiued of him, dwelleth in you: and ye neede not that any man teach you: but as the same anoynting teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and is not lying, and as it taughte you, ye shall abide in him. 28 And nowe, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appeare, we may be bold, and not be ashamed before him at his comming. 29 If ye know that he is righteous, knowe ye that hee which doeth righteously, is borne of him.



# I. I O H N.

## CHAP 3. Gods loue toward vs.

**R**eholde, what loue the Father hath giuen to  
 vs, that we should bee called the sonnes of  
 God: for this cause this world knoweth you  
 not, because it knoweth not him. 2 Dearly  
 beloued, now are we the sonnes of God, but yet  
 it is not made manifest what we shalbe: and we  
 know that when he shall be made manifest, wee  
 shalbe like him: for we shall see him as he is.  
 3 And euery man that hath this hope in him,  
 purgeth himselfe, euen as he is pure. 4 Who-  
 soeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also the  
 Law: for sinne is the transgression of the Law.  
 5 And we know that he was made manifest, that  
 hee might \* take away our sinnes, and in him is  
 no sinne. 6 Whosoever abideth in him, sin-  
 neth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not sene  
 him, neither hath knowen him. 7 Little chil-  
 dren, let no man deceiue you: hee that doeth  
 righteousnesse, is righteous, as hee is righteous.  
 8 He that \* committeth sinne, is of the death:  
 for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for  
 this purpose was made manifest that Sonne of  
 God, that he might loose the works of the deuill.  
 9 Whosoever is borne of God, sinneth not:  
 for his seede remaineth in him, neither can hee  
 sinne, because he is borne of God. 10 In this  
 are the children of God knowen, and the chil-  
 dren of the deuill: whosoever doeth not right-  
 eousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loueth  
 not his brother. 11 For this is the message, that

*Isai.*

53. 6.

9. 11.

1. pet.

2. 22.

24.

*John*

8. 44.

# CHAP. III.

ye heard from the beginning, that \*we should *John*  
 loue one another, 12 Not as \*Cain *which* was 13.34.  
 of that wicked one, and slewe his brother: and *Gen.* 15.  
 wherefore slewe hee him? because his owne 12.  
 workes were euill, and his brothers good. *Gen.*  
 13 Marueile not, my brethren, though this 4.8.  
 world hate you. 14 Wee knowe that wee are  
 translated from death vnto life, because we loue  
 the brethren: \* he that loueth not *his* brother, *Chap.*  
 bideth in death. 15 Whosoener hateth his 2 10.  
 brother, is a manslayer: and ye knowe that no *leuit.*  
 manslayer hath eternall life abiding in him. 15.17.  
 16 \* Hereby haue wee perceined loue, that he *John*  
 layd downe his life for vs: therefore we ought 13 13.  
 also to lay downe *our* liues for the brethren. *ephes.*  
 17 \* And whosoener hath this worlds good, and 5.2.  
 seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth vp *Luke*  
 his compassion from him, howe dwelleth the 3. 11.  
 loue of God in him? 18 My little children, let  
 vs not loue in word, neither in tongue *only*,  
 but in deede and in trueth. 19 For thereby we  
 know that we are of the trueth, and shall before  
 him assure our hearts. 20 For if our heart  
 condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and  
 knoweth all things. 21 Beloued, if our heart  
 condemne vs not, then haue we boldnesse toward *Chap.*  
 God: 22 \* And what soeuer we aske, we receiue 5. 14.  
 of him, because we keepe his commandements, *math.*  
 and doe those things which are pleasing in his 21.22.  
 sight. 23 \* This is then his cōmandement, That we *John*  
 beloeue in the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, 6. 23.  
 and

# I. I O H N.

and loue one another, as he gaue cōmandement.

*John* 24 \* For he that keepeth his commandments,  
*13. 34.* dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby wee  
*15.* knowe that hee abideth in vs, *even* by that Spi-  
*10.* rit which he hath given vs.

## CHAP 4. *To the spirits.*

**D**Earely beloued, beleue not euery spirit, but  
 trie the spirits whether they be of God: for  
 many false prophets are gone out into this  
 world. 2 Hereby shall ye knowe the Spirit of  
 God, Euery spirit which confesseth that Iesus  
 Christ is come in the flesh is of God. 3 And euery  
 spirit that confesseth not Iesus Christ to be  
 come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the  
 spirit of Antichrist, of whom ye haue heard, how  
 that he should come, and nowe already he is in  
 this world. 4 Little children, ye are of God, and  
 haue overcome them: for greater is he that is in  
 you, then he that is in this world. 5 They are of  
 this world, therefore speake they of this world,  
 and this world heareth them. 6 Wee are of

*John* 6. God, \* he that knoweth God heareth vs: he that  
*8. 47.* is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby knowe  
 the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue  
 cōmeth of God, & euery one that loueth, is borne  
 of God, & knoweth God. 8 He that loueth not  
*John* knoweth not God: for God is loue. 9 \* Here  
*3. 16.* was that loue of God made manifest among  
 vs, because God sent his only begotten Sonne  
 into this world, that we might liue through him.

10 Here

## C H A P. IIII.

10 Herein is that loue, not that we loued God,  
but that he loued vs, and sent his Sonne to be a  
reconciliation for our sinnes. 11 Beloued, if  
God so loued vs, we ought also to loue one ano-  
ther. 12 \* No man hath seene God at any time. *John*  
If we loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and *1.18.*  
his loue is perfect in vs. 13 Hereby knowe we, *1.19.*  
that we dwell in him, and he in vs: because he *3.16.*  
hath giuen vs of his Spirit. 14 And wee haue  
seene, and doe testifie th t the Father sent that  
Sonne to be y<sup>e</sup> Sauour of the world. 15 Who-  
soever confesseth that Iesus is y<sup>e</sup> Sonne of God,  
in him dwelleth God, and he in God. 16 And  
wee haue knownen, and beleued the loue that  
God hath in vs. God is loue. & he that dwelleth  
in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.  
17 Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that wee  
should haue holdnes in y<sup>e</sup> day of iudgement for  
as he is, enen so are we in this world. 18 There  
is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out  
feare: for feare hath painfulness: & he that fea-  
reth is not perfect in loue. 19 Wee loue him,  
because he loued vs first. 20 If any man say,  
I loue God, and hate his brother, hee is a liar:  
for how can hee that loueth not his brother  
whom hee hath seene, loue God whom he hath  
not seene? 21 \* And this commandement haue *1ohn*  
we of him, that hee which loueth God, should *13.34.*  
loue his brother also. *& 15.*

CHAP. 5. *That faith and brotherly loue* *12.*  
*are inseparable.*

Whosoever

# I. I O H N.

**W**Hosoever beleueth that Iesus is that Christ, is borne of God, and enery one that loueth him, which be gat, loueth him also which is begotten of him. 2 In this we knowe that we loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commandements. 3 For this is the lone of God, that we keepe his commandements: and his <sup>7</sup> commandements are not burdenous. 4 For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth this world: and this is the victory that hath overcome the world, <sup>our</sup> our faith. 5 \* Who is it that ouercommeth this world, but he which beleueth that Iesus is the Sonne of God? 6 This is that Iesus Christ that came by water and blood: not by water only, but by water and blood, and it is that Spirit that beareth witnesse: for that Spirit is truth. 7 For there are three, which beare record in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost, and these three are one. 8 And there are three, which beare record in the earth, the Spirit, & the water, & the blood: and these three agree in one. 9 If we receiue the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which hee testified of his Sonne. 10 \* Hee that receiueth in that Sonne of God, hath the witnesse in himselfe: hee that beleueth not God, hath made him a liar, because hee beleuened not the record, that God witnessed of that his Sonne. 11 And this is the record, <sup>to wit</sup>, that God hath giuen vnto vs.

1oh. 3.  
36.

# C H A P. V.

ternall life, & this life is in that his Sonne. 12 He  
that hath that Sonne, hath that life: and he that  
hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life.  
13 These things haue I written vnto you, that  
beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God, that  
ye may know that ye haue eternall life, and that  
ye may beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of  
God. 14 And this is that assurance, that wee  
haue in him, \* that if we aske any thing accord- *Chap.*  
ing to his will, he heareth vs. 15 And if wee *3.22.*  
knowe that he heareth vs, whatsoeuer we aske,  
we know that wee haue the petitions that wee  
haue desired of him. 16 If any man see his bro-  
ther sinne a sinne that is not vnto death, let him  
telle, and he shal giue him life for them that sinne  
not vnto death. \* There is a sinne vnto death: I *Mat.*  
say not that thou shouldest pray for it. 17 All *12.31.*  
that is not righteousnesse is sinne, but there is a sinne *mark*  
not vnto death. 18 We know that whosoever *3.49.*  
denieth the Sonne of God, sinneth not: but he that is be-  
gotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wic-  
ked one toucheth him not. 19 We knowe we  
are of God, and this whole world lieth in wic-  
kednesse. 20 But we know that that \* Sonne of *Luke*  
God is come, and hath given vs a minde to *24.45.*  
knowe him which is true: and wee are in him,  
that is true, that is, in that his Sonne Iesus Christ:  
his name is that very God, and that eternall  
life. Little children, keepe your selues from  
deceit. Amen.

THE

THE SECOND EPISTLE  
of Iohn.

*This Epistle is written to a woman of great re-  
putation, who be exhorteth to constancie.*

**H**e Elder to the elect Lady, & her  
children, whō I loue in the truth  
and not I onely, but also all that  
haue knowen the trueth, 2 For  
the truths sake which dwelled  
in vs, and shall be with vs for euer: 3 Grace  
be with you, mercie and peace from God the  
Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ the Sonne  
of the Father, with trueth and loue. 4 I reioy-  
ced greatly, that I found of thy children wal-  
king in trueth, as wee haue receiued a comman-  
dement of the Father. 5 And now beseech  
thee, Lady, (not as writing a new commande-  
ment vnto thee, but that same which wee haue  
from the beginning) that we \* loue one another. 6  
And this is that loue, that we should walke  
after his commandements. This commandement  
is that as ye haue heard from the beginning ye  
should walke in it. 7 For many deceiuers are  
entred into this world, which confesse not that  
Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such  
one, is a deceiuer & an Antichrist. 8 Looket  
your selues, that wee lose not the things which  
we haue done, but that wee may receiue a full  
reward. 9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth  
not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not  
God. Hee that continueth in the doctrine of  
Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne

Iohn  
25.12.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not  
 this doctrine, \* receiue him not to house, nei- *Rom.*  
 ther bid him, God speede. 11 For he that bid *16.17.*  
 deth him, God speede, is partaker of his euill  
 deedes. Although I had many things to write  
 vnto you, yet I would not ~~writ~~ with paper and  
 inke: but I trust to come vnto you and speake  
 mouth to mouth. y our ioy may be full. 12 The  
 sonnes of thine elect sister grette thee, Amen.

THE THIRD EPISTLE  
 of Iohn.

*Hospitalitie commended. 9 Vaine glory com-  
 mended. &c.*



He Elder vnto the beloued Gai-  
 us, whome I loue in the trueth.  
 2 Beloued, I wish chiefly, that  
 thou prosperedst and faredst well  
 as thy soule prospereth. 3 For I  
 reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and  
 testified of the trueth that is in thee, how thou  
 walkest in the trueth. 4 I haue no greater ioy  
 then these, *that is* to heare that my sonnes walke  
 in veritie. 5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully,  
 whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and to  
 strangers, 6 Which bare witness of thy loue  
 before the Churches. Whom if thou bringest  
 on their iourney as it becometh, according to  
 God, thou shalt doe well, 7 Because that for  
 his Names sake they went forth, and tooke no-  
 thing of the Gentiles. 8 We therefore ought  
 to receiue such, that wee might bee helpers to  
 the



the trueth. 9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to haue the preeminence amongth, receiueth vs not. 10 Wherefore if I come, I wil call to your remembrance his deeds which he doeth, prating against vs with malicious wordes, and not therewith content, neither hee himselfe receiueth the brethren, but forbiddeth them that would, and thrusteth them out of the Church. 11 Beloued follow not that which is euill but that which is good: he that doeth well, is of God: but hee that doeth euill, hath not seene God. 12 Demetrius hath good report of all men and of the trueth it selfe: yea, and we our selues beare record, and ye know that our record is true. 13 I haue many things to write: but I will not with inke and penne write vnto thee. 14 For I trust I shall shortly see thee, and wee shall speake mouth to mouth. Peace bee with thee. The friendes salute thee. Greete the friends by name.

## THE GENERAL EPISTLE

of Iude.



Iude a seruant of Iesus Christ, and brother of Iames, to them which are called & sanctified of God the Father, & referred to Iesus Christ. 2 Mercy vnto you, and peace and loue be multiplied. 3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation, it was needefull for me to write vnto you, to exhort you, that ye should earnestly con-

tend

tend for the maintenance of the faith, which  
 was once giuen vnto the Saintes. 4 For there  
 are certeine men crept in, which were before of  
 olde ordeined to this condemnation: vngodly  
 men they are which turne the grace of our God  
 into wantonnesse, & deny God the onely Lord, 2. Pet.  
 and our Lord Iesus Christ. 5 I wil therefore put 2. 1.  
 you in remembrance, forasmuch as ye once knew  
 this, how that the Lord after that hee had deli-  
 uered the people out of Egypt, & destroyed the  
 afterward which beleened not. 6 The \* Angels  
 also which kept not their first estate, but left  
 their owne habitation, he hath reserved in eter-  
 lasting chaines vnder darkenes vnto the iudge-  
 ment of the great day. 7 As \* Sodom & Gomor-  
 re & the cities about them, which in like maner  
 as they did, committed fornication, & followed  
 strāge flesh, are set forth for an example, & suffer  
 the vengeance of eternal fire. 8 Likewise not-  
 withstanding these sleepers also defile the flesh,  
 & despise gouernment and speake euil of them  
 that are in authoritie. 9 Yet Michael the Arch-  
 angel, when he stroue against the deuil, & dispu-  
 ted about the body of Moles, durst not blame  
 him with cursed speaking, but sayd, The Lord  
 rebuke thee. 10 But these speake euill of those  
 things, which they know not: and whatsoever  
 things they know naturally, as beasts which are  
 without reason, in those things they corrupt the-  
 selues. 11 Wo be vnto them for they haue fo-  
 lowed the way of \* Cain and are cast away by

2. Pet.

2. 1.

Num.

14 37.

2. Pet.

2. 4.

Gene.

19. 24.

Gen.

4. 8.

- Num.** the deceit of \* Balaams wages, & perish in the  
**21.21.** ginesaying of \* Core. 12 These are spots in  
**2.pet.** your feasts of charitie, when they feast with you  
**2.15.** without all feare feeding themselves: \* clouds  
**num.** they are without water, caried about of winds  
**16. 1.** corrupt trees, and without fruit, twise dead, and  
**2.pet.** plucked vp by y<sup>e</sup> roots. 13 They are the raging  
**2.17.** waues of the sea foming out their owne shame  
 they are wandring staires, to whom is reserved  
 the blackenesse of darkenesse for euer. 14 And  
 Enoch also the seuenth from Adam prophesied  
**Reuel.** of such, saying, \* Beholde, the Lord cometh  
**1.7.** with thousands of his Saints, 15 To giue iudge-  
 ment against al men, & to rebuke all the vngod-  
 ly among them of all their wicked deeds, which  
 they haue vngodly committed, and of all their  
 cruell speakings, which wicked sinners haue  
 spoken against him. 16 These are murmurers  
 complainers, walking after their owne lusts  
**Psal.** \* whose mouthes speake proud things, hauing  
**17.10.** mens persons in admiration, because of aduan-  
 tage. 17 But ye beloued, remember the word  
 which were spoken before of the Apostles of  
 our Lord Iesus Christ, 18 How that they tolde  
**1.Tim** you that there should be mockers\* in the la-  
**4.1.** time, which should walke after their owne vn-  
**2.tim.** godly lusts. 19 These are they which separat  
**3.1.** themselves from other. naturall, hauing not the  
**2.pet.** Spirit. 20 But yee beloued, edifie your selues  
**2.3.** in your most holy faith, praying in the holy  
 Ghost, 21 And keepe your selues in the love

## C H A P. I.

of God looking for the mercy of our Lorde Iesus Christ, vnto eternall life. 22 And haue compassion of some, in putting difference: 23 And other saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire and hate euen that garment which is spotted by the flesh. 24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you, that yee fall not, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with ioy, 25 *That is*, to God only wise, our Sauour, *bet* glory, and maiestie, and dominion, and power, both now and for euer, Amen.

## T H E R E V E L A T I O N O F

Iohn the Diuine.

CHAP. I. 12 *The Myserie of the seuen candlestickes and flannes.*



He Reuelation of Iesus Christ, which God gaue vnto him, to shewe vnto his seruants things which must shortly bee dones which he sent, and shewed by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn, 2 Who bare record of the word of God, & of the testimony of Iesus Christ, & of all things that he saw. 3 Blessed is he that readeth, & they that heare y words of this prophesie, & keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand. 4 Iohn, to the seuen Churches which are in Asia, Grace be with you, and peace from him, Which was, & which is to come & from the seuen Spirits, which are before the Throne, And from Iesus Christ, which is a faithfull

Exod.  
3.14.  
Psal.  
89.38.

# REVELATION.

1. Cor. witnesse, and \* that first begotten of the dead, &  
 15. 21. that prince of the kings of the earth, vnto him  
 col. 1. that loued vs, and waſhed vs from our finnes in  
 18. his \* blood, & And made vs \* Kings & Priests  
 Hebr. vnto God euē his Father. to him, I say, be glory  
 9. 14. & dominion for euer more, Amen. 7 Beholde  
 1. pet. he cometh with \* clouds, & euery eye shall see  
 1. 19. him: yea. euen they which pearced him thorow  
 1. John & all kinreds of the earth ſhal waile before him  
 1. 9 Euen ſo, Amen. 8 I am \* Alpha & Omega, the  
 1. Pet. beginning, & the ending ſayth the Lord, Which  
 2. 5. is, and Which was, and Which is to come, euen  
 1. ſai. the Almightye. 9 I Iohn, euen your brother,  
 3. 14. companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom  
 mat. and patience of Ieſus Chriſt, was in the yle ca  
 24. 30 led Pathmos, for the word of God, and for the  
 inde witneſſing of Ieſus Chriſt. 10 And I was ſha  
 24. ſhed in ſpirit on the Lords day, & heard behin  
 Chap. me a great voyce, as it had bene of a trumpet  
 21. 6. 11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega that firſt, and  
 22. that laſt: and that which thou ſeeſt, write in  
 23. booke, & ſend it vnto the ſeuē Churches which  
 are in Aſia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and  
 vnto Pergamus, and vnto Thyatira, & vnto Sa  
 dis, and vnto Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea  
 12 Then I turned backe to ſee the voyce, & ſp  
 ſpake with me: and when I was turned, I ſaw  
 ſeuē golden candleſticks, 13 And in the middle of  
 of the ſeuē candleſtickes, one like vnto the  
 Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe  
 to the feet, and girded about the pappes with a  
 gold

## CHAP. II.

golden girdle. 14 His head, and haire were  
white as white wooll, and as snow, and his eyes  
were as a flame of fire, 15 And his feet like vn-  
to fine brasse, burning as in a forname: and his  
voyce as the sound of many waters, 16 And he  
had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of  
his mouth went a sharpe two edged sword: and  
his face shone as the sun shineth in his strength.  
17 And when I saw him I fel at his feet as dead:  
then he layd his right hand vpon me, saying vn-  
to me, Feare not: I am that first and that last, *Ista.*  
18 And am alieue, but I was dead and behold, I *41. 40.*  
am alieue for euermore, Amen, and I haue the *44*  
keyes of hel and of death. 19 Write the things *6.*

which thou hast seene, & the things which are, &  
the things which shal come hereafter 20 The  
mysterie of the seuen starres which thou sawest  
in my right hand, and the seuen golden candle-  
sticks, *is this,* The seuen starres are the Angels  
of the seuen Churches: and the seuen candle-  
sticks which thou sawest, are the seue Churches.

CHAP. 2. *To Smyrna, Pergamus, & Thyatira.*

VNto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus  
write, These things saith hee that holdeth  
the seuen starres in his right hand, and walketh  
in the middes of the seuen golden candlesticks.  
I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy  
patience, and how thou canst not beare with  
them which are euill, and hast examined them  
which say they are Apostles, and are not, and  
hast found them liars. And thou wast burde-

# REVELATION.

ned, and hast patience, and for my Names sake,  
hast laboured, and hast not fained. 4 Neuer-  
thelesse, I haue *some what* against thee because  
thou hast left thy first loue. 5 Remember ther-  
fore from whence thou art fallen, and repent,  
and doe the first workes: or els I will come a-  
gainst thee shortly, and will remooue thy cau-  
dlestick out of his place, except thou amend.  
6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the  
workes of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.  
7 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the  
Spirit saith vnto the Churches, To him that o-  
uercommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of  
life, which is in the middes of the Paradise of  
God. 8 And vnto the Angel of the Church of  
the Smyrnians write, These things sayeth hee  
that is first, and last, which was dead & is aline.  
9 I know thy works and tribulation, and po-  
uertie (but thou art rich) & I know the blasphe-  
mie of them, which say they are Iewes, and are  
not, but are the Synagogue of Satan. 10 Feare  
none of those things, which thou shalt suffer:  
beholde, it shall come to passe, that the deuill  
shall cast some of you into prison, that yee may  
bee tried, and yee shall haue tribulation tenne  
dayes: bethou faithfull vnto the death, and I  
will giue thee the crowne of life. 11 Let him  
that hath an eare. heare what the Spirit saith  
to the Churches: Hee that ouercommeth, shall  
not be hurt of the second death. 12 And to  
the Angel of the Church which is at Perga-

mus

## C H A P. II.

mus write, This saith he which hath that sharpe sword with two edges. 13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, *euen* where Satans throne is, and thou keepest my Name, and hast not denied my faith, *euen* in those dayes when Antipas my faithfull martyr was slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth. 14 But I haue a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that maintaine the doctrine of \* Balaam, which *Num* taught Balac to put a stumbling block before 24.14. the children of Israel, that they should eate of *and* things sacrificed vnto idoles, and comit fornication. 25.1. 15 Euen so hast thou them, that maintaine the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate. 16 Repent thy selfe, or els I will come vnto thee shortly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. 17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirite sayeth vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the Manna that is hid, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a newe name written, which no man knoweth, sauing hee that receiueth it. 18 And vnto the Angel of the Church, which is at Thyatira write. These things saith the Sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feete like fine brasse. 19 I knowe thy workes, and thy loue, and seruice, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and that *they* are moe at the last, then at the first. 20 Notwithstanding, I haue a fewe things against thee, that thou sufferest the woman Ieze-



# REVELATION.

bel which callth her selfe a Prophereſſe, to teach and to deceiue my ſeruants, to make them commit fornication, and to eat meates ſacrificed vnto idoles. 21 And I gaue her ſpace to repent of her fornication & ſhe repented not. 22 Behold I will caſt her into a bed, & them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent of their works. 23 And I will kill her children with death as I will.

*Ex. Sam.* Churches ſhall know that I am he which ſearcheth the reines and hearts: and I will giue vnto every one of you according to your works. *Pſal.* 74 And vnto you I ſay, the reſt of them of *Isa.* Thy ſera, As many as haue not this hearing, neither haue known the deepeneſſe of Sardis, *Ex.* 20. (thou ſpeakeſt) I will put vpon you none other burden, 25 But that which ve haue already, holde faſt till I come. 26 For he that overcometh, and keepeth my works vnto the ende, to him will I giue power ouer nations, 27 And he ſhall rule them with a rod of yron, as the veſſels of a potter, ſhall they be broken. 28 I know as I receiued of my Father, ſo will I giue him the morning ſtarre. 29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſaith to the Churches.

CHAP. 3. 1 To Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea.

**A**ND write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis. Theſe things ſaith he that hath the ſeuē Spirits of God & the ſeuē ſtarres, I know thy works: for thou haſt a name that

# CHAP. III.

that thou livest but thou art dead. 2 Be awake  
and strengthen the things which remaine, that are  
ready to die: for I have not found thy workes  
perfect before God. 3 Remember therefore,  
how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast,  
and repent: if therefore thou wilt not warch, I  
will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not  
knowe what hoare I will come vpon thee.  
4 A voice is heard: thou shalt a few names yet in  
Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments:  
and they shall walke with me in white: for they  
are worthy. 5 He that overcometh shall be  
clothed in white array, and I will not put out his  
name out of the booke of life but I will con-  
fesse his Name before my Father, and before his  
Angels. 6 Let him that hath an eare, heare what  
the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. 7 And write  
vnto the Angel of the Church which is of Phi-  
ladelphia, These things saith he, that is Holy, and  
True, which hath the key of David, which ope-  
neth and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no  
man openeth, 8 I know thy workes: behold, I  
haue set before thee an open doore, and no man  
can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast  
kept my word, and hast not denied my Name.  
9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue  
of Satan, which call themselves Iewes, and are  
not, but doe lie: behold, I will make them,  
that they shall come and worship before thy  
feete, and shall knowe that I haue loued thee.  
10 Because thou hast kept the word of my pa-  
tience,

Chap.

15 15.

16 16.

17 17.

2 18.

3 19.

4 20.

5 21.

6 22.

7 23.

8 24.

9 25.

10 26.

11 27.

12 28.

13 29.

14 30.

15 31.

16 32.

17 33.

18 34.

19 35.

20 36.

21 37.

22 38.

23 39.

24 40.

25 41.

26 42.

27 43.

28 44.

29 45.

30 46.

31 47.

32 48.

33 49.

34 50.

35 51.

36 52.

37 53.

38 54.

39 55.

40 56.

41 57.

42 58.

43 59.

44 60.

45 61.

46 62.

47 63.

48 64.

49 65.

50 66.

51 67.

52 68.

53 69.

54 70.

55 71.

56 72.

57 73.

58 74.

59 75.

60 76.

61 77.

62 78.

63 79.

64 80.

65 81.

66 82.

67 83.

68 84.

69 85.

70 86.

71 87.

72 88.

73 89.

74 90.

75 91.

76 92.

77 93.

78 94.

79 95.

80 96.

81 97.

82 98.

83 99.

84 100.

85 101.

86 102.

87 103.

88 104.

89 105.

90 106.

91 107.

92 108.

93 109.

94 110.

95 111.

96 112.

97 113.

98 114.

99 115.

100 116.

101 117.

102 118.

103 119.

104 120.

105 121.

106 122.

107 123.

108 124.

109 125.

110 126.

111 127.

112 128.

113 129.

114 130.

115 131.

116 132.

117 133.

118 134.

119 135.

120 136.

121 137.

122 138.

123 139.

124 140.

125 141.

126 142.

127 143.

128 144.

129 145.

130 146.

131 147.

132 148.

133 149.

134 150.

135 151.

136 152.

137 153.

138 154.

139 155.

140 156.

141 157.

142 158.

143 159.

144 160.

145 161.

146 162.

147 163.

148 164.

149 165.

150 166.

151 167.

152 168.

153 169.

154 170.

155 171.

156 172.

157 173.

158 174.

159 175.

160 176.

161 177.

162 178.

163 179.

164 180.

165 181.

166 182.

167 183.

168 184.

169 185.

170 186.

171 187.

172 188.

173 189.

174 190.

175 191.

176 192.

177 193.

178 194.

179 195.

180 196.

181 197.

182 198.

183 199.

184 200.

185 201.

186 202.

187 203.

188 204.

189 205.

190 206.

191 207.

192 208.

193 209.

194 210.

195 211.

196 212.

197 213.

198 214.

199 215.

200 216.

201 217.

202 218.

203 219.

204 220.

205 221.

206 222.

207 223.

208 224.

209 225.

210 226.

211 227.

212 228.

213 229.

214 230.

215 231.

216 232.

217 233.

218 234.

219 235.

220 236.

221 237.

222 238.

223 239.

224 240.

225 241.

226 242.

227 243.

228 244.

229 245.

230 246.

231 247.

232 248.

233 249.

234 250.

235 251.

236 252.

237 253.

238 254.

239 255.

240 256.

241 257.

242 258.

243 259.

244 260.

245 261.

246 262.

247 263.

248 264.

249 265.

250 266.

251 267.

252 268.

253 269.

254 270.

255 271.

256 272.

257 273.

258 274.

259 275.

260 276.

## R E V E L A T I O N.

tience, therefore I wil deliuer thee from the honre of tentation, which wil come vpon all the world, to trie them that dwell vpon the earth. 11 Beholde, I come shortly: holde that which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne. 12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and hee shall goe no more out: and I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the Name of the citie of my God, *which is*, the newe Hierusalem, which cometh downe out of heauen from my God, and *I will write vpon him* my newe Name. 13 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirite saith vnto the Churches. 14 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith Amen that faithfull and true witnesse, that beginning of the creatures of God. 15 I know thy works, that thou art neither colde nor hote: I would thou wert colde or hote. 16 Therefore, because thou art luke warme, and neither colde nor hote, it will come to passe, that I shall spewe thee out of my mouth. 17 For thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and haue neede of nothing, and knowest not how thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked. 18 I counsell thee to buy of mee gold tried by the fire, that thou mayest be made rich: and white rayment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that thy filthy nakednesse doe not appeare: and anoynt thine eyes with eye salve, that thou mayest see. 19 As many as I loue,

### CHAP. IIII.

**I** rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore and amende. 20 Beholde, I stand at the doore, and knocke. If any man heate my voyce, and open the doore, I will come in vnto him, and will sup with him, and he with me. 21 To him that ouercometh, will I graunt to sit with me in my throne, euen as I ouercome, and sit with my Father in his throne. 22 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

**CHAP. 4.** 1 *The vision of the Throne of God.* 2 *And of the foure beastes and xiiii. Elders.*

**A**fter this I looked and behold, a doore was open in heauen, and the first voyce which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with me saying, Come vp hither, and I will shew thee things which must be done hereafter. 2 And immediately I was caught up in the spirit, and behold, a throne was set in heauen, and one satte vpon the throne. 3 And hee that satte, was to be looked vpon, like vnto a iasper stone, and a sardine, and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like to an emerald. 4 And round about the throne were foure and twentie seates, and vpon the seates I saw foure and twentie Elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and had on their heads crownes of gold. 5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces, and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the throne, which are the seuen spirits of God. 6 And before

## R E V E L A T I O N.

fore the throne there *was* a sea of glasse like vnto crysell: and in the middes of the throne, and round about the throne *were* foure beastes full of eyes before and behinde. 7 And the first beast *was* like a lyon, and the second beast like a calfe, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying egle. 8 And the foure beastes had ech one of them sixe wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they ceased not day nor night, saying, Holy, holy, holy Lord God Almightye, Which was, and Which is, and Which is to come. 9 And when those beastes gave glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sat on the throne, which liueth for euer and euer, 10 The foure and twentie Elders fell downe before him that sat on the throne, and worshipped him that liueth for euermore, and cast their crownes before the throne saying, 11 Thou art \* worthy, O Lord, to receiue glory and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy willes sake they are, and haue bene created.

*Chap.*  
*§.12.*

### CHAP. 5. 1 The Lambe openeth the sealed booke.

**A**ND I saw in the right hand of him that sat vpon the throne, a booke written within, and on the backside, sealed with seuen seales. 2 And I sawe a strong Angel which preached with a loud voyce Who is worthy to open the Booke, and to loose the seales thereof? 3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the

## C H A P. V.

the earth, was able to open the Booke, neither to looke thereon. 4 Then I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open, & to reade the Booke, neither to looke thereon. 5 And one of the Elders sayde vnto mee, Weepe not: behold, that \* Lion which is of the tribe of Iuda, *Gene.* that roote of David, hath obtained to open the *49. 9.* Booke, and to loose the seuen seals thereof. 6 Then I beheld, and loe in the mids of the throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the mids of the Elders, stood a Lambe as though he had bene killed, which had seuen hornes, and seuen eyes, which are the seuen spirits of God, sent into all the world. 7 And hee came and tooke the booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne. 8 And when he had taken the Booke, the foure beasts and the foure and twentie Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing euery one harpes & golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of the Saints. 9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the Booke, and to open the seales thereof, because thou wast killed, and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood, out of euery kinred and tongue, and people, and nation, 10 And hast made vs vnto our God \* Kings, and Priests, and *chap.* we shall reigne on the earth. 11 Then I beheld, *1. 6.* and I heard the voice of many \* Angels round *1 pet.* about the throne, and *show* the beasts and the *2. 9.* Elders, and there were \* ten thousand times ten *Dan.* thousand, and thousand thousands, 12 Saying *7. 10.* with

## R E V E L A T I O N.

with a loude voyce, *Worthy is the Lambe that was killed, to receiue power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and praise.* 13 And all the creatures which are in heauen and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and in the sea, and all that are in them. heard I, saying, *Praise, and honour, and glory, and power be vnto him, that sitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe for euer more.* 14 And the foure beastes sayd, *Amen.* and the foure and twentie Elders fell downe and worshipped him that liueth for euermore.

*C H A P. 6. The Lambe openeth the five scales.*

**A**fter, I beheld when the Lambe had opened one of the scales, & I heard one of the foure beasts say as it were the noyse of thunder, *Come and see.* 2 Therefore I beheld, and lo, there was a white horse, and he that sat on him, had a bow, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and he went forth conquering & he might overcome. 3 And when he had opened the second scale, I heard the second beast say, *Come and see.* 4 And there went out another horse, that was red, & power was giuen to him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, & that they should kill one another, & there was giuen vnto him a great sword. 5 And when hee had opened the third scale, I heard the third beast say, *Come and see.* Then I beheld, and loe, a blacke horse, and he that sat on him, had balances in his hand. 6 And I heard a voyce in the mids of the foure beasts say, *A*

*meane*

## C H A P. VI.

measure of wheate for a penie, and three measures of barley for a penie, and oyle, and wine hurt thou not. 7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I heard y<sup>e</sup> voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see. 8 And I looked, & behold, a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed after him, and power was given vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, & with hunger, & with death, and with the beastes of the earth. 9 And when hee had opened the fifth seale, I saw vnder the altar the soules of them that were killed for the word of God, and for the testimonie which they maintained. 10 And they cried w<sup>th</sup> a loud voyce, saying, How long Lord, which art holy and true! dost thou not iudge and auerge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? 11 And long white robes were given vnto euery one, and it was said vnto them, that they should rest for a litle season vntil their felow seruaunts, and their breth<sup>r</sup>e that should be killed euen as they were, were fulfilled. 12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seale, & lo, there was a great earthquake and the sunne was as blacke as sackcloth of haire, and the moone was like blood. 13 And the starres of heauen fel vnto the earth, as a figtree casteth her greene figs when it is shaken of a mighty wind. 14 And heauen departed away, as a scrole when it is rolled, and euery mountaine and yle were moued out of their places. 15 And the Kings of the earth, & the great  
men,



## R E V E L A T I O N.

men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaynes,  
 and the mightie men and euery bondman, and  
*1sa. 2.* euery free man bid themselues in denues, and a-  
*19.* mong the rocks of the mountaines, 16 And said  
*hoje.* to the mountaines & rocks \* Fal on vs, and hide  
*10 8.* vs frō the presence of him y<sup>e</sup> sitteth on y<sup>e</sup> throne,  
*like* & frō the wrath of the Lambe 17 For the great  
*33. 30.* day of his wrath is come, and who can stand?

### C H A P. 7. *The elect sealed.*

**A**Nd after that, I sawe foure Angels stand on  
 the foure corners of the earth, holding the  
 foure winds of the earth that the winds should  
 not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither  
 on any tree. 2 And I saw another Angel come  
 vp from the East, which had the seale of the li-  
 uing God, and he cried with a loud voice to the  
 foure Angels to whō power was giuen to hurt  
 the earth, and the sea saying, 3 Hurt ye not the  
 earth, neither the sea, neither the trees till wee  
 haue sealed the seruants of our God in their fore-  
 heads. 4 And I heard the nūber of the which  
 were sealed, and there were sealed in hundred  
 and foure and fourtie thousand of all the tribes  
 of the children of Israel 5 Of the tribe of Iuda  
 were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of  
 Reuben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the  
 tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand. Of  
 the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand.  
 Of the tribe of Nephtali were sealed twelue  
 thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed  
 twelue thousand, 7 Of the tribe of Simeō were  
 sealed

## CHAP. VII.

sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Isachar were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. 8 Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand. 9 After these things I beheld, and loe, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations & kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, & before the Lamb, clothed with long white robes, and palmes in their hands. 10 And they cryed with a loud voyce, saying, Salvation cometh of our God, that sitteth vpon the throne, and of the Lamb. 11 And all the Angels stood round about the throne, and the Elders, and the foure beasts, and they fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, 12 Saying, Amen Praise, and glory, & wisdom, & thanks, and honor, and power and might, be vnto our God for euermore Amen. 13 And one of the Elders spake, saying vnto mee, What are these which are arrayed in long white robes? & whence came they? 14 And I said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they, which came out of great tribulation: & haue washed their long robes, and haue made their long robes white in the blood of the Lamb. 15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of God, & serue him day & night in his Temple, & they rest on the throne, who dwell among the

# REVELATION.

25at. 16 \*They shal hūger no more neither thirst any  
 49.10. more, neither shal the sun light on them, neither  
 any heate. 17 I or the Lambe, which is in the  
 Chap. mids of the throne, shal gouerne them, and shal  
 21.4. leade the vnto the liuely fountaines of waters, &  
 21at. \* God shal wipe away all teares frō their eyes,  
 25.8. CHAP. 8. *The seventh seale opened.*

**A**Nd when he had opened the seventh seale,  
 there was silence in heauen about halfe an  
 houre. 2 And I saw ŷ seuen Angels which stood  
 before God, & to them were giuen seuen trum-  
 pets. 3 Then another Angel came & stood be-  
 fore the Altar, hauing a golden censer, and much  
 odors was giuen vnto him, that he should offer  
 with the prayers of all Saints vpon the golden  
 altar, which is before the throne. 4 And the  
 smoke of ŷ odors with the prayers of the Saints,  
 went vp before God, out of the Angels hand.  
 5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it  
 with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth, &  
 there were voyces, & thūdriings, and lightnings,  
 & earthquake. 6 Then the seuen Angels which  
 had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselves to  
 blow the trumpets. 7 So the first Angel blew  
 the trumpet, and there was haile & fire mingled  
 with blood, and they were cast into the earth, &  
 the third part of trees was burnt and all greene  
 grasse was burnt. 8 And the second Angel blew  
 the trumpet, & as it were a great mountaine bur-  
 ning with fire, was cast into the sea, & the third  
 part of the sea became blood. 9 And the third

## C H A P. IX.

part of the creatures, which were in the sea, and had life, died, & the third part of ships were destroyed. 10 Then the third Angel blew <sup>the</sup> trumpet, & there fell a great starre from heauen burning like a torch and it fell into the third part of the rivers, & into <sup>the</sup> fountaines of waters. 11 And the name of the starre is called wormewood: theretore the third part of the waters became wormewood, & many men died of <sup>the</sup> waters, because they were made bitter. 12 And the fourth Angel blew the trumpet, & the third part of the sun was smitten, & the third part of the moone, and the third part of the starres, so that the third part of them was darkned; and the day *was smitten*, that the third part of it could not shene, and likewise the night. 13 And I beheld, & heard one Angel flying thorow the midis of heauen, saying with a loude voyce, Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the sounds to come of the trumpet of the three Angels, which were yet to blow the trumpets.

### CHAP. 9. *Destroying locusts, and spoiling horsemen.*

**A**ND the fift Angel blew the trumpet, & I saw a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth, and to him was giue the key of the bottomlesse pit. 1 And he opened the bottomlesse pit, & there arose the smoke of the pit, as the smoke of a great fornace, & the sun, & the aire were darkened, by the smoke of the pit. 2 And there came out of the smoke locusts vpon the earth, & vnto

## R E V E L A T I O N.

them was giuen power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power. 4 And it was commanded them, that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing neither any tree: but only those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads. 5 And to them was commanded that they should not kill them, but that they should be vexed five moneths, & that their pain should be as the paine y<sup>e</sup> cometh of

*Chap.* 2 scorpion, when he hath stung a man. 6 *Then.* fore in those dayes shall men seeke death, & shall  
6. 16. not find it, & shall desire to die & death shall flee  
8. 2. from them. 7 And the forme of the locusts was  
19. like vnto horses prepared vnto battell, and on  
hose. their heads were crownes, like vnto  
10. 8. gold, and their faces were like the faces of men.  
8 And they had haire as the haire of women, &  
their teeth were as the teeth of lyons. 9 And  
they had habergions like to habergions of iron:  
& the sound of their wings was like the sound  
of charres when many horses run vnto battell.  
10 And they had tales like vnto scorpions, and  
there were stings in their tales and their power  
was to hurt men five moneths. 11 And they  
haue a King ouer them, which is y<sup>e</sup> Angel of the  
bottomles pit, whose name in Hebrew is Abad-  
don, & in Greeke he is named Apollyon, that is,  
destroyer. 12 One woe is past, and behold, yet  
two woes come after this. 13 Then the sixth  
Angel blew the trumpet, & I heard a voice from  
the foure hornes of the golden altar, which is  
before

## C H A P. X.

before God, 14 Saying to the sixt Angel, which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels, which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates. 15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared at an houre, at a day, at a month, and at a yere, to slay the third part of men. 16 And the number of horsemen of war, were twenty thousand times ten thousand: for I heard the number of them. 17 And thus I saw the horses in a vision, and them that sat on them, having fiery habergions, and of lacinth, and of brimstone, & the heads of the horses were as the heads of lyons: and out of their mouthes went forth fire, and smoke, and brimstone. 18 Of these three were the third part of men killed, *that is*, of the fire, and of the smoke, and of the brimstone, which came out of their mouths. 19 For their power is in their mouthes, & in their tails: for their tails were like vnto serpents, and had heads, wherewith they hurt. 20 And the remnant of the men which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship deuils and <sup>idols</sup> idoles of *Psal.* gold & of silver, and of brasse, and of stone and 115-40 of wood, which neither can see, neither heare *Eccl.* 138 nor goe. 21 Also they repented not of their 15a murder, and of their sorcerie, neither of their fornication, nor of their theft.

C H A P. 10. *John catcheth a booke.*

**A**ND I sawe another mightie Angel come adowne from heauen, clothed with a cloud, and

## R E V E L A T I O N.

and the rainebow vpon his head, & his face was as the sunne, and his feete as pillars of fire. 2 And he had in his hand a little booke open, & he put his right foote vpon the sea, and his left on the earth, 3 And he cried with a loud voice as when a lyon roareth: and when hee had cried, seuen thunders vttered their voyces, 4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: but I heard a voice from heauen, saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders haue spoken, and write them not, 5 And the Angel which I sawe stand vpon the sea, & vpon the earth, lift vp his hand to heauen, 6 And sware by him that liueth for euermore, which created heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, & the sea, and the things which therein are, that time should be no more. 7 But in the dayes of the voice of the seventh Angel, when he shall begin to blowe the trumpet, euen the mystery of God shall be finished, as he hath declared to his seruants the Prophets. 8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen, spake vnto me againe, and said, Goe, and take the litle booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea, and vpon the earth. 9 So I went vnto the Angel, and said to him, Giue me the litle booke. And he said, Take it, and eate it vp, & it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth as sweete as hony. 10 Then I tooke the litle booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it

## C H A P. "XV."

up, and it was in my mouth as sweete as honie: 2  
but when I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.  
11 And hee sayd vnto me, Thou must prophesie  
again among the people and nations, and  
tongues, and to many kings.

C H A P. II. *The two witnesses. 15 Their  
unction described.*

**T**HEN was giuen mee a reede, like vnto a rod,  
and the Angel stood by, saying Rise and mete  
the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that  
worship therein. 2 But the court which is with-  
out the Temple cast out, and mete it not: for it  
is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie that  
they tread vnder foote, two and forty moneths.  
3 But I wil giue power vnto my two witnesses,  
& they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred  
and threescore dayes, clothed in sackcloth.  
4 These are two Oliuetrees, and two candle-  
sticks, standing before the God of the earth.  
5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceed-  
eth out of their mouthes, and deuoureth their  
enemies: for if any man would hurt them, thus  
must he be killed. 6 These haue power to shut  
heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their  
prophesying, and haue power ouer waters to  
turne them into blood, and to smite the earth  
with all maner plagues, as often as they will.  
7 And when they haue finished their testimonie,  
the beast that cometh out of the bottomlesse  
pit, shall make warre against them, and shall o-  
uercome them, & kill them. 8 And their corpses



## R E V E L A T I O N.

shall lie in the streetes of the great citie, which  
 spirituallly is called Sodom and Egypt, where  
 our Lord also was crucified. 9 And they of the  
 people and kindreds and tongues and Gentiles  
 shall see their corpses three dayes & an halfe, &  
 shall not suffer their carkefles to be put in graves.  
 10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shall re-  
 ioyce ouer them, & be glori, and shall send gifts  
 one to another. for these two Prophets vexed  
 them that dwell on the earth. 11 But after three  
 dayes & an halfe the spirit of life cometh from  
 God that enter into them, and they shall stand vp  
 vpon their feet: and great feare shall come vpon  
 them which saw them. 12 And they shall heare  
 a great voyce from heauen. saying vnto them,  
 Come vp higher. And they shall ascend vp to hea-  
 uen in a cloud, and their enemies shall see them.  
 13 And the same houre shall there bee a great  
 earthquake and the tenth part of the city shall fall,  
 and in the earthquake shall be slaine in number se-  
 uen thousand: & the remnant were sore feared,  
 and gaue glory to the God of heauen. 14 The  
 second wo is past, & behold, the third wo will  
 come anon. 15 And the seventh Angel blew the  
 trumpet, and there were great voyces in heauen,  
 saying, The kingdomes of this world are our  
 Lords, & his Christes. & he shall reigne for euer-  
 more. 16 Then the foure and twenty Elders,  
 which sat before God on their seats, fell vpon  
 their faces, and worshipped God, 17 Saying, We  
 giue thee thanks, Lord God Almighty, Which

## C H A P. XII.

art, and Which wast, & Which art to come. for thou hast receiued thy great might, and hast obtained thy kingdom. 18 And the Gentiles were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, and that thou shouldst giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, & to the Saints, and to them that feare thy Name to final and great, and shouldst destroy them which destroy the earth. 19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was serue in his Temple the Arke of his covenant: and there were lightings, and voyces, and thundrings, and earthquake, and much haile.

C H A P. 12. *The woman with child, and the dragon, &c.*

**A**ND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, and the moone was vnder her feet, & vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres. 2 And she was with childe, & cried trauailing in birth, & was pained ready to be deliuered. 3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen: for beholde, a great red dragon hauing seven heads and ten hornes, and seven crownes vpon his heads: 4 And his taile drew the third part of the stars of heauen, and cast them to the earth. And the dragon stood before y<sup>e</sup> woman, which was ready to be deliuered, to deuoure her childe when she had broughte forth. 5 So she broughte forth a man childe, which should rule all nations w<sup>th</sup> a rod of yron: and that her childe was taken vp vnto God, & to  
his

# REVELATION.

his throne. 6 And the woman fled into wildernesse, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feede her there a thousand two hundredeth and threescore dayes. 7 And there was a battell in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, & the dragon fought, and his Angels. 8 But they preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen. 9 And the great dragon that olde serpent, called the deuill and Satan, was cast out, which deceiueth all the world: he was *euē* cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. 10 Then I heard a loud voyce in heauen, saying, Nowe is saluation in heauen, and strength and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night. 11 But they ouercame him by the blood of that Lambe, & by that word of their testimony, and they loued not their liues vnto the death. 12 Therefore reioyce ye heauens, and ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, & of the sea: for the deuill is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that hee hath but a short time. 13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast vnto the earth, hee persecuted the woman which had brought forth the man *child*. 14 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great eagle, that she might flie into the wildernesse, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe

## C H A P. XIII.

halfe a time, from the presence of the serpent,  
 15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth wa-  
 ter after the woman like a flood, that he might  
 cause her to be caried away of y<sup>e</sup> flood. 16 But  
 the earth holpe the woman, and the earth open-  
 ed her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood,  
 which the dragon had cast out of his mouth.  
 17 Then the dragon was wroth with the wo-  
 man, and went and made warre w<sup>th</sup> the remnant  
 of her seede, which keepe the commandements  
 of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus Christ.  
 18 And I stood on the sea sand.

C H A P. I3.    1 *The beast with many heads.*

11 *Another beast rising out of the earth.*

**A**ND I saw a beast rise out of the sea, hauing  
 seven heads, and ten hores, and vpon his  
 hornes were ten crownes, & vpon his heads the  
 name of blasphemie. 2 And the beast which I  
 saw, was like a leopard, & his feete like a beares,  
 and his mouth as the mouth of a lyon: and the  
 dragon gaue him his power, and his throne, and  
 great authoritie. 3 And I saw one of his heads  
 as it were wounded to death, but his deadly  
 wound was healed, and all the worlde woon-  
 dred, and folowed the beast. 4 And they wor-  
 shipped the dragon which gaue power vnto  
 the beast, and they worshipped the beast, say-  
 ing, Who is like vnto the beast! who is able to  
 warre with him! 5 And there was giuen vnto  
 him a mouth, that spake great things and blas-  
 phemies, and power was giuen vnto him, to doe

## R E V E L A T I O N.

two and forty moneths. 6 And he opened his mouth vnto blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen. 7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, & to overcome them, & power was giuen him ouer euery kindred & tongue, and nation. 8 Therefore all that dwell vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Booke of life of that Lambe, which was slaine frō the beginning of the world. 9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare. 10 If any leade into captiuitie, he shall goe into captiuitie: & if any kill with a sword, he must be killed by a sword: here is the patience, and the faith of the Saints. 11 And I beheld another beast coming vp out of the earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but hee spake like the dragon. 12 And hee did all that the first beast could doe before him, & he caused the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. 13 And he did great wonders, so that he made fire to come downe frō heauen on the earth, in the sight of men. 14 And he deceived them that dwell on the earth by the signes, which were permitted to him to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound of a sword, and did liue. 15 And it was permitted to him to giue a spirit vnto the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast should

*Gene.*  
5.6.  
*Matt.*  
26.52.

## C H A P. XIII.

should speake, and should cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed. 16 And he made all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, to receive a marke in their right hand or in their foreheads, 17 And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. 18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath wit, count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man and his number is sixe hundredth threescore and sixe.

### C H A P. 14. 1 *The Lambe on mount Sion.* 16 *The Lords hairest.*

**T**hen I looked, and loe, a Lambe stonde on mount Sion, & with him an hundredth fourtie & foure thousand, having his Fathers Name written in their foreheads. 2 And I heard a voyce frō heauen as the sound of many waters, and as the sound of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers harping with their harpes, 3 And they sing as it were a new song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders, & no man could learne that song, but the hundredth fourtie & foure thousand, which were bought from the earth. 4 These are they, which are not defiled w<sup>th</sup> women: for they are virgines: these follow the Lambe whithersoever hee goeth: these are bought from men, being the first fruites vnto God, and to the Lambe. 5 And in their mouthes was found no guile: for they are without

# REVELATION.

without spot before the throne of God. 6 Then I saw another Angel flie in the mids of heauen, hauing an euellasting Gospel, to preach vnto them, that dwell on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, & people, 7 \* Say-

*Psal.* ing with a loud voyce, Heare God, and giue glo-  
*145.6.* rie to him: for the houre of his iudgement is  
*145.* come: and worship him that \*made heauen and  
*14.15.* earth, and the sea, and the fountaines of waters.  
*16ap.* 8 And there followed another Angel, saying,  
*18.2.* \*Babylon that great city is fallen, it is fallen: for  
*15ay* shee made all nations to drinke of the wine of  
*21.9.* the wrath of her fornication. 9 And the third  
*17.1.* Angel folowed them, saying with a loud voyce,  
*51.8.* If any man worship the beast and his image, and  
 receiue his marke in his fore head, or on his hād,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the  
 wrath of God, yea, of the pure wine, which is  
 powred into the cup of his wrath, and he shalbe  
 tormented in fire and brimstone before the holy  
 Angel, & before the Lambe 11 And the smoke  
 of their torment shal ascend euermore: and they  
 shall haue no rest day nor night, which worship  
 the beast, and his image, & whosoever receiueth  
 the print of his Name. 12 Here is the patience  
 of Saints: here are they that keepe the comman-  
 dements of God & the faith of Iesus. 13 Then  
 I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto mee,  
 Write, The dead which die in the Lord, are fully  
 blessed. Euen so saith the Spirit: for they rest  
 from their labours, & their works follow them.

14 And

# CHAP. XV.

14 And I looked, & behold, a white cloude, and vpon the cloude one sitting like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle. 15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loude voyce to him that sate on the cloude, \*Thrust in thy sickle, and reape: for the time is come to reape: for the \*haruest of the earth is ripe. 16 And he that sate on the cloude thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped. 17 Then another Angel came out of the Temple, which is in heauen hauing also a sharpe sickle. 18 And another Angel came out frō the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharpe sickle, and sayd, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vineyarde of the earth: for her grapes are ripe. 19 And the Angel thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, & cut down the vines of the vineyard of the earth, and cast them into that great winepresse of the wrath of God. 20 And the winepresse was troden without the city, and blood came out of the winepresse, vnto the horse bridles by the space of a thousand and sixe hundreth furlongs.

CHAP. 15. *Seuen Angels with seuen vials. 15 Admonition to take heede and watch.*

**A**ND I saw another signe in heauen, great and marueilous, seuen Angels hauing the seuen last plagues: for by them is fulfilled the wrath



# REVELATION.

of God. 2 And I sawe as it were a glassie' sea, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten victory of the beast . and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name . stand at the glassie sea having the harps of God ; And they sung the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lambe saying, Great & marvellous are thy workes, Iorde God Almightye : iust and true are thy \* wayes , King of Saints. 4 \* Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name ! for thou only art Holy, and all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy iudgements are made manifest. 5 And after that I looked and behold, the Temple of the tabernacle of testimonie was open in heauen. 6 And the seven Angels came out of the Temple, which had the seven plagues, clothed in pure and bright linnen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles. 7 And one of the foure beastes gaue vnto the seven Angels seven golden vials full of the wrath of God which liueth for euermore. 8 And the Temple was full of the smoke of the glory of God, and of his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seven plagues of the seven Angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. 16. *The seven vials poured out.*

AND I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, saying to the seven Angels, Goe your wayes, & powre out the seven vials of the wrath of God vpon the earth. 2 And the first went, and powred

*Psal.*

145.

17.

*Ier.*

10.7.

powred out his viall vpon the earth : and there  
fell a noysome and a grieuous sore vpon the  
men, which had the marke of the beast, and vp-  
on them which worshipped his image. 3 And  
the second Angel powred out his viall vpon the  
sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man:  
and euery liuing thing died in the sea. 4 And  
the third Angel powred out his viall vpon the ri-  
uers and fountaines of waters, and they became  
blood. 5 And I heard the Angel of the waters  
say, Lord, thou art iust, Which art, and Which  
wast: and holy, because thou hast iudged these  
things. 6 For they shed the blood of the Saints,  
and Prophets, and therefore hast thou giuen  
them blood to drinke: for they are worthy.  
7 And I heard another out of the Sanctuary say,  
Euen so, Lord God almightie, true and righte-  
ous are thy iudgements. 8 And the fourth An-  
gel powred out his viall on the sunne, & it was  
giuen vnto him to torment men, with heate of  
fire, 9 And men boyled in great heate, & blas-  
phemed the Name of God, which hath power  
ouer those plagues, & they repented not to giue  
him glory. 10 And the fift Angel powred out  
his viall vpon the throne of the beast, & his king-  
dom waxed darke, & they gnawed their tongues  
for sorow, 11 And blasphemed the God of hea-  
uen for their paines and for their sores, and re-  
pented not of their workes. 12 And the sixt  
Angel powred out his viall vpon the great riuer  
Euphrates, and the water thereof dried vp, that

# REVELATION.

the way of the Kings of the East should be prepared. 13 And I saw three vncleane spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of that dragon, & out of the mouth of that beast, and out of the mouth of that false prophet. 14 For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, to go vnto the Kings of the earth, & of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of

*Chap.* God Almighty. 15 \* Behold I come as a thiefe.

*3.3.* Blessed is he that watcheth and keepeth his garments lest hee walke naked, and men see his filthines)

*24.44* 16 And they gathered them together into a place called in Hebrew *Amnagedon.*

*13.39.* 17 And the seventh Angel powred out his viall into the aire, and there came a loude voyce out of the Temple of heauen fro the throne saying, it is done. 18 And there were voyces, and thundrings, and lightnings, & there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, euen so mightie an earthquake. 19 And the great citie was diuided into three parts, & the cities of the nations fell and y great

*Iere.* Babylon came in remembrance before God, to

*25.15* giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath. 20 And enery yle fled away, and the mountaines were not found. 21 And there fel a great haile, like talents, out of heauen vpon the men, & men blaspheemed God, because of the plague of the haile: for the plague there of was exceeding great.

CHAP.

**C H A P. 17. The great whore and beaſt  
with ten hornes deſcribed.**

**T**Hen there came one of the ſeuen Angels,  
which had the ſeuen vials, and talked with  
me, ſaying vnto mee, Come: I will ſhew thee the  
damnation of the great whore that ſitteth vpon  
many waters, 2 With whom I haue committed  
fornication the Kings of the earth, and the in-  
habitants of the earth, are drunken with the wine  
of her fornication. 3 So he caried me away in-  
to the wildernes in the Spirit, & I ſawe a woman  
ſit vpon a ſcarlet coloured beaſt, full of names  
of blaſphemie, which had ſeuen heades, and ten  
hornes. 4 And the woman was arrayed in pur-  
ple and ſcarlet, and gilded with golde, and  
precious ſtones, and pearles, and had a cup of  
golde in her hand, full of abominations, and fil-  
thines of her fornication. 5 And in her fore-  
head was a name written, A myſterie That great  
Babylon that mother of whoredoms, & Abomi-  
nations of the earth. 6 And I ſaw the woman  
drunken with the blood of Saints, and with the  
blood of the Martyrs of Ieſus: and when I ſawe  
her, I wondered with great maruaile. 7 Then  
the Angel ſayd vnto me, Wherefore marueileſt  
thou? I will ſhew thee the myſterie of that wo-  
man and of that beaſt, that beareth her, which  
hath ſeuen heades and ten hornes. 8 The beaſt  
that thou haſt ſcene, was and is not: and ſhall aſ-  
cend out of the bottomleſſe pit, and ſhall g<sup>e</sup> in-  
to perdition, and they that dwell on the earth,  
ſhall wonder (whole names are not written in

## R E V E L A T I O N.

the Booke of life, from the foundation of the worlde) when they beholde the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. 9 Here is the minde that hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountaines, whereon the woman sitteth: they are also seven kings. 10 Five are fallen, and one is, and another is not yet come: and when he cometh he must continue a short space. 11 And the beast that was, and is not, is euen the eight, and is one of the seven, and shall goe into destruction. 12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten Kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdome, but shall receiue power, as Kings at one houre with the beast. 13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their power, and authoritie vnto the beast. 14 These shall fight with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall overcome them: \* for hee is Lorde of lords, and King of kings: and they that are on his side, called, and chosen, and faithfull. 15 And he said vnto mee, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are people, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. 16 And the tenne hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked and shall eat her flesh, and burne her with fire. 17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to do with one consent, for to giue their kingdome vnto the beast, vntill the words of God bee fulfilled. 18 And that woman which thou sawest, is that great ci-

*Chap*

*19.16*

*2 tim.*

*6.15.*

tie,

tic, which reigneth ouer the Kings of the earth.

CHAP. 18. *The destruction of Babylon.*

**A**Nd after these things, I saw another Angel come downe from heauen, hauing great power, so that the earth was lightened with his glory. 2 And he cried out mightily w<sup>th</sup> a loude voyce, saying, \* It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylon *(chap. 14.8. i/a. 22. 9. iere. 51.8.)* that great city, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the hold of all foule spirits, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull bird. 3 For al nations haue drunken of v wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her. and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich of the abundance of her pleasures. 4 And I heard another voyce from beauen say, Go out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receiue not of her plagues. 5 For her sinnes are come vp into heauen, & God hath remembred her iniquities. 6 Reward her, euen as shee hath rewarded you, and giue her double according to her works, and in the cup that shee hath filled to you, fill her the double. 7 In as much as she glorified her selfe, & liued in pleasure, so much giue yee to her torment & sorow: for shee saith in her heart, I sit being a queene and am no widow, & shal see no mourning. 8 Therefore shall her plagues come at one day, death, and sorowe and famine, and shee shall be burne with fire. for that God which condemneth her, is a strong Lord. 9 And the kings of the earth

# REVELATION.

Shall bewaile her, and lament for her, which  
 haue committed fornication, and lined in plealure  
 with her, when they shall see the smoke of that  
 her burning, 10 And thal stand afar off for feare  
 of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie  
 Babylon, that mightie citie: for in one houre is  
 thy iudgement come. 11 And the marchants of  
 the earth thal weepe and waile ouer her: for no  
 man byeth their ware any more, 12 The ware  
 of gold and siluer, and of precious stone, and of  
 pearles, and of fine linen, and of purple, and of  
 silke, and of skarlet, and of all maner of Thyne  
 wood, and of all vessels of yuorie, and of all ves-  
 sels of most precious wood, and of brasse and of  
 yron and of marble, 13 And of cinamom, and  
 odours, and oyntments, and frankincense, and  
 wine, and oyle, and fine floure, and wheate, and  
 beastes and sheepe, and horses, and charets, and  
 seruants, and soules of men, 14 (And the apples  
 that thy soule lusted after, are departed fro thee,  
 and all things which were fat and excellent, are  
 departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no  
 more) 15 The marchants of these things which  
 were waxed rich, shall stand asarre off from  
 her, for feare of her torment, weeping and  
 wailing, 16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great  
 citie, that was clothed in fine linen and purple,  
 and skarlet, and gilded with golde and precious  
 floure, and pearles. 17 For in one houre so great  
 riches are come to desolation. And euery ship-  
 matter, and all the people that occupie ships,  
 and

## C H A P. XIX.

and shipmen, and whosoever traffike on the sea, and stand afar e of, 8 And criē, when they see that smoke of that her burning, say ing, What citie is like vnto this great citie? 9 And they shall cast dust on their heads, and criē weeping, and wailing, and say, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ships on the sea by her costlines: for in one houre she is made desolate. 20 O heauen, reioyce of her, and ye holy Apostles & Prophets: for God hath punished all that be reuenged on her for your sakes. 21 Then a mightie Angel tooke vp a stone like a great millstone, & cast it into the sea, saying, With such violence shall y great citie Babylon be cast, and shall be found no more. 22 And the voyce of harpers & musicians, & of pipers, and trumpeters shall be heard no more in thee and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee: & the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more in thee. 23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more in thee: and the voyce of the bridegrome & of the bride shall be heard no more in thee: for thy marchants were the great men of the earth, and with thine enchantments were deceiued all nations. 24 And in her was found the blood of the Prophets, and of the Saints, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

C H A P. 19. *The battell with the beast.*

**A**Nd after these things I heard a great voyce of a great multitude in heauen, saying, Hal-

XX. 4.

lelu-iah,



# REVELATION.

Iesu-iah, saluation, and glory, and honour, and power be to the Lord our God. \* For true and righteous are his iudgements: for he hath condemned that great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruants, shed by her hand.

3 And againe they said, Hallelu-iah: and that her smoke rose vp for euermore. 4 And the foure and twentie Elders, and the foure beastes fell downe, & worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen, Hallelu-iah. 5 Then a voyce came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all yee his seruants, and ye that feare him, both small and great. 6 And I heard like a voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of strong thundrings, saying, Hallelu-iah: for the Lord, that God, that Almighty one hath reigned. 7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue glory to him: for the marriage of that Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her selfe readie. 8 And to her was graunted, that she should be arrayed with pure fine linnen and shining: for the fine linnen is the righteousness of Saints. 9 Then he said

*Mat.* vnto mee, Write, \* Blessed are they which are  
 22. 2. called vnto the Lambs supper. And he said vnto me, These wordes of God are true. 10 And I  
*Chap.* fell before his feete \* to worship him: but he  
 23. 9. said vnto mee, See thou doe it not: I am thy fellow seruant, and one of thy brethren, which haue the testimonie of Iesus. Worship God:

for

## C H A P. XIX.

for the testimonie of Iesus is the Spirit of prophecie. 11 And I saw heauen open, and behold, a white horse and he that sat vpon him was called, Faithfull & true, and he iudgeth and fighteth righteously. 12 And his eyes were as a flame of fire and on his head were many crownes: and he had a name written, that no man knew but himselfe. 13 And hee was clothed with a garment dipt in blood, and his name is called, THE WORD OF GOD. 14 And the hostes which were in heauen, followed him vpon white horses, clothed with fine linnen white and pure. 15 And out of his mouth went out a sharpe sword, that with it he should smite the heathen: for he *\*shal* rule them w<sup>th</sup> a rod of yron: *Psal.* for he it is that treadeth the wine presse of the 2.9. fierceneffe and wrath of Almighty God. 16 And hee hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh a name written, *\*THE KING OF KINGS, Chap.* AND LORD OF LORDS. 17 And I 17. 14. sawe an Angel stand in the sunne, who cried *1. tim.* with a loude voyce, saying to all the soules that 6. 18. did flie by the mids of beauen, Come, & gather your selues together vnto y<sup>e</sup> supper of the great God, 18 That ye may eate the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of his Captaines, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them and the flesh of all free men and bond men, and of small and great. 19 And I sawe the beast, and the Kings of the earth, and their hostes gathered together to make bat-  
tell

## R E V E L A T I O N.

cell againſt him, that ſate on the horſe, & againſt his armie. 20 But the beaſt was taken, and with him ſeuerall falſe prophet ſeuerall wrought miracles before him: whereby hee deceiued them that receiued the beaſts marke, and them that worſhipped his image. Theſe both were alive caſt into a lake of fire, burning w<sup>th</sup> brimſtone. 21 And the remnant were ſlaine with ſeuerall word of him that ſitteth vpon the horſe, which commeth out of his mouth, and all the foules were filled with their fleſh.

CHAP 20. *Satan bound. 8 Gog and Magog. 12 The bookes of iudgement.*

**A**N I ſaw an Angel come downe from heauen, hauing the key of ſeuerall botto<sup>m</sup>leſſe pit, & and a great chain in his hand. 1 And he tooke the dragon that old ſerpent, which is ſeuerall deuil and Satan, and hee bound him a thouſand yeeres: 2 And caſt him into the botto<sup>m</sup>leſſe pit, and he ſhut him vp, and ſealed the doore vpon him, that hee ſhould deceiue the people no more, till the thouſand yeeres were fulfilled: for after that hee muſt be looſed for a little ſeaſon. 3 And I ſaw ſeats: & they ſate vpon them, & iudgement was giuen vnto them. & 4 And the ſoules of them that were beheaded for the witneſſe of Ieſus, and for the word of God, & which did not worſhip the beaſt, nor his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their foreheads, or on their hands: & they liued & reigned with Chriſt a thouſand yeere. 5 But the reſt of the dead men ſhall not liue againe, vntill the thouſand yeeres be finiſhed: this

## C H A P. XX.

is the first resurrection. 6 Blessed & holy is he, that hath part in <sup>the</sup> first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power: but they shall be the Priestes of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yere. 7 And when the thousand yeres are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, 8 And shall goe out to deceiue the people, which are in <sup>the</sup> foure quarters of the earth: 9 \*Gog & Magog to gather them together to battell, whose number was the sand of the sea. 9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, & they compassed the tents of the Saints about, and the beloued citie: but fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them. 10 And the deuill <sup>the</sup> deceiued them, was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where that beast and that false prophet, and shall be tormented euery day and night for euermore. 11 And I saw a great white throne, and one that sat on it, from whose face fled away both the earth and heauen, and their place was no more found. 12 And I saw the dead, both great & small stand before God and the bookes were opened, and \* another booke was opened, *Chap.* which is the booke of life, & the dead were iudged of those things which were written in the bookes, according to their works. 13 And the sea gaue vp her dead, which were in her, and death & hell deliuered vp the dead, which were in them: and they were iudged euery man according to their works. 14 And death and hell

*Ezek.*  
39.20.

3.5.

21.27.

*phil.*

4.30.

were

## R E V E L A T I O N.

were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death. 15 And whosoever was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. 21. *The new Jerusalem descending from heauen.*

*J. sai.* **A**ND I saw \* a new heauen, and a new earth:  
65.17. **A**for \* the first heauen, & the first earth were  
66. passed away, and there was no more sea. 2 And

22. I Iohn saw the holy citie new Ierusalem come  
2. Pet. downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a  
3.13. bride trimmed for her husband. 3 And I heard  
a great voyce out of heauen, saying, Beholde,  
the tabernacle of God is with men, and hee will  
dwell with them. and they shall be his people,  
and God himselfe shall be their God with them.

*Chap.* 4 \* And God shall wipe away all teares from  
7.17. their eyes: & there shall be no more death, nei-  
*isai.* ther sorow, neither crying, neither shall there be  
25 8. any more paine: for the first things are passed.

*J. sai.* 5 And he that sat vpon the throne, sayd, \* Be-  
43.19 hold, I make all things new: and he sayd vnto  
2. cor. me, Write: for these words are faithful & true.

5.17. 6 And he said vnto me, \* It is done: I am Alpha  
*Chap.* and Omega, the beginning & the end. I will giue  
18. to him that is athirst, of the well of the water of  
and life freely. 7 He that ouercommeth, shall inhe-

22.13. rite all things, and I will be his God, & he shall  
be my tonne. 8 But the feareful & vnbelieving,  
and the abominable and murthurers, & whore-  
mongers, & sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars  
shall

## C H A P. XXI.

shall haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. 9 And there came vnto mee one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with mee, saying, Come: I will shew thee <sup>the</sup> ~~the~~ Bride, the Lambes wife. 10 And he caried me away in the spirit to a great and an hie mountaine, & he shewed me that great citie that holy Ierusalem, descending out of heauen from God, 11 Hauing the glory of God: and her shining was like vnto a stone most precious, as a Iasper stone cleare as chry- stall, 12 And had a great wall and hie, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and the names written, which are the twelue tribes of the children of Israel. 13 On the East part *there were* three gates, and on the North side three gates, on the South side three gates, & on the West side three gates. 14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, & in them the names of <sup>the</sup> ~~the~~ Lambstwelue Apostles. 15 And he that talked with mee, had a golden reede to measure the citie w<sup>th</sup> thall, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. 16 And the city lay soure square, and the length is as large as the breadth of it, and hee measured the citie with the reede, twelue thousand furlongs: and the length, & the breadth, & the height of it are equall. 17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundreth fou- tie & foure cubites, by the measure of man, that is, of the Angel. 18 And the building of the wall

## R E V E L A T I O N.

wall of it was of Iasper: and the citie was pure goldlike vnto cleare glasse. 19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all manner of precious stones: the first foundation was Iasper: the second of Saphire: the third of a Chalcedonie: the fourth of an Emeraule: 20 The fift of a Sardonyx: the sixt of a Sardius: the seuenth of a Chrysolite: the eight of a Beryl: the ninth of a Topaz: the tenth of a Chrystoprasus: the eleuenth of a Iacinth: the twelth of an Amethyst. 21 And y<sup>e</sup> twelue gates were twelue pearles, and euery gate was of one pearle, and the streete of the citie was pure golde, as shining glasse. 22 And I sawe no Temple therein: for the Lorde God Almighty and the Lambe are the Temple of it. 23 \* And this citie hath no neede of the Sunne, neither of y<sup>e</sup> Moone to shine in it: for the glory of God did light it: and the Lambe is the light of it. 24 \* And the people which are saved, that walke in the light of it: and the Kings of the earth shall bring their glory and honour vnto it. 25 \* And the gates of it shall not be shut by day: for there shall be no night there. 26 And y<sup>e</sup> glory & honor of y<sup>e</sup> Gentiles shall be brought vnto it. 27 And there shall enter into it none vncleane thing, neither whatsoever worketh abomination or lies: but they which are written in the Lambes Booke of life.

CHAP. 22. *The river and tree of life.*

**A**nd he shewed me a pure riuier of water of life, cleare as cryсталl, proceeding out of the

*Jsa.*

60.19.

*Jsa.*

60.3.

*Jsa.*

60.11.

*Chap.*

3.5.

and

20.12.

*phil.*

4.3.

## C H A P. XXII.

the throne of God, and of the Lambe. 2 In the  
mids of the streete of it and of either side of the  
riuer, was the tree of life, which bare twelue  
maner of fruits, and gaue fruite euery moneth:  
and the leaues of the tree *Isa.* to heale the na-  
tions with. 3 And there shalbe no more curse,  
but the throne of God, and of the Lambe shall  
be in it, and his seruants shall serue him. 4 And  
thy shall see his face, and his name shall be in  
their foreheads. 5 \* And there shal be no night *Isa.*  
there, and they neede no candle, neither light of *60. 19.*  
the sunne: for the Lord God giueth them light,  
and they shall reigne for evermore. 6 And he  
sayd vnto mee, These wordes are faithfull and  
true: and the Lord God of the holy Prophets  
sent his Angel to shew vnto his seruants the  
things which must shortly be fulfilled. 7 Be-  
holde, I come shortly, Blessed is he that keepeth  
the wordes of the prophecie of this booke.  
8 And I am Iohn, which saw and heard these  
things: and when I had heard and scene, \* I *Chap.*  
fell downe to worship before he seete of the *12. 10.*  
Angel, which shewed me these things. 9 But  
he said vnto mee, See thou *for it not*: for I am  
thy fellowe seruant, and of thy brethren the  
Prophets, and of them which keepe the wordes  
of this booke: worship God. 10 And he sayd  
vnto mee, Seale not the wordes of the proph-  
cie of this booke: for the time is at hand. 11 He  
that is vniust, let him be vniust still: & he which  
is filthy, let him be filthy still: and hee that is  
righteous,



righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that  
 is holy, let him be holy still. 12 And behold, I  
 come shortly and my reward is with mee, \* to  
*Rom.* give euery man according as his worke shalbe.  
 2.6. 13 I am \* Alpha and Omega, the beginning  
*Chap.* and the end, the first and the last. 14 Blessed are  
 1.8. they that do his cōmandements, that their right  
 & 21. may be in y tree of life, & may enter in through  
 6. the gates into the citie. 15 For without *shall be*  
*isa.* dogs and enchanterers and whoremongers, and  
 41. + murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loueth  
 & 44. or maketh lies. 16 I Iesus haue sent mine An-  
 6. gel, to testifie vnto you these things in the Church.  
 I am the root and the generation of David,  
 and the bright morning starre. 17 And the Spi-  
 rit and the bride say, Come And let him that  
*Isa.* heareth, say, Come: and \* let him that is athirst,  
 55.8. come: and let whosoever will, take of the water  
 of life freely. 18 For I protest vnto euery man  
 that heareth the wordes of the prophetic of  
 this booke, If any man shall adde vnto these  
 things, God shall adde vnto him the plagues,  
 that are written in this booke. 19 And if any  
 man shall diminish of the words of the booke of  
 this prophetic, God shall take away his part out  
 of the booke of life and out of the holy city, and  
 from those things which are written in this  
 booke. 20 Hee which testifieth these things  
 sayeth, Surely, I come quickly, Amen. Encu so,  
 come Lord Iesus. 21 The grace of our Lord  
 Iesus Christ, be with you all, Amen.

THE END.

1777  
Bible. N. T.  
2896a